



TRUE MARTIAL WORLD

BOOK 04

Cocooned Cow

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

True Martial World

(真武世界)

by

Cocooned Cow

(蚕茧里的牛)

Synopsis

With the strongest experts from the 33 Skies the Human Emperor, Lin Ming, and his opponent, the Abyssal Demon King, were embroiled in a final battle. In the end, the Human Emperor destroyed the Abyssal World and killed the Abyssal Demon King. By then, a godly artifact, the mysterious purple card that had previously sealed the Abyssal Demon King, had long since disappeared into the spacetime vortex, tunneling through infinite spacetime together with one of Lin Ming's loved ones.

In the vast wilderness, where martial arts was still slowly growing in its infancy, several peerless masters tried to find their path in the world of martial arts. A young adult named Yi Yun from modern Earth unwittingly stumbles into such a world and begins his journey with a purple card of unknown origin. This is a magnificent yet unknown true martial world! This is the story of a normal young adult and his adventures!!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by CKtalon @ [Wuxia World](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: Pure Yang Sword Palace

Yi Yun took out a set of clothes from his interspatial ring, after putting them on he rapidly moved towards the palace.

This sword-like mountain did not look high, but when he tried climbing it, Yi Yun could feel that the mountain seemed to possess some sort of magical power. The distance up the mountain seemed to have lengthened. He climbed for 2 hours before reaching the peak.

On the mountain peak, the winds howled. Yi Yun overlooked the land beneath him, but he felt that everything he saw seemed to be shrouded in a hazy mist, making it all look lifeless.

And at the entrance of the palace, the large bronze door had been sealed shut. This world was once again isolated.

This unknown fragment of a world contained powers far beyond the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's, but the only thing it contained which was still intact was this palace. Everything else had faded away with time.

Yi Yun turned around and looked at the palace.

The shape of the palace was like a divine sword pierced through the sky.

Around the palace, there were four thick columns with

engravings carved on them.

Yi Yun quietly walked to the columns and looked at the engravings.

The engravings were all connected together as a whole. Some of the scenes in the engravings startled Yi Yun.

He saw a divine dragon, locked up in chains. He saw all-powerful human Great Emperors being suppressed and a peerless expert shattering a world.

Amongst this, there was a great war scene where two sides were battling out. They were clearly of different races. One side was riding on primordial desolate beasts, while the other side was riding on powerful magical weapons.

"Could this world fragment's downfall have anything to do with the great war recorded in these engravings...?"

Yi Yun looked at each scene carefully, marveling at the grand scene. It was hard to imagine how wide this world was.

He felt that the world he had seen was just a drop in a sea.

Even sages in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, how much of this world have they managed to explore?

After passing the huge pillars, Yi Yun came before the palace. He raised his head and saw that, at the top of the palace, there was a golden plaque. There were words on the plaque that seemed to have been erased. There were only a few intermittent strokes left, emitting an aggressive aura.

As he approached the palace, Yi Yun started to feel an indescribable sense of oppression. This pressure on his senses was not only on his flesh, but also on his mental facilities.

It seemed like this invisible strength was suppressing Yi Yun's energy circulation and all his life-bearing activities.

His heart, breaths, blood flow, and even his thoughts had all slowed down.

A black stone statue stood about a thousand feet in front of the palace's entrance. The statue was about a hundred feet tall and was that of a tall and large middle-aged man. His face was covered by a black-red helmet and his eyes looked as deep as the star-filled universe. He had a sword behind his back.

Although there was only a statue there, it emitted an ancient wild aura that belonged to that of a peerless expert. The aura spread out in all directions, as well as up into the sky. For some reason, it left Yi Yun especially shaken.

Behind the statue, there was a fragmented black stone pillar. The words on the stone pillar looked as if they had been carved out using a sword. They were written in a crisp and powerful manner,

as if the energy would seep out from the stone pillar.

As he read these words, it was as if an image of a refined person holding a sword had appeared before him.

Was this stone pillar carved by the middle-aged man the statue depicted?

Yi Yun looked at the words on the stone pillar. The way the words were written was different from how words were written in the present, but Yi Yun had read ancient books, like the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' and the 'Myriad Beast Totem', so he was able to understand these words.

On the stone pillar were the words, "Establishing the Seven Kills Stone Pillar, announcing my will! Waiting for the future, when the heavens collapse, the non-existence of the universe, me as the world, control over life and death, destroying the cycle of reincarnation, obtaining the souls of everything, casting my sword, spilling my immortal blood, to slaughter all evil demons! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill! Kill!"

There were seven "kill" words, each more shocking than the other!

Seven Kills Stone Pillar!

Yi Yun took a deep breath of air. Just reading these few lines of words made him experience a monstrous murderous intent. It

seemed like this person had infinite amounts of hate which pushed him to destroy all of existence.

"What sort of person was this? To think that he wrote on the stone pillar that he was waiting for the day when the heavens collapsed, leading to the universe ceasing to exist and then become a world himself, taking control over life and death... This formidable intent..."

Yi Yun was secretly horrified. The person who made this pillar was amazing.

Yi Yun looked at the top of the stone pillar. The stone pillar was about 9 meters thick, and its top had been shaved off by a sword, leaving an extremely smooth, flat surface.

When Yi Yun walked to the back of the stone pillar, he was even more appalled. The attack that had shaved off the stone pillar continued on down its back. There was a long, black gap that became wider as it went deeper.

As he looked down towards this ravine, Yi Yun became even more shocked.

This attack had extended to the rear of the sword-like mountain all the way down the mountain's base. It had been split all the way down.

A gap had been cleanly cut through the mountain, which was

thousands of meters tall, spreading into the land. A canyon had been cut out in the lifeless land by that sword attack. The canyon was unfathomably deep, reaching all the way to the limits of one's vision. Midway, there was a river that had also been cut apart and a path through a forest which had been sliced open.

Yi Yun turned silent for a long time after seeing this. It was as if this broken world had been divided in two by this attack. What sort of power was this!?

Could it be that after the person carved the words on stone pillar, he sent out such a slash due to his hate and loathing? Resulting in such a stunning sword scar?

Waiting for me as the world, to slaughter all evil demons...

Who were the evil demons? Was the person, who left behind this sword scar, defeated in that huge war?

Looking at the sword scar he could subtly feel that, besides containing a terrifying killing intent within it, there was also an air of tranquility to it.

Yi Yun felt pain in his eyes after looking at it for too long. Even his skin could feel prickling pain. His muscles tensed up involuntarily.

The longer he looked at it, the more the Sword Intent within the sword scar became obvious. It made Yi Yun not dare to move away

from his spot. His breaths became heavier as if he was facing a huge enemy. It was as if this sword attack was about to pierce through space-time and slash at this head.

It was unbelievable that such a Sword Intent still existed in this sword scar, even after tens of millions of years!

Yi Yun conjured up his pure Yang Qi to ease that feeling.

"To have such power, after such a long period of time. Back then, this attack's power would likely slash apart the entire Divine Wilderness..."

Yi Yun sighed. If this was tens of millions ago, the remnant sword Qi was enough to kill him, considering how hard it was for him to endure the Sword Intent left behind by the sword scar.

Yi Yun took a deep breath. This level of existence was far beyond his understanding.

He turned around and left the sword scar, walking towards the palace's entrance.

The ancient large door did not have any ornaments. As Yi Yun approached the door, he could feel sword Qi surging towards him, as if it was about to cut through his body.

He held his breath and walked to the door with great difficulty.

Before Yi Yun could reach out his hand to push open the door, a brilliant flash sucked Yi Yun in. With that, Yi Yun was already inside the palace.

The hall was dimly lit. The ground was covered in black unknown rocks. The first thing that entered Yi Yun's eyes was a sword stuck in the ground!

This sword was extremely old. The sword's edge was covered in rust and there were cracks in the sword's blade.

"It's broken?"

Yi Yun sighed. It was definitely a peerless sword, but unfortunately... the sword's blade had cracks, making it lose a great deal of its spirituality. After such a long time, it probably was extremely fragile!

Yi Yun silently walked over and slowly grabbed the sword's hilt.

At that moment, Yi Yun suddenly saw a black shadow standing not far from him. With a startle, he leaped backward and unsheathed the Thousand Army Saber!

Focusing his eyes, the black shadow remained motionless. It did not have a physical body, but seemed like a burning flame.

It was wrapped in a black cloak, only its two red eyes underneath the cloak were bright. They were like jewels in the night.

"You are..."

Yi Yun originally thought that it was some unknown lifeform, such as the 'evil demons' mentioned on the Seven Kills Pillar.

However, he quickly realized that the black shadow had no intention of killing him.

If it really had killing intent, any existence that could stay in this palace would easily annihilate him with just a thought.

"How long has it been... Someone has actually entered..."

The black shadow's bleak words seemed to contain an indescribable loneliness.

"Senior, are you this palace's guardian?" Yi Yun ventured a guess.

The black shadow said, "I'm a sword spirit... I accompanied my master through countless battles for an unknown period of time. Now, my body has been destroyed, leaving behind a residual soul. I've been sleeping in this Pure Yang Sword Palace. By doing so, I have slowed down the time it takes for me to completely dissipate. Now, with you entering, I have awakened. However, such a long period of sleep has made me reach the end of my life..."

The black shadow's voice was very weak. Yi Yun had a thought upon hearing this, "Senior, have you been sleeping for tens of millions of years?"

"I don't remember... I've been wandering in space for too long before landing in this world. I originally thought that no one would ever pass through that door. Yet, you actually had such a fortuitous opportunity..."

Wandering in space?

Yes, the tens of millions of years was the time since this world crashed into the Divine Wilderness. Before that, this world fragment had been drifting for an even longer period of time.

Yi Yun had many questions in his mind. The black shadow could see through his thoughts and said, "You do not need to ask anymore about things of the past. In comparison to this world, you are not bad. You have a low-grade pure Yang body. If you can become one of the best in this world, that alone is already not an easy feat, but that is not enough. The things you want to ask will be pointless. You will not be able to enter the deep levels of this sword palace unless you gain insight into the Sword Intent left behind in the sword palace by my master. When that happens, you might be able to refine the sword palace and obtain the items left behind by my master. However, for you to do that, it will be too difficult, too difficult..."

Yi Yun stayed silent. He knew that in the eyes of the black

shadow, he was just a very lucky ordinary youth in this wilderness world. His qualifications barely made it.

Just him alone could gain insight on the Sword Intent in the sword palace?

The sword spirit clearly did not hold any hope for that.

For a person who wanted to learn the way of the sword, he needed extremely high talent. Clearly, Yi Yun did not have any talent in the way of the sword. Besides, his weapon was a saber.

By entering into such a world, the sword spirit probably did not believe his master's heritage would ever be inherited.

Chapter 302: Returning To The Divine City

"I am returning to my deep slumber. This time I will go into a deeper sleep and I am unsure about when I will wake up again. Since you have entered Pure Yang Sword Palace, it means that you and I are fated. This broken sword is yours. You can leave anytime you want. You can also train within Pure Yang Sword Palace. You have a pure Yang body so you will be able to cultivate more easily here..."

After the black shadow sword spirit said this, its figure slowly turned fuzzy until it completely disappeared.

Yi Yun was left standing alone in the hall.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

With a few light sounds, the broken sword, which was originally embedded into the ground, slowly emerged before falling onto the ground.

Seeing the rusty broken sword, Yi Yun felt somewhat speechless. He had risked his life entering the burning hell, broke the board game array to enter this broken world. Yet, he could not enter the internal regions of the palace and only received this broken sword that looked to be in terrible shape.

However, Yi Yun knew that since the black shadow sword spirit gave him the broken sword, it could definitely not be something ordinary...

The question is, what is extraordinary about it...

Yi Yun picked up the broken sword and inspected it. The sword's blade was not sharp in any way and looked extremely weak.

"The swords of the ancient mighty figures would remain extremely strong, even after weathering tens of millions of years. Although the blade may no longer be sharp, it should still be stronger than the Thousand Army Saber."

Yi Yun looked at the Thousand Army Saber in his hand and sighed. The saber had accompanied for quite a while, but while battling with the Golden Crow species, it broke. Only 3 feet of the 6-foot long blade remained.

When he returned to the Tai Ah Divine City, he would have to change to another saber. This saber could be said to have made considerable contributions.

With the broken sword in hand, Yi Yun felt along the blade with his fingers. He could feel the rough texture of the short blade, making Yi Yun sense a spiritual change.

"The black sword spirit thought of me as a saber user, so it thinks I am unable to understand the sword palace owner's Sword Intent. Yet, I will attempt to do so. Even if I cannot gain any understandings, I will slowly understand it thoroughly in the future."

With the broken sword in hand, Yi Yun walked out of the Pure Yang Sword Palace.

Now he was closer, in one aspect, to the sword palace's owner. They both cultivated the pure Yang laws. It was also because of this reason that this fragmented world smashed open Meteorite Abyss, a pure Yang land.

As for the differences between a sword and a saber, Yi Yun was not too particular about them. Sword and sabers were the world's most common weapons. Back when Yi Yun first chose the Thousand Army Saber, it was because the Thousand Army Saber looked extremely powerful, not because he had any special connection with the saber.

A saber would do, so would a sword. To Yi Yun, they were equivalent.

After Yi Yun read the 'Truth of the Laws', he knew that regardless of saber truths or sword truths, they were all branches of the Dao of weapons. And the Dao of weapons was just one major category amongst the 3000 Great Dao of martial arts.

To cultivate to the peak of martial arts, just following one Great Dao was too narrow.

If he had the ability, the more Great Dao he learned, the closer he would approach the Heavenly Dao of Origins. When he later becomes a Great Emperor, his strength would become even

stronger.

"Even if I learned sword truths together with my saber truths, there's no harm to that."

With his mind set, Yi Yun walked to the front of the Seven Kills Pillar left behind by the sword palace's owner.

As he looked ahead, the large sword scar looked as if it was going to split the world apart.

Yi Yun held the rusty sword diagonally, tracing the sword scar in the air with the broken blade.

At the same time, Yi Yun opened the Purple Crystal's energy vision.

In the energy vision, Yi Yun was able to directly see the origin of the energy flows within.

Back in the saber tomb, Yi Yun had used the energy vision to see the 'Saber Truth's 32 Words' origin saber truths. Today, Yi Yun was doing the same thing.

The Purple Crystal was too magical. In Yi Yun's opinion, although the black sword spirit had extraordinary insight, it clearly could not detect the Purple Crystal's existence.

The level of this kind of divine artifact exceeded Yi Yun's imagination.

In the Purple Crystal's vision, all appearances disappeared.

On the Seven Kills Pillar, each 'Kill' word looked the same with the naked eye, but with the Purple Crystal's energy vision, they were completely different.

The sword palace's owner had written his Sword Intent into the Seven Kills Pillar when he engraved it.

Every "Kill" word embodied a different Sword Intent, engraved with different Great Dao law!

Although Yi Yun was unable to enter the pure Yang Palace and obtain the heritage of the palace's owner, the Seven Kills Pillar alone was a treasure!

However, the sword palace's realm was far beyond Yi Yun's imagination. The Sword Intent left behind in the Seven Kills Pillar was too difficult for Yi Yun, even with him looking straight at its origins.

This was probably a Sword Intent which reached the highest realms of the sword truths.

Yi Yun stood before the Seven Kills Pillar and the shocking sword scar for a day and night without moving, pondering over the

origins of sword truths.

However, his level was too low. He was only able to figure out an extremely small part of it.

Only when Yi Yun's Yuan Qi was depleted did he open his eyes and leave the Seven Kills Pillar. Standing in front of Seven Kills Pillar was a test of his perseverance. Yi Yun had to constantly circulate his pure Yang Qi to withstand the pressure emitted by the Sword Intent.

At that moment, Yi Yun was exhausted, and what he understood from pondering over the Seven Kills Pillar's sword truth till now was extremely limited.

This was a Great Dao that reached the extreme realms. It was extremely difficult to climb it.

Even so, Yi Yun was not discouraged.

He knew that the path of martial arts was fraught with difficulties.

Practicing martial arts needed one to endure unimaginable loneliness. Many experts could go into reclusive training for decades at a go.

Such long periods of time where a person had to sit alone in a chamber would drive a person crazy from the loneliness.

However, the pursuit of martial arts can ease this loneliness. What was supporting Yi Yun was the sword truths in the Seven Kills Pillar.

...

Yi Yun returned to the Pure Yang Sword Palace. There were only two places in the sword palace he could go. One was the hall and the other was a cultivating room.

When Yi Yun entered the cultivating room, he gained a greater level of understanding of why the black sword spirit said that this Pure Yang Sword Palace was a cultivating treasure land for him.

The pure Yang array within the cultivating room had not broken down, even after tens of millions of years. It was still able to gather Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

The chamber's Yang Qi was shockingly pure. It would be half the work with double the results to cultivate here.

Besides, the stone platform within the cultivating room for mediating was also a treasure. While sitting on it, Yi Yun could feel his mind getting clearer and his body's Yuan Qi could be circulated even faster.

This cultivating ground was even better than the central divine tower.

Yi Yun decided to stay within the Pure Yang Sword Palace for a long period of time. He had temporarily checked out of his residence in the central divine tower's 69th floor right before he came out to train.

The central divine tower's residences were like inns. They were charged by the day. Even if one paid dragon scale runes in advance, as long as one was not staying in it, the dragon scale runes could be refunded.

Now, Yi Yun felt that he should come to Pure Yang Sword Palace often in the future. He did not need the central divine tower much anymore. The 6 months he had reserved might be enough for his 6 years in the Tai Ah Divine City.

This broken world also had night and day. Everyday, Yi Yun would stand before the Seven Kills Pillar, pondering over the Sword Intent. At night, he would meditate in the palace's chamber.

When he was hungry, he would eat the food and water in his interspatial ring. When he traveled the Divine Wilderness, he had gathered plenty of desolate beast meat. It was enough for him to eat.

As such, Yi Yun began his first, long term, reclusive training of his martial arts career.

He wanted to consolidate his cultivation level and lay a foundation for his sword and saber dual cultivation during this

reclusive training.

Spring passed as autumn came. Time passed with Yi Yun no longer knowing how much time had passed. He only knew his hair was constantly growing. His height had also rapidly shot up.

A child between the age of 13 and 14 was in his growth spurt. Due to malnutrition while in the Cloud Wilderness, Yi Yun's physical development had been slow. Now however, consuming desolate beast meat and bone relics greatly nourished him, so his height grew by the day.

Yi Yun suddenly realized that the clothes he had brought with him were all one size too small.

He had unconsciously grown to the height of an adult male, he would even be above average amongst adults. His body became more and more stout, and his muscles were toned but not exaggerated. Besides his face having a tinge of childishness, he looked no different from an adult when one looked at him from the back.

Although Yi Yun was unable to understand the Sword Intent contained within Seven Kills Pillar, after a long period of time, Yi Yun experienced the baptism of the Seven Kills Pillar's Sword Intent. Slowly, Yi Yun no longer needed to circulate the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' to withstand the Sword Intent.

Unconsciously, the charm of this shocking sword attack left behind by the sword palace's owner, merged with the Purple

Crystal and subtly branded itself within Yi Yun's spiritual sea...

This was an indescribable feeling.

Now, although Yi Yun was unable to slash out such a Sword Intent, he had deeply remembered all the structures of the laws contained within the Sword Intent.

He felt that now, it was time for him to leave.

He planned on returning to the Tai Ah Divine City.

Below the Tai Ah Divine City's central divine tower, there was a sword tomb other than the saber tomb!

Yi Yun was now sure that the level of the sword and saber tomb's were lower than that of the Pure Yang Sword Palace. Relatively speaking, the laws within the sword tomb should be easier to understand than the Pure Yang Sword Palace's.

By entering the sword tomb he could lay down the sword foundation before returned to the Pure Yang Sword Palace to understand the Sword Intent left there. Then he might be able to use his Sword Intent to enter the Pure Yang Sword Palace. He might even be able to refine the Pure Yang Sword Palace, making it his own!

Just thinking of this made Yi Yun's blood boil.

The treasure level of this palace far exceeded his imagination.

He could even enlarge or contract it, keeping it within his body. It could fly and also tunnel through the ground. It could be used as a spiritual vessel.

If he really gained control over such a palace, it would be extremely easy to traverse the Divine Wilderness.

One had to know, to cross the Divine Wilderness, the airships used by the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom needed the cooperation of more than ten Human Lords to power the aerial fortress!

On the day Yi Yun left, the black sword spirit still remained asleep. It was in a deep slumber. It was not bothered by, nor did it question, whatever Yi Yun did during this period. It might not even know. To the black sword spirit, a youth like Yi Yun was not worth its effort to care for. After all, it did not have much of its lifespan left.

Yi Yun packed his things and leaped down the sword palace's mountain. As he approached the big bronze door, the door would open. As such, Yi Yun successfully returned to the burning hell.

After such a long period of time, the Yi Yun who entered and exited the burning hell were completely different.

Whether it was his strength or his psyche!

It could be said that Yi Yun had been reborn!

Chapter 303: City Lord's Birthday Banquet

In early winter, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had its first snow. Ten months had passed since Yi Yun had left the Tai Ah Divine City.

The batch of cultivators that entered the Tai Ah Divine City with Yi Yun were now second years.

And the new batch of Tai Ah Divine City cultivators had entered the Tai Ah Divine City three months ago and they all had finished their initial jobs.

Now, it was time for these rookies to participate in the rookie ranking competition.

The rewards for this rookie ranking competition was 100% better than the last one!

The main reason was that the Tai Ah Divine City city lord's birthday was coming!

For a figure at the level of the Tai Ah Divine City city lord, they had one birthday banquet every one hundred years. And on the day of the birthday banquet, he may be in reclusive training or out exploring ruins. Due to a multitude of reasons, a birthday banquet would not be held.

In fact, the current Tai Ah Divine City city lord was a bit

mysterious. In the last few centuries, he seldom appeared, not to mention holding any form of birthday banquets.

The people in charge of the Tai Ah Divine City were mainly the two elders, Jian Ge and Cang Yan.

When he suddenly announced his birthday banquet, it surprised many. Some people speculated that there were some special reasons.

Of course, these were just things that the upper echelons considered. For the rest of the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators, it was definitely good news.

Being able to attend the birthday banquet of such a legendary person and witnessing such an event was a great privilege.

And during the birthday celebrations, many of the resources within Tai Ah Divine City were discounted and many of the rewards were increased. These were the most practical benefits!

Of course, the rookies that ranked high in the rookie ranking competition would gain the most from the city lord's birthday celebrations.

In order to become first amongst the rookies, all of them used the moves all they had, showcasing their best skills.

Now, it was the battle to decide who the best rookie was!

The final battle was between a young man and a young girl.

The young man's name was Lu Jie. He did not come from a prominent background, and he could only be considered to be an above-average noble. As for the young girl, Wen Yu, she came from a prominent family and she was indeed a proud daughter of heaven.

Both of them were thirteen years old. It could be said that many paid attention to their battle, so many senior cultivators came to watch.

Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran were amongst the crowd.

They were recognized the moment they entered the arena.

Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran had both entered the top 1000 of the Heaven roll within a year!

Especially Chu Xiaoran, who had reached the ranking of 890 on the Earth ranking at the end of her first year. Her Heaven ranking was more ridiculous, at 860!

To enter the top 1000 of the Heaven and Earth rolls in the first year as a Tai Ah Divine City rookie was impressive. It was enough to stir up a storm in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

And Chu Xiaoran entered the top 900 of both rolls. It was even more astonishing!

To this batch of Tai Ah Divine City rookies, their senior sister, Chu Xiaoran was a legendary person. She had condensed an Aspect Totem before the Yuan Foundation realm, and her comprehension of the laws far exceeded warriors her own age. With so many rings of light surrounding Chu Xiaoran, this made many rookies become loyal fans of Chu Xiaoran.

The appearance of Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu stirred up quite a frenzy. Rookies quickly made way for the two of them.

Lu Jie and Wen Yu also admired the two of them. Although they were geniuses, they knew that compared to Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran, they were a distance away.

They had even heard that in the last rookie ranking competition, Chu Xiaoran was not the champion. It was a youth named Yi Yun. But Yi Yun was too rash as teenager, and he went alone into the forbidden lands of Meteorite Abyss–Fallen Star Gate to train.

After that, he disappeared. It was said that Tai Ah Divine City's Elder Cang Yan even went into Fallen Star Gate to look for Yi Yun but he found nothing.

Up to now, Yi Yun had disappeared for ten months.

Originally, the cultivator's identity token not only recorded the

person's identity, dragon scale runes and the points gained from killing desolate beasts, but it also provided their location.

But even by searching the spot, Yi Yun was still not to be found.

As such, it was most likely that Yi Yun's identity token had been destroyed in Fallen Star Gate.

This identity token was considered an average magical item, and it was not that strong. In the chaotic environment within Fallen Star Gate, it was not surprising for it to be destroyed by the pure Yang flames.

As such, Yi Yun's situation was not optimistic.

Some people believed that Yi Yun had died. According to the Tai Ah Divine City's regulations, people who disappeared for a year was considered dead.

Historically, there were super crazy people who trained in the Divine Wilderness for nearly a year.

Some people were originally thought to be dead, but they returned safely.

But such events were rare.

Even so, they were not like Yi Yun.

According to the news brought back by Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu, Yi Yun had gone into Fallen Star Gate to train. Even the most awesome people did not dare train there for so long!

Hence, many people felt that the odds were greatly against Yi Yun.

In the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, only geniuses who were nurtured were paid attention to. As for geniuses who disappeared or died, they would quickly be forgotten.

As such, only Chu Xiaoran, Qiuniu and the second year cultivators deeply remembered of Yi Yun's past glories.

As for the new batch of cultivators, they did not know Yi Yun's name. Even if they had heard it, it would only be a story of novel interest.

The match had begun .

Wen Yu and Lu Jie showcased all their skills and they fought impressively.

The two of them had entered the top 4000 of the Earth roll. This match was their final battle to decide who was the champion amongst the rookies.

The battle quickly entered the most intense stage. And amongst the crowd, Chu Xiaoran was drifting off. Her mind was clearly not focused on the match.

"What's the matter Xiaoran? Thinking about Yi Yun?" Qiuniu, who was beside Chu Xiaoran, asked.

"Yes..." Chu Xiaoran nodded. She came to watch this rookie ranking competition not to focus on Wen Yu and Lu Jie. The both of them would not pose a threat to Chu Xiaoran in the future.

Chu Xiaoran came to this match to reminiscence about the battle she had with Yi Yun last year. Although she had lost in that battle, it was the battle that left the deepest impression in her life thus far. As such, she felt extremely strongly about it.

"Back then when we were training in Meteorite Abyss, if not for Yi Yun, we would have died when our path was blocked by the Blue Blood Ape in the valley, and then later besieged by the weird fish in the deep pool. It can be said that Yi Yun had saved us twice."

"Who would have thought that we returned safely, but only Yi Yun disappeared. Even though Elder Cang Yan also thinks that something happened to Yi Yun, I still think that Yi Yun would not die so easily. He has not returned because of some reason..." Chu Xiaoran said faintly.

Qiuniu nodded and said, "Yi Yun is a person with fate supporting him. He definitely won't die so easily, but...people are worried because the connection to his identity token has been lost. We can

only pray that our ancestors will bless him..."

...

In a swamp about 50 kilometers away from the Tai Ah Divine City.

This swamp was not the Blackwater Swamp. It was an area very close to Tai Ah Divine City, so the desolate beasts in the swamp were very weak. Typically, only rookies would train here.

It may be training, they were only out here to really see the world. They needed to familiarize themselves on how to work in a small team to kill desolate beasts. This was to lay a foundation for them to traverse the Divine Wilderness in the future.

In the swamp, at that moment, there was a team of rookies killing desolate beasts.

As this was their first time out of the city, they were extremely tense as if they were fighting the greatest of enemies, even though it was just 50 kilometers from Tai Ah Divine City.

"Leader, look there. There's a person!" A team member in charge of alerting the team noticed that there was a youth at the end of the swamp walking over with a saber in hand.

This youth seemed to dress very specially.

He had a slender body, but the clothes on his body were clearly one size smaller. They were also greatly worn out, they could be described as rags.

It seemed as if his hair had not been cut for a very long time. It reached down to his shoulders like they were wild grass.

The saber in his hand was also halved. He seemed to have gone through a great crisis and then be robbed by someone after that.

The team members were not even sure if this person was a Tai Ah Divine City cultivator. Could he be a Divine Wilderness barbarian?

As the youth approached, the team became more alert.

"What are you?" The seven people asked with their weapons in hand.

The youth smiled and exposed his two rows of white teeth.

He had finally met some people after a long time!

Loneliness was an emotion not to be dismissed. Even Yi Yun felt extremely lonely after cultivating alone for an extended period of time.

Now when he suddenly saw people, he felt a warm feeling

surging over him.

"Hello there, I want to ask, what year and month is it now?"

Upon hearing Yi Yun's question, the youths were shocked. Was this really a barbarian? The first thing he asked was the year and month...

"It's Qingfeng Year 68, 7th day of the winter month."

Qingfeng was the present divine emperor's reigning title. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom used the reigning title as a marker through the years. Typically, people would only say the last two digits as the numbers in front were too long. So they were often omitted.

"Seventh day of the winter month. That means it's 7 November. I actually spent so long cultivating in Pure Yang Sword Palace..." Yi Yun sighed. Time really did not mean anything while cultivating.

"Hey, you haven't told us what sort of person are you?" The team leader asked again.

"Me?" Yi Yun laughed. Seeing the youth that looked even younger than him, he said, "I'm a Tai Ah Divine City cultivator."

"Cultivator?" A few of the cultivators were shocked. They looked strangely at Yi Yun.

This fellow was also a cultivator? He sure was in a sorry state!

As rookies, they were already in quite a tragic state. But now seeing this youth, they were nothing. He was no different from a beggar.

"Bro, were you surrounded by desolate beasts? Even your saber is broken, and your clothes are torn. Quickly return to the city. Prepare better in the future. Bring more disk arrays, array charms, lightning beads, etc. These one-time magical items may seem to be a waste, but they can save your life at the critical moment. You should not sting on those dragon scale runes!"

The rookie team leader seemed to look extremely enthusiastic. He advised Yi Yun with his recently gained experience.

Yi Yun chuckled and did not mind. He said, "Thanks! I'm indeed returning to the city. See you later!"

Since he was returning to Tai Ah Divine City, Yi Yun was in a good mood.

He had been in reclusive training in the Pure Yang Sword Palace for nearly 10 months. On his way back, he had killed desolate beasts, consolidating his Aspect Totem.

Now, Yi Yun's cultivation level had officially entered the peak of the Purple Blood realm.

The next step was to begin forming the Yuan Foundation.

Chapter 304: The New Crop Has Yet To Come In To Replace The Old

The highly anticipated rookie-ranking competition had come to an end. At the end, Lu Jie had a slight edge and defeated Wen Yu, becoming the champion amongst the rookies.

As the crowd in the rookie ranking competition dispersed, everyone discussed the final battle with great excitement.

The arena was connected to all the major residences, so it was extremely crowded.

It was at that moment that Yi Yun returned to the Tai Ah Divine City. On the way through, he noticed throngs of people and became slightly stunned, "Oh? Why are there so many people?"

As Yi Yun looked at the rookies with a dumbfounded expression, the rookies were also stunned upon seeing Yi Yun.

This was because Yi Yun's appearance was too extreme.

The rookie ranking competition was a significant occasion, thus many people were very well-dressed. In contrast, Yi Yun was wearing ragged clothes that were obviously one size too small. Not only was he unkempt, his saber was even half-broken, all of this made him look like a beggar. It was severely out of place within the Tai Ah Divine City.

Who is this person?

This thought appeared in many people's minds. If the Tai Ah Divine City did not forbid unauthorized people from entering, there might have been people throwing money at Yi Yun.

At that moment, not far away, a group with Wen Yu, Lu Jie, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran amongst them were walking over.

The world of warriors respected those who were strong, so the four of them were treated like idols as they came over.

Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu were especially respected. No matter how crowded the streets were, everyone would make way for them.

Seeing Yi Yun suddenly appear, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran became stunned.

This was because, in nearly a year's time, Yi Yun had undergone too many changes. They were unable to recognize him with just a single glance.

After staring at Yi Yun's face for a long while, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran looked at each other in the eye with an incredulous look.

It's really him!

"Haha! Yi Yun! " Qiuniu laughed boisterously. Qiuniu and Yi Yun had only been ordinary friends, but they could be considered as having experienced life and death together in Meteorite Abyss. Besides, Yi Yun had also saved Qiuniu's life.

Their friendship naturally was no longer the same.

Qiuniu squeezed out of the crowd and quickly strode towards Yi Yun, slapping him heavily on his shoulders.

"I knew you wouldn't die so easily. Haha!"

Yi Yun coming back alive was something that made Qiuniu happy from the bottom of his heart.

Yi Yun also gave a hearty laugh and said, "I was lucky...I went in a cursory circle around death's gate."

After experiencing a year of loneliness, Yi Yun was overcome with emotion upon seeing a familiar face again. He had indeed nearly lost his life after being chased by the Golden Crow species.

"Yi Yun, you have finally returned!" Chu Xiaoran also moved towards Yi Yun. When they bade farewell 10 months ago, Chu Xiaoran was a tiny bit taller than Yi Yun. Now however, she had to slightly look up at him.

She felt that Yi Yun had undergone a complete change in the time they were separated. It was not only his physical appearance, but

other aspects as well. As for what was different, Chu Xiaoran was unable to tell.

"Yi Yun, you have been out training for so long. What is your cultivation level?" Qiuniu asked casually.

"Peak of Purple Blood!" Yi Yun did not conceal it.

"Haha, then you are slower than us. Xiaoran and I have already begun to condense the initial shape of the Yuan Foundation. You can think of us as being one foot through the door of the Yuan Foundation realm. In two months, we will definitely break through into the Yuan Foundation realm!"

Qiuniu's eyes lit up and he was eager to try it out just by talking about cultivation levels. In these 10 months, he had made significant progress. The huge leap from the peak of Purple Blood to a half-step within the Yuan Foundation made Qiuniu's "Divine Strength Ox King Skill" progress one more level.

There was a significant jump with every "Divine Strength Ox King Skill" level.

Qiuniu was now filled with confidence and he wanted to fight anyone he saw.

"Brother Yi, when will we train in the arena!?"

Qiuniu knew that Yi Yun was definitely strong, but he still

brimmed with confidence. He couldn't help himself after seeing Yi Yun, a strong warrior peer. He felt that even if he was not Yi Yun's match, the difference would not be as great as the gap between them a year ago.

The surrounding rookies turned dumbfounded upon seeing Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran speak so happily with Yi Yun.

They never expected that this beggar-like person would be Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran's good friend.

"Yi Yun... Isn't he the champion of last year's rookie ranking competition...?"

A portion of the rookies had heard of Yi Yun. They had some impressions of this name which was now nearly forgotten by Tai Ah Divine City cultivators.

"It should be him, but this person... actually defeated Chu Xiaoran in the last rookie ranking competition? Is that really true?"

When everyone heard this, they were dumbfounded. This guy was completely different from the preconceived expert in their minds!

He did not have the air of an expert, yet, he was actually stronger than Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu?

Many rookies looked at Yi Yun with puzzlement and doubt. Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu's strength had been witnessed by many of them, and it was terrifying.

However, the person in front of them looked like he came out from a refugee camp, he didn't look like he made the mark. They found it hard to believe that this person was a super expert. Even if he was very strong a year ago, he had disappeared for too long, and no one knew what he had experienced during this period. Could he really lead Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran?

Many of them couldn't help but have thoughts like that.

At that moment, Yi Yun decided to bid Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu farewell.

"Brother Yi, when you have time, come to the arena! When you do so, inform me!"

Qiuniu still did not forget the matter of sparring with Yi Yun. In his opinion, Yi Yun's return was definitely to challenge the rankings.

Yi Yun smiled and said, "Sure!"

"Haha, don't be perfunctory with me. You may not know this but Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and the Qiao brothers have already left the Tai Ah Divine City. Now the first few spots have opened up in the area and everyone is eyeing them! Some of the senior cultivators

who have hope in being first are all in an intense battle for it. Especially because of the ongoing City Lord's birthday celebrations, the arena rewards have increased by a lot!"

As Qiuniu said so, he pointed to the crowd behind him, "The arena was in a hiatus because of the rookie ranking competition. If not, there would be countless numbers of people fighting, more people than usual!"

"Oh? Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and the others have left?" Yi Yun was stunned upon hearing that. Indeed, they had stayed in the Tai Ah Divine City for a full six years, and it was time for them to leave.

A pity!

Yi Yun had known the famous names of Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and company ever since he entered the Tai Ah Divine City.

Yi Yun had always wanted to spar with Qin Haotian.

However, Yi Yun was now only at the peak of Purple Blood, and due to the difference in cultivation level, he would not be Qin Haotian's match. Only Yi Yun himself knew the difference between him and Qin Haotian.

And now, they had left Tai Ah Divine City, leaving him with no opportunity to challenge them.

This could only be described as a pity.

"Yes, with them here, it would be very difficult for us to challenge the Earth roll." Qiuniu laughed. He did not pay any attention to Yi Yun's thoughts. From his point of view, anyone who wanted to challenge Qin Haotian from their year, was wishfully thinking.

"Now, the arena's overall strength has decreased. Many of the fifth year cultivators are far weaker than Qin Haotian. Maybe in a year or two, we will be able to challenge the top 5 of the Heaven and Earth rolls!"

Qiuniu was very excited. If he could enter the Tai Ah Divine City's top 5 in his fourth year, it would be a glorious achievement to be proud of.

Yi Yun sighed. Indeed,, the Tai Ah Divine City did not give rise to extremely talented elites every year. The current Tai Ah Divine City was a bit lacking.

Yi Yun still liked to battle the peerless geniuses. With Qin Haotian gone, there was only Luo Huo'er left. However, she seldom appeared in the arena, nor did she challenge the Heaven or Earth rolls. Her strength was a question mark.

"Brother Yi, it could not have been easy for you to return. Let us go to the Divine Moon Restaurant and drink two cups!"

Qiuniu wanted to take Yi Yun drinking.

However, Yi Yun shook his head, "Let's have it at another time. I have been gone for far too long. Now that I am back in Tai Ah Divine City, I first need to greet Grandmaster Yuehua and Elder Cang Yan."

Amongst these two people, one was his quasi-master, and the other may not be his master but had taught him plenty. It was only right for Yi Yun to greet the seniors.

...

About one hour later in the central divine tower's 69th floor.

"Miss! Miss!" Dong'er ran to Luo Huo'er's training ground on her short legs.

"What's the matter this time?" Luo Huo'er said impatiently. This maidservant of hers liked to be surprised at the slightest things.

Dong'er puffed heavily as she hurriedly said, "That... That person you especially hate, he is back!"

When Luo Huo'er heard this, her mouth curled. She said without paying attention, "There are many people this missus hates! I cannot even remember all of them. Which (not typo, she refers to them as animals) one are you talking about?"

"It's... It's that Yi Yun!" Dong'er used her chubby hands to wipe the sweat off her forehead as she panted.

"Yi Yun?"

Luo Huo'er was surprised. She subconsciously stopped practicing her family's heart sutras.

Her facial expression changed as she remained silent for ten seconds.

The rascal who had disappeared nearly a year ago had actually returned.

After thinking for a while, Luo Huo'er grunted, "Good people die young, but disasters leave a mark for a thousand years. I knew he wouldn't die so easily!"

"That's right, that's right!" Dong'er nodded her head strongly. "Miss, do you want to go meet him? He's currently greeting Grandmaster Yuehua."

Luo Huo'er's mouth twitched, "What do I need to meet him for? In a few days, that toad will move back beside us. In the future, we will meet frequently. What a pain!"

Saying this, Luo Huo'er began practicing her martial arts again.

However, she couldn't help herself from thinking about it. As she thought about it, her lips couldn't help but curl up as she revealed a sinister smile.

Although she always found Yi Yun to be a pain, she never wished for the rascal to just die like that.

"Miss, why are you smiling?" Dong'er asked curiously.

"Am I smiling?" Luo Huo'er paused for a while and then grunted, "I'm laughing because the rascal is back. I have something fun to play with again. See how I will make a fool out of him now, hur hur hur!"

Luo Huo'er began laughing happily. Dong'er cocked her head and tried to think hard. It seems that... Miss never succeeded in making a fool out of him?

Of course, she would never dare to say this out loud.

Chapter 305: Gathering Of Experts

The news of Yi Yun returning to Tai Ah Divine City quickly spread in less than half a day.

Rookies did not have much concept of the name Yi Yun. However, it meant a lot to many of the second year cultivators, especially his enemies.

This name was unforgettable!

"That rascal actually didn't die!"

At this moment, in a small courtyard, there were a few people gathered with sullen faces.

The three of them, who were sitting on chairs, were Li Hong, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng.

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng were brothers and came from the Chu royal residence. Yang Dingkun had taken the opportunity to gamble against Yi Yun in Yi Yun's battle with Li Hong and ended up losing greatly. The 'Truth of the Laws' was lost, causing him to be punished by his family clan.

As for Yang Yuefeng, who had always been proud of his Desolate Heaven technique, he had his face torn off by Yi Yun.

However, the person who hated Yi Yun the most were not amongst these people. In the corner of this courtyard stood a youth, full of scars and a missing arm.

He was Yang Haoran.

10 months ago, inside Meteorite Abyss's frost pool, he was suddenly attacked by a school of weird fishes. His body had consequently been horribly mangled by the fish, pieces of flesh had been ripped off his body!

Just recalling the experience gave him nightmares!

With the rage of being unwilling to die, he had then rushed out of the frost lake with great difficulty and managed to eventually survive.

He barely escaped death with his surface flesh and skin of his body gone. All he was left with was bloody remnant muscles. It was horrible!

One of his arms had been ripped straight off by a large fish.

Losing one arm was Yang Haoran's greatest pain. How could a warrior be left without a limb?

It was not that there were no treasures that could restore a person's arm, but they were extremely expensive. Even his Yang family could hardly obtain one.

And even if it was obtained, the arm which was regrown, would be a normal human arm. One had to train it from the beginning all over again.

It was easy to imagine what sort of hardship and suffering he had to undergo!

Yang Haoran only felt hate. He hated the strange fish and hated everything!

Originally, when Yang Haoran was bitten horribly and the calamity suddenly befell onto him, the pain prevented him from thinking about why he was suddenly attacked by the strange fishes.

However, after recovering, he recalled the terrifying nightmare. He remembered that back then in the water, he had heard an explosion and then saw a Yuan Qi beam.

Within the beam, there was an arrow flying towards him. On the arrowhead, there was something green. It looked like grass.

The arrow was not aimed at him and passed by him a short distance away from him, but accompanying that arrow was that school of terrifying strange fishes!

As Yang Haoran recalled the scenes back then, he became more and more sure of what had happened. That Yuan Qi fluctuation

was definitely from a warrior, not a desolate beast.

Yang Haoran also slowly remembered that the grass on the arrowhead was the Beast Luring Grass he had previously used!

All at once, Yang Haoran figured it out.

The strange fish were deliberately being lured away from something and towards him, to purposely cause him harm. As for that arrow...

Amongst that group, only Yi Yun used a bow and arrow!

Yang Haoran's anger reached its peak at that time. He wanted Yi Yun's blood to atone for his!

However, following Yi Yun's disappearance, the point of him possibly dying in Meteorite Abyss appeased Yang Haoran's anger slightly.

He considered it as a consequence Yi Yun deserved.

Although he was unable to avenge himself, which made him unable to accept it, he knew that even if Yi Yun were to actually return, he could do nothing to him.

He did not have proof. Even if he had proof, he could not raise a complaint against Yi Yun because he was the person who initially

lured that mutated Three Eyed Spider to them.

In fact, because of this event, Yang Haoran had to endure the immense pressure brought forth by Chu Xiaoran's Defender Duke family clan and Qiuniu's reclusive family clan.

The Yang family may have the royal bloodline, but it was too much for them to face two large family clans. With Yang Haoran's physical disability, there was even a chance of his family clan abandoning him.

This placed Yang Haoran into an excruciating position.

Yang Haoran was too busy with his own affairs for the past few months so he had no energy to decide on how to seek revenge on Yi Yun.

Thankfully, as time passed, the possibility of Yi Yun having died became increasingly more likely.

However... today, Yi Yun returned!

And besides looking a bit pathetic, he had no injuries at all!

Looking back at himself, he was like a dog with a broken leg!

This comparison nearly made Yang Haoran go crazy!

"Haoran, do not be rash..."

Yang Yuefeng patted Yang Haoran's shoulder.

After Yang Haoran became disabled, he became slightly insane and abnormal. Yang Yuefeng was the most senior amongst the group, hence these people all treated him as their leader.

"Everyone, we can all be considered as under one camp. With Yi Yun's return, we have no idea how strong he has become. If he were to mature in the future, then we will really lose our place in Tai Ah Divine City."

The Tai Ah Divine City's genius-rearing strategy was similar to rearing venomous worms. A competition was held to obtain anything here. Many cultivators formed groups and associations to resist the competitive pressure.

They were arch-rivals of Yi Yun, so if Yi Yun were to mature and rank among the top of the Heaven and Earth rolls, their days would no longer be smooth-sailing.

Li Hong said, "Yi Yun has gone to report to the Elders. I heard his description. He had been trapped in a place for ten months, which prevented him from returning..."

"Trapped for ten months? Heh... From his appearance after coming back, he must have experienced some huge disaster. This bastard sure has a strong life. He will definitely challenge the Earth

roll. We must first see what rank he is able to achieve before we decide on how to deal with him in the future."

"Earth roll..." Yang Dingkun gritted his teeth. "If only he challenges me. Such a pity..."

After the last batch of cultivators left, Yang Dingkun's ranking on the Earth roll had entered the top 40.

This ranking was extremely far off for second year cultivators. For example, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran's ranks only ranged from 700-900.

From Yang Dingkun's point of view, Yi Yun was still far from being able to challenging the top 100 on the Earth roll. This meant he was not fated to exchange blows with Yi Yun.

...

"Rotten kid, where did you go to for the past ten months!?"

In the central divine tower, Cang Yan ruffled Yi Yun's hair, "Ah! Kid you grew taller."

Cang Yan was short so now he was shorter than Yi Yun.

Yi Yun felt helpless. He had already listened to old man Cang nag all day.

Regarding the burning hell's explanation, Yi Yun did not dare to tell him that he had entered the deepest level of the burning hell.

That place's pure Yang Qi was too rich. He had used the Purple Crystal to split the pure Yang fire in order to enter the depths of the burning hell. Even sages would need to spend a lot of Yuan Qi to enter.

Yi Yun could only say that he had been sucked into an unknown space. As such, he could explain how his identity token had lost its connection.

This sparked the interest of Cang Yan. He had already decided to form a team with Jian Ge to investigate the burning hell again.

This gave Yi Yun a headache. He felt like he was cheating the old man. This so-called "unknown space" was definitely something that Cang Yan could not find.

Cang Yan asked many questions regarding this "unknown space" and Yi Yun only gave some vague descriptions.

These sort of places tended to be vague and insubstantial and with Yi Yun's cultivation level, it was not something he could understand, so it was normal. Cang Yan would naturally not suspect a thing, nor question him.

"So how about it? When are you challenging the Earth roll? Let's

see the fruits of the past ten months of cultivation." Cang Yan was looking forward to seeing Yi Yun's current strength.

"I do not have any plans on challenging the Earth roll for now."

"Not challenging the Earth roll? What are you doing?" Cang Yan pinched his beard, clearly unhappy.

"I plan on going into the sword tomb."

"Sword tomb!?" Cang Yan stared. "Aren't you doing well in the saber tomb? Why are you going to the sword tomb?"

Cang Yan was practically speechless. This Yi Yun really made one worry.

He had not fully understood the saber tomb, yet he kept having his sights on the sword tomb. "Kid, what craziness is this? You cannot be giving up on the saber and picking up the sword, right? Or... do you want to use both saber and sword?"

Thinking of this, Cang Yan really wanted to pry open Yi Yun's brain to see what messy thoughts this kid had.

Warriors who could thoroughly learn everything about one weapon were already amazing.

To master two weapons was something crazy. It was a task with

no returns.

Since ancient times, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's sages had never done such a thing. Of course, it was common for people to pick up bows and concealed weapons as a side weapon. Bows and concealed weapons were ancillary weapons used to attack from a distance and could be put to great use during critical times.

"I'm just thinking of taking a look. Maybe I will get some inspiration from the sword tomb." Yi Yun equivocated.

Even with such an explanation, Cang Yan's face turned sullen. "Kid, back then when I let you choose a totem mystic technique, you chose the 'Myriad Beast Totem'. Now, without having completed the 'Myriad Beast Totem', you still aren't even thinking of switching to a more possible totem mystic technique. And now you are even thinking about the sword tomb. You sure are capable!"

Cang Yan was also worried that Yi Yun would end up wasting his time trying to learn too many things, with all of them being extremely profound.

However, no matter what Cang Yan said, Yi Yun did not budge. He wanted to go into the sword tomb to gain greater experience and inspiration from within.

Finally, Cang Yan gave in. He demanded, "Alright! I will let you enter the sword tomb once! However, I will say the unpleasanties first. Once you exit the sword tomb, you are to challenge the Earth

roll and enter the top 500. No! Top 400! No! 300! If you cannot enter the top 300, you are to focus on cultivating your saber skills without any other distractions. You are also to choose another totem mystic technique. And stop thinking of this and that for me in the future!"

Cang Yan indignantly said. He could tell that Yi Yun's cultivation level was still at the peak of Purple Blood, a bit worse than Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu's.

Even if Yi Yun's talent was greater than Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu, and had strength that exceeded Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran combined, it would be impossible for him to enter the top 500.

One had to know that all cultivators who ranked in the top 500 of the Earth roll were at the peak of the beginning stages of the Yuan Foundation realm. There was a huge gap between the Purple Blood realm and the Yuan Foundation realm. It was extremely difficult for a person at the peak of the Purple Blood realm to battle against a person at the peak of the beginning stages of the Yuan Foundation realm.

Still, the top 500 was not enough.

Cang Yan was afraid that Yi Yun had some fortuitous opportunities while he was missing, and could now enter the top 400. That would make the kid feel smug once again.

Hence, Cang Yan purposely set the goal to be the top 300. This was to ensure that he could rid Yi Yun of all his unrealistic ideas,

preventing him from being overly ambitious.

Cang Yan never expected that Yi Yun would immediately agree with a "Sure!" after setting such a difficult objective.

"Eh?" Cang Yan had expected Yi Yun to go in a rage, he never expected him to immediately agree to it.

He was that confident?

Cang Yan was a bit dumbfounded. He clicked his tongue twice as a malicious smile formed on his lips.

This kid must still not know how strong the top 300 of the Earth roll is. Even plenty of mid-stage Yuan Foundation realm cultivators are unable to enter the top 300. Underestimating it will only lead to misery!

Upon thinking of this, Cang Yan felt assured. It was good to let Yi Yun suffer some setbacks, to prevent him from thinking he can do everything everyday.

...

The day of the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord's birthday banquet was quickly approaching.

That afternoon, a huge airship flew above the Tai Ah Divine City.

This airship was about 2000 feet long and was completely covered in black scales. It was like a huge flying monster.

When it passed by Tai Ah Divine City, it cast a huge shadow.

This is...

The Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators looked up at the airship and were stunned. This airship was different from the Tai Ah Divine City airships and it was much larger.

Seeing this flying monster, many people could not help but feel a sense of awe and a feeling of being small.

Some people noticed that there was a strange symbol on the side of the huge airship. It was a blob of dark clouds, with a Black Dragon flying within the clouds.

"Yun Long (Cloud Dragon) Divine Kingdom!"

Some more knowledgeable people said after seeing this symbol.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom shared a border with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was in the east while the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was in the west. To the north of both countries' northern borders was the vast Divine Wilderness.

Be it comparing the countries' power, their heritage, areas or

population, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was almost on par with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

With two great nations together, there was bound to be some conflict over resources, land and other reasons. However, with the threat of the Divine Wilderness, the two countries had to maintain the peace. They could not have any large scale wars or they wouldn't be able to resist the occasional large-scale beast hordes coming from the Divine Wilderness.

Hence the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom could be said to coexist in a cooperative and competitive state.

No one expected that the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's large airship would fly to the Tai Ah Divine City.

This airship was definitely a royal airship of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. The appearance of the ambassadors of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom arriving in the Tai Ah Divine City in such an airship was a show of their country's strength. At the same time, it also meant that whoever was riding the airship was a great figure in the Yun Long Divine Kingdom!

"The distance between the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and Tai Ah Divine City is not short. Why would their ambassadors come to the Tai Ah Divine City?" Someone asked subconsciously.

"Oh? Could it be that they are here for the City Lord's birthday banquet!?"

Someone had a flash of brilliance. Everyone felt it was possible upon hearing it.

It had to be so. The only big matter in recent times in the Tai Ah Divine City was the City Lord's birthday banquet.

"Strange, the ties our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom has with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom isn't that great. Why would they especially send an ambassador to send their birthday wishes for our City Lord's birthday banquet?"

Some more thoughtful people felt something amiss...

At that moment, within the large airship, in a luxurious hall.

A fat man in a yellow clothes was holding a meter-long roasted desolate beast leg. He was tearing off the meat with his mouth. The thin leg was not completely roasted to well-done, so it still contained some blood.

As the fat man in yellow ate the meat, he stood high above, looking condescendingly down at the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators through his airship window.

From his angle, the throngs of people below him were no different from ants that he could crush with his feet.

"These are the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators!? They don't seem like anything special to me."

As the fatty in yellow laughed, he licked the desolate beast blood from around his mouth with his excessively long tongue. A sardonic look of contempt flashed in his eyes.

Behind the fatty in yellow was a princess-like girl, dressed in a purple palace gown.

She held a wine glass in her hand as she tasted the red liquid inside it. She emitted a charming smile, "His Highness had previously said that the Tai Ah Divine City's place in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is equivalent to our Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Yun Long 72 Pagodas. Do not look down on them."

"Haha, whatever. We are here to give our birthday wishes, not here to fight. Of course, if necessary, it is basic courtesy to see what they are capable of."

The yellow-robed fatty casually said as the girl in the gown shook her head gently. "It is not an ordinary celebration. This time, Lord Seven Star Pagoda Owner wanted to come personally and discuss something with the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. Reports say that it has something to do with the mysterious person who suddenly appeared..."

"Haha, those are matters for the higher ups. I cannot care less. I'll just eat all the meat I want at this birthday banquet. Of course, if there's a fight, call on me!"

As the fatty said that, he tore off another piece of meat the size of a chicken and swallowed it down after a few chews. A meter long beast leg was quickly completely finished. He casually wiped his oily hands on his clothes and glanced at the corner of the hall. "What say you, Bai?"

In the corner of the hall sat a black-clothed youth with a pale face. His legs were opened up with his knees bent. Both his hands were resting on his knees and a black sword leaned diagonally by his legs.

His head was slightly bowed. His hanging hair covering his eyes, preventing others from seeing his face.

In the hall, he was strangely quiet. It was so quiet that it made people oblivious to his existence.

"Uh..." Facing the quiet black-clothed youth, the yellow-robed fatty gulped a mouthful of saliva and nearly choked. It was really asking to be rebuffed trying to speak to this rascal...

At that moment, the door to the hall was pushed open. A stout man walked in with a deadpan expression. He was wearing a thick fur cloak, with the collar standing up. His feet was covered in long rigid boots with desolate bones as their base. His steps emitted the bone ringing sounds of "Pa Da, Pa Da".

"We are here. Let's go down!"

Facing this male, the yellow-robed fatty and the girl in the gown became respectful.

"Yes, Lord Pagoda Owner."

The pale youth sitting by the corner also slowly stood up.

With the airship's door opened, the four of them flew towards the central divine tower in a light beam.

"Someone flew out!"

Many from the Tai Ah Divine City were straining their eyes, they did not know who the people were, but guessed that they were mighty figures of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom...

With these thoughts in mind, they never expected that a few days later, there would be airships from unknown factions flying to the Tai Ah Divine City. A large number of people disembarked and entered the central divine tower over the passing days.

These factions hung their own symbols, some were easily recognized by others. Other than the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, there was also the Tian Guang Royal Dynasty. It was a country about half the size of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, but it was not to be underestimated.

Besides them, there were also ambassadors from other independent family clans.

These independent family clans did not belong to any country, but they had great heritage. A family clan was able to compare with a country!

The existence of some of these family clans was not shorter than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's. They controlled terrifying powers that could not to be ignored.

There were more and more people coming. It was really like an assembly of heroes!

This made the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators shocked. How resounding was this City Lord birthday banquet?

A day later, another mighty figure appeared. This person's identity made many of the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators hold their breaths.

He was the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Crown Prince!

There were countless numbers of children from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal family. Just in the Tai Ah Divine City, there were plenty of cultivators with the surname Yang.

These elites, who had Yang as a surname, would have blood relations with the royal household if their bloodline was traced.

However, compared to the current Crown Prince, they were nothing.

Not only in status and identity, but also in strength!

The Crown Prince was about 3000 years old. He was chosen amongst the thousands of children from the royal household and possessed extraordinary talent. With the royal household's efforts to nurture him, he was now just a step away from being labeled a human Sage.

Once he became a sage, the current Divine Emperor would hand over the throne to him.

Hence, the Crown Prince's position in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was obvious!

"The Crown Prince is here. This celebration is going to be amazing!"

People knew that this celebration would be the greatest celebration they would ever experience in their lives!

Chapter 306: The Birthday Banquet Begins

As people gathered in Tai Ah Divine City, Yi Yun was in the sword tomb trying to gain some understanding of the sword truths without knowing the time of the day.

Originally, Yi Yun thought that having experienced the saber tomb, which came from the same origins as the sword tomb, it would be extremely easy for him to understand the sword truths with his entry into the sword tomb.

However, it was only when Yi Yun entered the sword tomb did he realize that it was completely different from the saber tomb.

In the saber tomb, there were saber scar marks and the Saber Truth's 32 Words. Each word contained a saber truth.

But, the sword tomb did not have those things. In there, there was a fascinating stone wall. Closing one's eyes and meditating in front the stone wall would envelope someone in illusions.

In these illusions, there were rushing rivers, cascading waterfalls, the virtual images of mountains of corpses and a sea of blood, and there were also flying sword beams.

It seemed like the person who left behind the sword tomb had cast all the scenes he had seen in his life into the stone wall. As such, people of the future would sense these scenes while meditating in front of the stone wall.

"These are the things that the sword tomb owner saw when comprehending the way of the sword!"

Yi Yun opened the Purple Crystal's energy vision and a light flashed across his mind.

The sword tomb owner had seen all these images that allowed him to comprehend his Sword Intent, hence, he had left his own Sword Intent within those scenes, allowing people of the future to ponder over them.

Yi Yun had spent 10 months in the Pure Yang Sword Palace and he failed to understand the Pure Yang Sword Palace's owner's Sword Intent. However, it still allowed Yi Yun to have a deep understanding of the sword truths.

After trying out the hardest sword truths that were closest to its origins, and then trying to gain insight on a relatively easier sword truth, this was much easier.

If it was said that the Sword Intent left behind in the Pure Yang Sword Palace was a tall mountain that was very difficult to scale, then the sword truths left behind in the sword tomb were like stone steps used to scale that tall mountain.

Yi Yun went up a step at a time...

Time passed. Yi Yun did not know how long had passed as he

meditated in the sword tomb. He had entered a completely ethereal state, being one with nature in a spiritual sense.

The shocking sword scars from the Pure Yang Sword Palace kept resonating in Yi Yun's mind.

It was as if those huge sword scars were carved in Yi Yun's mind, slowly overlapping with the images from within the sword tomb...

It was unknown when a rusty broken sword appeared in Yi Yun's hands. The broken sword emitted a cold frosty feeling, making Yi Yun's mind even clearer...

He gently waved the sword slowly, as if he was slashing at invisible spider webs.

Slash after slash seemed to be completely random, but in the illusionary world, Yi Yun seemed to have slashed apart a waterfall, splitting a river, and the fantasy-like saber beam and sword shadows seemed to interweave with each other.

While Yi Yun was in a trance like state of trying to comprehend the sword, the Tai Ah Divine City was already bustling with activity.

In the central divine tower, there was a place for welcoming guests, named Splendid Room. The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord's birthday banquet was to be held here.

Although the Splendid Room was in the central divine tower's hall, one would see flowers and bamboo upon entering. These plants were treasures, and between the plants, there was emerald-green water that quietly flowed around, as if it was a jade belt.

If any guest wanted to drink in this green bamboo forest, they could simply put wine glasses into the flowing water and drink from it, and it could be described as "drinking water from a winding canal".

Beyond the bamboo forest, there were exquisite little tables. The tables were about one foot tall and they only allowed people to sit kneeling on the ground. There were all sort of exquisite spiritual foods placed on the tables. They were all treasures amongst treasures and extremely expensive. The foods contained rich amounts of Yuan Qi, allowing one's cultivation level to benefit from eating it.

People who were qualified to sit at those tiny tables for the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord's birthday banquet were all important figures from various large factions.

And for VIPs like the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord and the Seven Star Pagoda Owner, they were seated near the flowing water at the center of the entire hall.

Around the table, there were pavilions.

Each pavilion had one large table and all the young elites from each country would sit here.

Except for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, who was the host, all the other factions were only allocated one pavilion.

Those who could sit in the pavilions were the strongest youths from each faction.

And for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's pavilion, the relatively outstanding Tai Ah Divine City cultivators were selected. For example, the top 30 geniuses from the Heaven, Earth, Man rolls of honor, and the leaders of other age groups.

For example, the third-year cultivators' Li Hong, the second-year cultivators' Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu and the top three rookies of this year's batch, Lu Jie, Wen Yu and a short fat youth.

"Oh? Why isn't Yi Yun here?"

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's younger generation was split amongst 6 pavilions. Wen Yu, Lu Jie, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran were sitting together. Lu Jie scanned the surroundings and noticed that Yi Yun was not around.

This surprised Lu Jie. With Yi Yun's stature, he was definitely qualified to sit here.

"I don't know, maybe he's in reclusive training..." Chu Xiaoran casually said and did not bother about it.

In fact, it was pretty pointless for her to join such a banquet. She was not a person who liked the noise and excitement. She was only here to gain an understanding of the young elites from the various factions.

"Oh? It's the people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom!"

At that moment, the most important figures from the various factions had not arrived. Only the younger generation of the various factions were in the hall.

Chu Xiaoran saw about a dozen youths walk over. Leading them was a fatty in yellow. His face had a friendly smile, but his eyes contained arrogance.

He scanned over the crowd and skipped over Chu Xiaoran without pausing and looked to the pavilion besides Chu Xiaoran's.

In that pavilion sat two of Tai Ah Divine City's most influential figures, Yao Dao and Yang Qian!

Back when Yi Yun first entered the Tai Ah Divine City, Yao Dao and Yang Qian were fifteen years old. Back then, they were ranked in the top 100 of the Earth roll.

Now, after a year, Yao Dao and Yang Qian had spent 4 years in the Tai Ah Divine City, and they were now fifth year cultivators. Their cultivation level had reached the mid-stages of the Yuan Foundation realm about half a year ago.

With Qin Haotian and his batch completing their training, they had left the Tai Ah Divine City. Hence, Yao Dao and Yang Qian had entered the top 5 of the Earth roll.

Without Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and company, there were not many presentable sixth-year geniuses in the Tai Ah Divine City other than Luo Huo'er.

But Luo Huo'er never challenged the Heaven or Earth rolls. No one knew how strong she was in other aspects other than her Desolate Heaven technique.

Hence, the fifth year's Yao Dao and Yang Qian were now considered the best. People believed that the two of them would replace Qin Haotian and company's position, and they would soon dominate both Heaven and Earth rolls.

As for Yang Haoran, Yang Dingkun and company, although they were outstanding, they were a lot worse than Yao Dao and Yang Qian.

The batches below, the fourth and third year cultivators were even worse.

The third year cultivators only had Li Hong. And he had been defeated by Yi Yun, a person one year younger than him, in the last rookie ranking competition.

This was definitely an embarrassment for the third-year cultivators.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom's yellow-clothed fatty had a general idea of who were the outstanding ones amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators before the birthday banquet began.

Hence, once he entered, he only paid attention to Yao Dao and Yang Qian.

Sensing the yellow-clothed fatty's brazen gaze of sizing them up, Yang Qian's frowned. "This fatty wants to fight!"

Yang Qian was a proud person and he had a bad temper. Feeling the yellow-clothed fatty's animosity, he was enraged.

"This fatty is not simple. He is looking at your strength. His gaze is indeed irritating, as if it is the gaze of a businessman checking out his goods."

Beside Yang Qian, Yao Dao said that calmly. His hand could not help but touch the short saber by the side of his body.

"Yang Qian, there might be some impromptu performances for the City Lord's birthday banquet. It will be the moment for all the young elites from the various factions to compete against each other. Now with Senior Qin gone, those who can handle this scene are probably the two of us. Hence, this fatty is sizing you up!"

Yao Dao quickly guessed the fatty's intentions.

Yang Qian grunted, "I see. That's also good!"

Yang Qian was not afraid of a challenge. Battling against others amongst the younger generation was all he could wish for. He especially looked forward to sparring with young elites from outside of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!

At that moment, the Splendid Room's door opened, and with some attendants guiding them, the important figures from the various factions arrived.

Amongst them were the two leaders, one of them was a stout man wearing a heavy fur cloak and bone-laced military boots. He was the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Seven Star Pagoda Owner.

And the other person was a middle-aged man in a green gown. He looked happy, but his sword-like eyebrows revealed an extremely sharp aura.

This person did not seem to give any sense of oppression. In fact, he looked like a scholar from the mortal world. He seemed to read the books of sages, but was thoroughly weak.

He was Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord!

Chapter 307: Shepherd Boy

Seeing the middle-aged scholar appear, many of the young men and women in the Tai Ah Divine City pavilions held their breaths.

Wen Yu, Chu Xiaoran, Qiuniu, Yang Qian, Yao Dao... Even the most arrogant geniuses became extremely respectful while facing the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord as they all had a deep sense of reverence for him.

This was the first time they met the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. Not only them, not even Qin Haotian or Li Xiao had ever managed to see the City Lord in the past.

As the middle-aged scholar, Seven Star Pagoda Owner and the important figures from various large factions entered, all the young elites in the pavilions stood up.

Seeing these legendary figures made them extremely excited and also made them feel a kind of pressure.

They thought that once the important figures were seated, the birthday banquet would begin, but unexpectedly, these people went straight past the "water canal", going straight into one of the side chambers in the Splendid Room.

In the Splendid Room, there were side chambers used for negotiations. The doors to the side chamber closed the moment they entered.

"Eh?"

Seeing the group of important figures disappear into the side chamber, left the juniors hanging and confused.

Wasn't this supposed to be the City Lord's birthday banquet?

The banquet had been laid out, yet these important figures did not take their seats and immediately went into one of the side chambers for negotiations?

At that instant, many of the juniors looked at each other, unsure of what to do.

"What the heck!?"

The yellow-clothed fatty from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was planning to dig in, but without the important figures seated, he could not eat.

"What's the matter..."

The other young elites from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom were also filled with questions. At that moment, the girl in a palace gown calmly said, "Maybe... this negotiation is the main purpose for this birthday banquet..."

...

At that moment, in the side chamber of the Splendid Room, many important figures from the various factions were seated.

The seats were clearly split into three regions.

One region was led by the middle-aged scholar. Behind him were the various factions affiliated with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Another region was led by the Seven Star Pagoda Owner. Behind him were the factions affiliated with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

The last region was the twelve countries alliance from the South.

These twelve countries were smaller than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. However, with the twelve countries in an alliance, they were powerful enough to form a tripartite with the other two Divine Kingdoms.

And between these three regions, there were various reclusive family clans and some scattered smaller countries.

In some sense, they formed the last powerful faction, but they were not united.

This simple negotiation would go according to the clearly

distinguished powers.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom had been rivals for many years. There was constant friction between these two countries, but they never fought because of the constant fear of the Divine Wilderness.

At that moment, the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was sitting in the host's seat, holding a scroll in his hands.

"I am honored by everyone attending my, Yang's birthday banquet. Gathering all of you here is because there is an important thing we need to discuss. I wonder if everyone present has heard the legend of the Shepherd Boy..."

As the middle-aged scholar spoke, he opened up the scroll which contained a picture.

It was a youth, riding on a green cow in the picture. He held a piccolo in his hand and wore a bamboo hat. He dressed simply and looked like a handsome young farmer boy.

"Shepherd Boy?"

Some people frowned, obviously they had never heard this name.

However, there were a few people whose expressions changed the moment they heard the words Shepherd Boy.

"I see. No wonder the City Lord has invited us over. I have heard the legend of the Shepherd Boy. Ten years ago, he appeared in the western regions and stirred up a bloody storm. I never expected him to suddenly appear here..." An elder said with a deep tone.

"Who is the Shepherd Boy?"

Some people frowned as they asked. Everyone present were important figures, so they did not feel good about not knowing something others knew.

"Let me tell you."

The middle-aged scholar lightly threw the Shepherd Boy picture and it flew up to a wall. He then slowly said, "The Shepherd Boy is a mysterious youth. Of course, he just looks young. As for his actual age, I do not know. Shepherd Boy is just a nickname of his. I am unsure of what his real name is."

"The origins of the Shepherd Boy is a mystery. We do not know who he is, but we do know that he is not human."

"Oh!? What?"

A green-clothed elder was alarmed when he heard this. He carefully looked at the painting on the wall. It was clearly a young man, how could he not be human?

"Indeed. The last time the Shepherd Boy appeared, he caused great misery in the western regions. Because, every time he appears, a massive beast horde will accompany him. At first, it will just be small-scaled. Later on, it will become more and more terrifying. There might even be many primordial strains. Some people even suspect that the Shepherd Boy is able to control desolate beasts."

Control desolate beasts?

People were alarmed hearing this. "Could this Shepherd Boy be a desolate beast in human form?" Someone couldn't help but ask.

However, the middle-aged scholar shook his head. "I am afraid not. To date, in the most authoritative ancient records, there has been no records of a desolate beast taking on human form. Of course, we cannot rule out the possibility of a desolate beast cultivating to such an unimaginable realm that it is able to take on a human form."

"Usually, there are beast hordes in the Divine Wilderness, but the scale of them will not be large. And the desolate beasts' intelligence is not high. The beast horde will charge and destroy aimlessly, like loose sand. It can be easily defeated, but... with the Shepherd Boy, it will be different. The beast horde will become very organized and strategic, making it extremely difficult to handle."

"Ten years ago, when the Shepherd Boy first appeared in the western region, he brought a huge disaster to the western regions. Back then, the Shepherd Boy's goal was the ancient family clan in the western regions, the Shentu family clan!"

"The Shentu family clan had an extremely deep heritage, so they were able to withstand that large scale beast horde. However, they suffered great losses!"

"After the Shepherd Boy failed, he conjured up a few beast hordes in several places. Blood flowed like rivers, but these beast hordes were much weaker compared to the one that went against the Shentu family clan. It felt like it was a form of revenge..."

The middle-aged scholar told the story of the Shepherd Boy in a calm tone.

"Shentu family clan?"

When people heard the name of the family clan, many of the important figures present looked at each other. This family clan's heritage was extremely terrifying.

It was much stronger than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

Why did the Shepherd Boy go against a family clan of that power level?

"Everyone, you do not have to worry too much." Seeing the ugly expressions of the principal figures of the various factions, the middle-aged scholar then continued, "The Shentu family clan might have had some feud with the Shepherd Boy, resulting in that

huge battle. As for us, we should not have any crossed paths with him. However, since he has appeared in our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's northern regions, it is still very worrying. And once there is a beast horde, it will not just be the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's matter. Being closely related and having common interests, we all share the same fate, so all of you might be implicated too.

The middle-aged scholar slowly said this as the crowd listened to him with worried expressions. This topic was not something they could ease up on.

"Everyone, the reason for gathering everyone here today is to form an alliance, so that we will be able to combat the possible beast horde."

The middle-aged scholar revealed the main purpose of this birthday banquet.

Everyone had different expressions when they heard this.

Although the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was right about the fact that the surrounding countries would be implicated if there was a beast horde, the appearance of the Shepherd Boy was in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's northern region, not near their countries. So the first one to suffer would be the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in the event of a beast horde.

After all, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had to be destroyed first before it became their turn.

In fact, this beast horde might not be too large in scale and might not even be able to destroy the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. If so, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would be able to withstand the beast horde by suffering losses. If that was the case, it would be none of their business.

Also, there was another point. Although the beast horde would cause huge losses of lives, even to the point of sages dying, it was a great opportunity to train up experts with every beast horde. Warriors had to undergo hardship and killing to mature. Besides, after a beast horde, there would be extremely large amounts of resources. For example, the body of a killed primordial strain was full of treasures!

If one could withstand a beast horde, it was also an opportunity to be reborn from the ashes like a phoenix!

The best outcome would be both the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the beast horde suffering great losses. With them joining late in the war, they would reduce the risk of their own sages and geniuses dying, only receiving the benefits...

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was no simple person. How could he not figure out their wishful thinking?

In time, many of the important figures of the various factions were having disparate thoughts.

Facing this possible disaster and the chance of fortuitous

opportunities, everyone had their own plans. Everyone wanted to avoid the risks but reap the benefits.

Unless the Shepherd Boy is able to conjure up a beast horde that really is able to destroy more than ten countries, it will be impossible for the various factions to resist the beast horde without any demands.

At that moment, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Seven Star Pagoda Owner said, "City Lord Yang, you mentioned an alliance. I wonder, who will be taking on the responsibility of the alliance's leader?"

The crowd's attention was instantly attracted the moment the Seven Star Pagoda Owner said this.

The alliance's leader was not just a problem of dignity, it also involved the commanding powers. After the beast horde was over, there would be unspeakable benefits to the person holding the commanding powers.

This was because each war had to do with deaths and injury, losses and also the victory items!

There might be certain wars where various factions would seek to fight, but there were other wars that no one would want to send their own warriors to their deaths.

The middle-aged scholar smiled upon hearing the Seven Star

Pagoda Owner's question. He answered, "There will be no need for a leader for the alliance. All it needs is a council, consisting of all the important figures from the various factions."

"Oh? Council? If the council is in constant debate without a consensus? This is when an alliance leader is necessary!"

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner's tone sounded calm, but it had a hidden sharpness to it!

People knew that the relationship between the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was not friendly.

Now, with core interests involved, how could a battle be avoided?

Chapter 308: Competing For Assembly Seats

According to the original schedule, the City Lord's birthday banquet would have lasted for seven days.

The important figures from the various factions would only attend the first two days. To the juniors, these two days were of extreme importance as it was a stage for them to showcase their skills.

The elites from various large factions were all extremely proud. How could they not flaunt their strength with all of them gathered together?

Under normal circumstances, the demonstrations during the birthday banquet were perfunctory, and there wouldn't be any real fights on stage. It was just for people to show off their specialty skills as a performance to excite the banquet's atmosphere.

Originally, many of the juniors had prepared their performances, such as sparring, swordplay, etc, and they were eager to get into action, hoping to shine during the banquet and win rewards. But they never expected that the mighty figures all entered a negotiation room on the first day. They did not come out even after six hours.

What is the meaning of this?

Many of the juniors were dumbfounded. The food was already cold, yet not a single soul of that negotiation group was seen.

It was only until midnight that the large door to the side chamber opened.

The mighty figures from the various large factions filed out of the side chamber.

Leading the way was the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. He still wore his green gown and he gave off a breezy feeling with his faint smile on his face.

But the sharper people knew that something was amiss. There was a feeling of confrontation amongst the important figures.

Each party from the various factions was seated according to their respective statures. The atmosphere seemed to turn cold.

The middle-aged scholar stood up and raised a glass of wine, "It is my honor that everyone is here to participate in my birthday banquet. Due to a sudden turn of events today, I have neglected all of you. Please forgive me for being a bad host. Seeing that the Sun has set, please feel free to eat. The banquet will temporarily cease tomorrow and it will be held seven days later. This Splendid Room is a bit too small, thus the venue will be the arena! It is much roomier there!"

The City Lord gave a simple opening speech, which seemed like pleasantries, but all the young elites from the various factions were shocked.

The birthday banquet would be held seven days later? This birthday banquet could still be pushed back?

And, this Splendid Room is small...This Splendid Room was hundreds of feet in radius and it could accommodate more than 1000 people easily, how could it be small? And the middle-aged scholar's mentioning of switching to the arena made many juniors present feel a surge of sharpness.

The legendary figures from the various factions did not speak a single word but they clearly silently accepted it. This birthday banquet's atmosphere was sullen as the juniors present felt the solemn atmosphere.

An elite youth from a small faction had specially prepared a swordplay show. After everyone was eating silently for 15 minutes, he could not endure it any further and jumped out, announcing that he was going to provide some entertainment for the birthday banquet.

The legendary figures from the various large factions lacked any interest. Seeing their elders sullen faces, none of the juniors had the mood to cheer, what more, jumping out to spar with the youth.

Due to the awkward atmosphere, the youth decided to stop demonstrating his swordplay in the end.

As a result, no other junior came forward to get snubbed.

The first day's birthday banquet ended in such a depressing atmosphere.

After the birthday banquet ended, there was a meeting of the Tai Ah Divine City Elders.

Jian Ge, Cang Yan, Grandmaster Yuehua and other divine city Elders were looking at the City Lord.

"How is the situation?"

The Elders did not enter the side chamber for the negotiations, so they did not know the results of the negotiations. They only noticed that the birthday banquet's atmosphere was heavy, so they guessed that the result was not optimistic.

"We did not manage to come to a consensus. The main problem is the commanding rights..."

The middle-aged scholar shook his head gently. With so many countries in an alliance, there was indeed a need for a commander to unite them. If they were not united and fought their own battles, then the battle situation would be terrible. One had to know that it was the Shepherd Boy leading the beast horde, and it was a horde that did not fear death.

The final result of a group of timid and disunited troops against a monolithic beast horde was obvious.

On the battlefield, there would be inevitable results of narrow escapes or even everyone dying on the battlefield. As such, whoever had the right of command was able to save their own strength to a certain extent.

No one wanted to be cannon fodder.

"The Seven Star Pagoda Owner wants to be the alliance leader, but I refused. The ten countries from the south wanted more benefits, which I naturally did not agree to. The final condition set forth by the Seven Star Pagoda Owner was to set up an Elder League during the war, and in the form of a legislative assembly, fight for the commanding rights. And exactly how many seats every faction would receive would depend on each country's strength."

"Strength?" Jian Ge frowned. In the world of warriors, strength was king. The bigger one's fist was, the greater one's voice was. This was not to be disputed, but how was one to compete in strength?

"Our strength is on par with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's!" Cang Yan said.

"Yes, in terms of national power, we are almost the same. Besides, there is no way to compare national power. We cannot gather the sages and peak Human Lords from every country to fight a match. Therefore, we will compete with the strength of our juniors. Their Yun Long 72 Pagodas is not much different from our

Tai Ah Divine City. It too gathers all the best juniors of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom."

"If the Yun Long 72 Pagodas is compared with the Tai Ah Divine City, we can indeed see whose juniors are stronger. A generation of juniors is the future of a Divine Kingdom. This form of competition isn't unreasonable."

"The Yun Long 72 Pagodas against the Tai Ah Divine City? City Lord, you agreed to it?"

"Yes!" The middle-aged scholar nodded.

"This..." Cang Yan was worried. "The geniuses of the Tai Ah Divine City are different every year. The last batch that just left the Tai Ah Divine City was filled with experts. Anyone chosen from Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and the Qiao brothers could fight one against ten, but now with them gone, the new crop has yet to come in to replace the old. Who do we choose?"

This rule was clearly disadvantageous against the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Cang Yan knew that the Yun Long Divine Kingdom had come prepared. It was likely that this batch in the Yun Long 72 Pagodas was much stronger than previous years.

For them to go against the Yun Long 72 Pagodas' strong phase while their Tai Ah Divine City was in the weak phase, the outcome was obvious.

The middle-aged scholar said, "You are right. The Seven Star Pagoda Owner knew this and purposely made this request. He is clearly very confident of this Yun Long Divine Kingdom generation."

"As for the ten countries in the south, they have agreed. They have added on a condition for them to have three additional Elder seats. They seem to be very proud of their countries' younger generation." The middle-aged scholar said as the Elders' minds were shrouded in gloom.

They knew that it was a necessary concession for the middle-aged scholar had to agree on.

As the Shepherd Boy had appeared at the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's borders, the ten countries in the south and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom were still a distance away. If a beast horde were to happen, the first one to suffer was the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

They could watch on the sidelines as the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom fought against the beast horde first.

Although as the saying goes "when the lips are lost, the teeth will be exposed to the cold", the ten countries in the south and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom would only feel "cold", while the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would be "lost". The difference was great.

"What are the exact rules? We can't be fighting without anything to reap?" An Elder dressed in a purple shirt said worriedly.

"No, if the younger participants do a good job, we will also win seats, just fewer in numbers."

"And for making it fair, if the difference in ages is too great, then the older one will have to suppress their cultivation level. Even so, the older one would still hold an advantage. As suppressing one's cultivation level is extremely limited. It is just for show as the insight into laws and Aspect Totems will not be suppressed."

"The number of seats in the end will be decided according to the overall performance. In the end, just being first will obtain a once-off 10 seats."

The middle-aged scholar simply introduced the rules. Cang Yan was extremely pissed hearing this as these rules were beneficial to the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

The current Tai Ah Divine City's achilles' heel was that it lacked strong young adult cultivators.

They were not lacking in teenager experts.

But under these rules, it was impossible for a thirteen-fourteen year-old teenager to beat a seventeen-eighteen year-old young adult.

Hence, the final grand prize would have to be given up.

"Jian Ge, you have been the one in charge of the Tai Ah Divine City these days. Make a list of participants." The middle-aged scholar ordered. "You should know who is most suitable to compete."

The participant list not only needed to take into consideration the Earth roll ranking, but also the age. Even the sixth year cultivators, who were ranked in the top 30 of the Earth roll, could not compete as they were too weak.

But as for Wen Yu and Lu Jie, these rookie experts who were only ranked 3000-4000 on the Earth roll could take part in the competition.

Jian Ge said, "Yi Yun, Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu are all the best experts. With them, the fourteen-year-old bracket is definitely to our advantage. But there is a lack of fifth and sixth year cultivators. There is only a girl named Luo Huo'er. Her origins are a mystery, and she has never participated in the Earth or Heaven roll tussle, so we do not know how strong she is!"

The strength of Luo Huo'er, who was ranked first on the Man ranking, had always been a mystery. Now, Jian Ge could only rest his hopes on Luo Huo'er to give a pleasant surprise.

Chapter 309: Yi Yun Coming Out Of Reclusive Training

The news regarding the alliance of the various large factions against the beast horde and the competition for assembly seats quickly spread. The young disciples of the various large factions were also made aware of this information.

They finally knew why the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord had organized a birthday banquet and why it was suddenly stopped midway.

The birthday banquet was only an excuse. The real reason was to negotiate an alliance. Initially, this reason was kept confidential, which was why the lie of a birthday banquet was needed.

The matter of competing for seats was of grave importance. Every faction began making their preparations.

"The few of you are the best young people from our Bai Yue mountain family clan. I do not expect you to become the champion of this alliance ranking competition, nor do I even ask you to enter the top 10. As long as anyone of you can win our Bai Yue mountain family clan one seat, then the next Patriarch candidate will be mostly determined!"

Somewhere in the central divine tower, a middle-aged man said to a few young boys and girls in front of him.

The Bai Yue mountain family clan was a reclusive family clan that had its roots in the Bai Yue mountains. It did not belong to any of the three large factions, nor did it have any sages. The head of the house was a peak-Human Lord. If they were to develop according to a prescribed order, it would be very difficult for them to grow.

However, opportunities arise in troubled times!

First, they had to compete for a seat. This was the first step in allowing their family clan to grow.

With this critical one vote, the Bai Yue mountain family clan would be valued by the other factions. During a key moment, people would try to win them over by laying enough chips on the table.

While in another residence in the central divine tower, the fur-cloaked Seven Star Pagoda Owner was looking at the young elites of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom in front of him.

"You are the Yun Long 72 Pagodas's strongest batch in the past 100 years! I suggested the rule of competing in an alliance ranking competition! I dared to suggest it because I have confidence in all of you!"

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner towered from above as he looked at the young boys and girls before him. The shadow behind him seemed to rise infinitely high, giving others great pressure.

"Since the rules were suggested by me, if anyone of you were to perform badly, then I will be the laughing stock of the South's ten countries and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Even the old rivals in our country will mock me!"

"Now, I have nothing much to say to you. I only wish for you to gain at least half the seats in the alliance ranking competition in seven days! That is the bottom line! In fact, only by obtaining 60% of the seats would I be satisfied!"

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner's voice was shocking. The youths of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom half-kneeled with a hand across their chest, "Yes! Pagoda Owner!"

Amongst the crowd, a pale black-clothed youth wrapped a bandage around his hand.

"The alliance ranking competition...I will not be limited by it. Let this beast horde be the first test in my martial life..." The black-clothed youth said this silently in his mind. A cold beam flashed in his eyes.

...

The seven days of preparation was sufficient. There were even some countries who brought the young elites from their country using super long-distance teleportation arrays, so as to join the competition.

As for the Tai Ah Divine City, it also gave out its own rewards.

This large competition was no longer a matter of glory points. The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord announced personally that whoever were to obtain first place in the alliance ranking competition would be free to use any resources while training in the Tai Ah Divine City. They would also be conferred the title of Count, given a hundred cities as their fiefdom, and enjoy the privileges of the royal household in the future.

For example, even reading the entire set of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was not a problem.

This reward was pretty exaggerated, but the appearance of the Shepherd Boy was a matter of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's survival. Giving out rewards like this was understandable.

Of course, to obtain first place in the alliance ranking competition was too difficult for the Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators.

Even the leader figures of the current Tai Ah Divine City, Yao Dao and Yang Qian were experiencing heavy pressure at that moment!

The two of them were old rivals the moment they entered the Tai Ah Divine City. At that moment, they were sitting across each other in a loft.

"You and I have been at odds for four years. Now, we will need to fight hand in hand."

Yang Qian took a deep breath. He was of royalty, so for this matter that involved the country's and his own fate, he had to put in greater effort.

If he could obtain first place in the alliance ranking competition, he could be made a king for sure, even though it was impossible for him to be made Crown Prince.

"I am looking forward to fighting the young elites of the other countries on the same stage." Yao Dao said as he gently wiped his long saber, as his eyes burned with fighting spirit.

At the moment everyone received this piece of information, Luo Huo'er received an invitation to fight.

Luo Huo'er's small face frowned as she faced the invitation.

"Alliance ranking competition..." Luo Huo'er muttered to herself as if she was in a dilemma.

"Miss, why don't you represent the Tai Ah Divine City to fight and beat them all up badly?"

Beside Luo Huo'er was a very excited maidservant, Dong'er, who exclaimed this while waving her small fists, making movements as if she was fighting against an opponent.

Dong'er had often heard Luo Huo'er bragging about how strong she was, such as tearing a king-grade desolate beast with her bare hands, destroying experts from all sorts of places, and so on.

When she mentioned of her 'glorious past', Luo Huo'er would often add one more line at the end, "This is nothing to me, piece of cake!"

To Dong'er, with her mistress' 'tearing a king-grade desolate beast with her bare hands' powers', she was sure to wipe the floor of all the geniuses from various countries!

As her mistress liked to join in the hubbub and with her show-off nature, it was natural that she would not miss out on this opportunity.

But Dong'er never expected what happened next. After Luo Huo'er seemed to appear to have some intentions, but upon recalling something, she said, "I can't be bothered fighting this bunch of trash! It will only reduce my stature!"

"Uh..." Dong'er choked.

Many times, just before Luo Huo'er fought, she would use various kinds of excuses. "Reducing my stature fighting them" was Luo Huo'er's most common excuse.

"Ai, forget it. I won't bother with the likes of them. Training the

Desolate Heaven technique everyday is also boring, but, so be it." Luo Huo'er stretched her back, revealing her great body, "I'm going to sleep. Don't bother me if there's nothing."

"Miss, why?" Dong'er quickly followed as her eyeballs rolled around, as if she had seen something on Luo Huo'er's face.

The Tai Ah Divine City's Heaven and Earth rolls did not have Luo Huo'er's name on them. She only held first place of the Man roll of honors.

It was really weird that her mistress would not show herself off, considering her ability to tear a king-grade desolate beast apart with her bare hands.

Dong'er was anxious but Luo Huo'er appeared to have absolute zero interest. She yawned and ignored Dong'er, as she went back to her room.

Sitting on her bed, Luo Huo'er sat there quietly and lazily. After that, she unbuttoned her clothes gently and took out a talisman charm that hung on her neck, it was a protective charm. She touched the protective charm as she went into a daze.

"Daddy, when will you bring me back? It's too boring here."

"In this sensitive period, if those whatever City Lords or Pagoda Owners discover my identity, they would treat me as a spy and chop me up."

"Ai, what a bother! It's so troubling that I have been suffering from insomnia recently..."

Luo Huo'er grabbed her protective charm, pressing it to her chest as she laid back on the soft bed. Her hair spread out covered the whole bed like a blooming black rose.

Not long after, Luo Huo'er's calm breathing was heard in the room.

...

The days passed one by one. During the seven days preparation time, the South's ten countries transferred people from their country over for the alliance ranking competition.

There were more and more elites gathered in the Tai Ah Divine City.

These proud children of heaven were all extremely arrogant. With the rivalry between the factions they belonged to, how could they live in peace together?

Not long after, all sorts of friction exploded all around the Tai Ah Divine City.

Usually a small matter would escalate, causing the parties

involved to make an appointment to fight it out in the arena.

There was always a winning and losing party in a fighting match. If one accidentally attacked too heavily, causing the other to be injured, the hostility would worsen.

Later, there would be people standing up for the injured party, resulting in another battle in the arena.

As such, before the alliance ranking competition even began, there were many fights. Many people were injured and the situation became even more testy!

Soon, the moment the elites from the various large faction met, it would be as if they were as incompatible as fire and water. It was just short of an all-out fight amongst the masses.

The Tai Ah Divine City's people had the most casualties.

The main reason was that the people from the other factions were elites amongst the elites, while the Tai Ah Divine City had many ordinary disciples. The result was obvious for an ordinary disciple clashing with an elite.

The situation was nearly going out of control.

"This kid, why isn't he coming out yet!? He sure makes one worry!"

Tomorrow would be the alliance battle. Cang Yan had been standing outside the sword tomb, tempted to open the door to the sword tomb a few times. However, he was afraid of interrupting Yi Yun's cultivation midway, just as he was about to gain some important insight, by entering.

"In another four hours, I'll go in if the kid still doesn't come out. F**k, this kid has gone in there for so many days. It's nearly burning down outside, while he has it good. I don't even know if he has fallen asleep inside there. What the heck is he doing going in there for 8-9 days!?"

If Yi Yun were to enter the saber tomb or if he were to go into reclusive training to ponder over things such as the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' or totem mystic technique, it would be fine.

But what most exasperating was that he had entered the sword tomb to learn about swords.

Isn't he crazy for a saber user to learn swords!?

If not for Yi Yun giving Cang Yan miracles a time or two, Cang Yan would have long washed his hands of the matter.

Cang Yan placed an hourglass by the sword tomb's entrance. Once the sand finished flowing, he would call Yi Yun out. As tomorrow was the big battle, he needed Yi Yun to have a good night's rest, so that he would be in an optimal state.

Just as the sand flowed down about halfway, the sword tomb began rumbling as it opened by itself.

"This kid can actually open the tomb's door himself..."

Cang Yan was thinking about this just as he saw Yi Yun appear by the stone door's entrance...

Chapter 310: Venomous Snake

The white gown that Yi Yun had changed into before entering the sword tomb was now tattered.

The gown was not dirty, but it seemed to have been cut by a sword's blade. Cut after cut made it look like rags.

Yi Yun's long hair was hanging loose while his face seemed to exude a faint smile. His eyes were bright they shone in the dark sword tomb as if they were stars in the sky, which gave a strange feeling.

It seemed the Yi Yun, who entered the sword tomb entered 9 days ago, was now different once again.

This difference was not easily described. It seemed like there was a change in his disposition as if a sword Qi had merged right into his bones, making it as if Yi Yun himself was a sword.

"Kid, you finally came out!" Cang Yan said disgruntledly.

"Uh...I was too immersed and lost track of time. How long have I been in there?"

"It has nearly been nine days. Kid, you really are planning on learning the sword?"

Cang Yan looked inquisitively at Yi Yun and he was wondering how much sword comprehension Yi Yun had gained in the past few days. But to Cang Yan, even if Yi Yun had gained some insight into a few sword moves, it was useless. A saber could do the same amount of damage as a sword could do, so there was no point learning both the sword and saber. It was a really pointless endeavor.

Yi Yun did not want to continue on this topic and he interrupted, "Senior Cang Yan, you previously said that you will let me challenge the Earth roll and as long as I get to the top 300, I can carry on cultivating the way of the sword and the 'Myriad Beast Totem'?"

Yi Yun indeed had plans to challenge the Earth roll. The people at the top of the Earth roll would receive dragon scale runes rewards monthly.

Cang Yan rolled his eyes at Yi Yun and sighed, "You sure have lots to challenge now. Alas, you still may not know that our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is on the brink of destruction..."

Cang Yan carried on by describing the situation of the Shepherd Boy to Yi Yun.

Yi Yun was stunned when he heard this.

Shepherd Boy?

Cang Yan's description of the Shepherd Boy's appearance made Yi Yun recall the mysterious youth he met at the blackwater swamp back when he went out into the Divine Wilderness for training.

The youth was riding a cow and he was blowing a piccolo. The piccolo's sound seemed to contain a magical power that would affect one's state of mind.

This mysterious youth traversed the Divine Wilderness and the blackwater swamp, yet all the desolate beasts seemed to turn a blind eye. It was a leisure stroll to him in the Divine Wilderness as if he was entering and exiting a flower garden.

This youth, who looked amiable and even seemed to be likable, had actually stirred up a bloody storm in the western regions, killing countless people, and nearly destroyed the extremely powerful Shentu family clan?

Yi Yun was extremely shocked. Hearing Cang Yan's description, the Shentu family clan was stronger than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

A family clan was stronger than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom...

What sort of family clan was this?

And where were these so-called "western regions"?

Yi Yun sighed silently. Having come to this world, it seemed like he had some form of results, but compared to all those massive behemoths, he was still small.

Of course, this was not something he should think about now. He had to think about the big battle tomorrow.

Yi Yun was indebted to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. All his cultivation resources and cultivation techniques were mostly provided by the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Yi Yun was a grateful person, so with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom facing a major crisis, he naturally would help as much as he could!

"Senior Cang Yan, does the Tai Ah Divine City have an armory? I want to choose a sword and a saber, to handle tomorrow's big battle."

Yi Yun's Thousand Army Saber could no longer be used, and the broken sword he obtained from the Pure Yang Sword Palace was of great importance, so he could not use it unless his life was in danger. It was best to choose a sword and a saber in the Tai Ah Divine City.

The Tai Ah Divine City's armory's swords and sabers would definitely be better in quality than the Jin Long Wei armory's.

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun's harmless-looking smile and his heart thumped. He snapped, "Rotten kid, you are trying to take

advantage of old me once again. You can choose some weapons, but it will only be a loan. If you were to win tomorrow's big battle, the weapons will be yours. If you don't win, hehe, it will be charged accordingly! Don't try grabbing my stuff just because of the big battle ahead."

Yi Yun grinned, "Okay!"

That night, elites from all over were gathered in the Tai Ah Divine City. They were saving their strength and adjusting their conditions, in preparation for the battle tomorrow.

However, while everyone was trying to condition themselves, in a corner of the Divine City, there were a few people who took advantage of the dark and gathered in a small courtyard.

"It's this person?"

Despite the night being dark, some warriors could still easily see in the dark.

At that moment, two men covered in cloaks were holding onto a portrait. On the portrait, there was a youth in linen clothes wielding a saber.

This youth was none other than Yi Yun.

"It's him..." The cloaked man's voice was hoarse, preventing others from recognizing his original voice. "Break his meridians. It

would be best if you made him permanently disabled. If you can do that, we will give you great rewards."

As the cloaked man said, he flipped his hands and a black bag appeared in his hands. "This is the down payment."

"Ah!" A youth with a venomous serpent around his body took over a little black bag.

This youth was lanky and his ears were full of skull earrings. His face and body were covered in tattoos, which made him look extremely odd.

The youth's pupils were also amber in color and oval like a snake. Whenever he smiled, sharp teeth would appear in the corners of his mouth, giving a chilly feeling.

Standing beside the youth with the snake, there was a yellow-clad fat person. He noted with interest as he stroked his chin and reached into the black bag.

Shiny objects rolled out. They were like gemstones that glowed in the night.

They were all desolate bone relics!

"Top grade desolate bone relics!"

The yellow-clad fatty licked his lips, "Interesting. I am very curious about your identities. You guys cannot be people from our Yun Long Divine Kingdom. Could it be that you are from the same faction as this Yi Yun? Tsk, he sure is unpopular, to the point that even people from his own faction would buy a rival faction's people to maim him..."

"Don't worry about us." The two cloaked men's voice turned cold, going on high alert.

If this deal they struck was found out by the Tai Ah Divine City's upper echelons, there was a high possibility of them being crippled of their cultivation levels or even the death sentence.

"I warn you, this Yi Yun is not easy to deal with. Take care not to fail miserably at an easy task!" One of the cloaked men said.

"Hehe...do not think that we from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom are at the same level as your Tai Ah Divine Kingdom trash. He is just a kid that did not even enter the top 1000 amongst you people a year ago." The snake youth laughed sinisterly and kept the desolate bone relics.

"You..."

When one of the cloaked men heard the snake youth's arrogant mocking, he clenched his fists, almost to the point of getting to blows. However, he was stopped by the other.

"Then, we will rely on the two of you." That cloaked man said.

"Ha! This anger means that you are indeed people from the Tai Ah Divine City. Don't worry, I, Viper, am best at making vicious blows. I'll take on this business!"

In this competitive battle, death or disability was not uncommon. After all, in a duel with real sabers and swords, many of the moves were made with full strength!

Even in the internal battles of the Tai Ah Divine City, even when people tried their best to avoid a death battle, there would still be deaths in the arena.

In this battle against rival factions, the battles would be even more intense and more brutal.

"It's a deal!" The two cloaked men left silently.

The yellow-clad fatty was chewing on a bamboo stick as he picked his teeth, "These Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators sure are terrible. With a foreign enemy in front of them, they are still having their internal fights!"

"Hehe, jealousy and hatred are terrifying forces. They can cause a person to go mad, making them do things without considering the consequences. But this is for the best.

"Of course, it's up to you." The yellow-clad fatty did not mind.

"But who are these two people? They sure are cunning. They even disguised their voices." The snake man said.

"Hehe! One of them is one-armed. He thought that he had disguised himself well, but that fake limb did not have any Yuan Qi fluctuations, so how could that trick me? The Tai Ah Divine City may have many cultivators, but there are only a few of them with one arm. It would be definitely easy to find him."

As the fatty said, his lips curled into a sinister smile...

...

The next morning, the sky lit up and early winter snow fluttered above the Tai Ah Divine City. People from all over began to gather in the arena to participate in the City Lord's birthday banquet and also, the alliance competition.

The arena had been cleared up and tables for ten were placed all over the arena.

At the seats of honor, there were small tables prepared for the various large faction's legendary figures.

Fine wine and delicacies were placed on the tables. The scale of the birthday banquet was more than ten times better than the one seven days ago.

However, the arena had an additional deathly aura to it that lacked the elegance of the Splendid Room. Even the cutlery was made of black iron. They gave off a chilling feeling as if this was not a birthday banquet.

A special array was set up in the Divine Wilderness Stage in the middle. No matter how violent the battles were on the Divine Wilderness Stage, it would not affect the surrounding birthday banquet one bit.

But at that moment, many of the young elites present were not at ease enough to eat.

Of course, there were exceptions.

On the Yun Long Divine Kingdom side, there was a yellow-clad fatty who was grabbing roasted meat and tucking in, disregarding the fact that the birthday banquet had not officially begun.

Since all ties had nearly been broken, there was no point maintaining etiquette. Besides, how was he going to go on stage to fight if he did not have his fill?

Sitting beside the yellow-clad fatty was a lanky tattooed youth. A venomous snake was wrapped around his body. His eyes were like that of a serpent while he was in search of his prey.

Only when he noticed a youth in linen clothes walk into the arena did he faintly smile, with pick-like sharp teeth appearing at

the ends of his mouth.

"Tsk, the prey is here. He sure is fresh and delicious."

As he said this, the fatty beside him raised his head and looked at Yi Yun.

"Eh! Indeed. Poor child, he still doesn't know that his own company has stabbed him in the back, hahaha!" The fatty laughed without control as his mouth was covered in oil.

While walking in the crowd, Yi Yun's eyebrows wrinkled. He felt that people were staring at him.

He did not need to turn his head. Just by opening his energy vision, he could lock on to the yellow-clad fatty and the snake youth in an instant.

"Oh? I don't know these two people. What are they staring at me for?"

Yi Yun subconsciously touched his interspatial ring, and in it were the weapons that Yi Yun had chosen yesterday!

Chapter 311: Leader

"What is the matter, Yi Yun?" Seeing Yi Yun stop for a while, Chu Xiaoran asked.

"No matter, it's just that some people are focusing on me." Yi Yun said without much thought to it.

"Focusing on you is understandable. The people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom probably know about your performance at last year's rookie ranking competition."

The main opponent of the Tai Ah Divine City was the Yun Long Kingdom's 72 Pagodas. As for the Southern 10 countries, they were mainly facing off against the other smaller factions.

Yi Yun and Chu Xiaoran walked to their seats and sat down. All the relevant Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators were gathered together, filling four large tables.

And Elder Cang Yan was sitting amongst them.

Yi Yun glanced at the people around the tables and he noticed Wen Yu, Qiuniu, Yang Qian and Yao Dao...

There were also Yi Yun's rivals, Li Hong, Yang Dingkun and Yang Haoran.

Yang Haoran may have lost an arm, but his strength was still ranked near the top of the the Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators, so he was naturally selected.

But Yi Yun did not see Luo Huo'er...

"Oh? Luo Huo'er did not come?" From Yi Yun's point of view, with Luo Huo'er's absolute talent in the Desolate Heaven technique, her strength should not be too bad.

"Luo Huo'er said that she lacks talent in fighting, so she would not embarrass herself for the Tai Ah Divine City." Someone in the know said by the side.

Yi Yun was shocked when he heard this. Were these words that a girl like Luo Huo'er would say?

Yi Yun did not have time to think too carefully about it before Cang Yan started speaking at that moment, "Everyone listen up. I will be mentioning the rules of the big battle ahead."

"All the people fighting in our battle with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom will be split into eight groups. There will be four groups for those below the age of fifteen, and another four groups for those above the age of fifteen. A leader will be chosen for each group, while the remaining group members are forerunners."

"Each group's leader will hold on to two seats. Once the leader is defeated, the seats will be taken! Therefore, the leader's position is

of utmost importance. As for the forerunners... their main role is to protect the leader. They are to take on challenges for the leader or used to probe the opponents' strength."

"Everyone can only fail once. Once defeated, they will not be able to fight again."

"Besides defeating the opponent's leader and obtaining the seats, if you obtain first place in the under-fifteen groups, above-fifteen groups, and the overall group by defeating all opponents, then we will obtain additional seats!" Cang Yan finishing explaining the rules in a few words. Everyone could tell that only the leader could easily make meritorious contributions.

The others, although called "forerunners" euphemistically, they were, in actual fact, cannon fodder or stones used to scout ahead.

"First, I will announce the people who are leaders!" Cang Yan took out a scroll while the young elites present held their breaths.

The matches ahead meant a lot to them. It was far greater importance than challenging the Heaven or Earth rolls of honor.

"For the under-fifteen groups, the leaders are, Chu Xiaoran! Qiuniu! Yi Yun! And Li Hong!"

Cang Yan paused briefly after mentioning each name. When Yi Yun's name was mentioned, Yang Haoran clenched his fist. That kid was made a leader!

Although he hated Yi Yun, he knew that Yi Yun becoming a leader was a reasonable decision.

Amongst the four leaders, Li Hong was the weakest. But they really had no one else to choose from. They could not get Wen Yu or Lu Jie to be leaders.

Li Hong was after all, the best person amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's third year cultivators.

"Next will the above-fifteen groups' leaders, Yao Dao! Hua Yue! Fang Hai! And Yang Haoran!"

When Cang Yan announced the four leaders' names, everyone was shocked. What was going on?

Yang Qian's strength was just slightly inferior to Yao Dao and he was outstanding in the Earth roll of honor. It was surprising that he was not made a leader.

What was the reason behind Hua Yue, Fang Hai and Yang Haoran?

"I'm a leader, haha, I'm also a leader!" Yang Haoran was ecstatic. He felt that if he had not lost his arm, it would have been no problem becoming a leader. But after he lost an arm, it was impossible to become a leader.

Now, Cang Yan had chosen Yang Haoran to be a leader, allowing him, who felt gloom in his life, to finally gain some spirit.

As everyone was still trying to understand the reasoning behind the leader selection, Cang Yan took out another bunch of scrolls, "The leaders have been decided. Now, I will announce each group's forerunners..."

After Yang Haoran took his subordinate name list, he was dumbfounded.

There was no other reason. The people on his list were weaker than any of the other groups'!

They were practically people with average talent and they only managed to enter the top 30-40 of the Earth roll of honor with difficulty due to their age advantage.

These people were in other words, cannon fodder!

He, as a leader, was leading a group of cannon fodder?

Then wasn't he also cannon fodder?

After Yang Haoran looked at the other name lists, he realized that the strongest people amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's above-fifteen cultivators such as Yang Qian were all in Yao Dao's group.

The other groups were all given cannon fodder. And even though they were considered cannon fodder, the cannon fodder given to him were the worst!

He suddenly realized that he had been given up.

The upper echelons of the Tai Ah Divine City had placed all their bets on Yao Dao's group. Yang Qian and company may not have obtained the position of leaders, but they were able to guarantee Yao Dao's group a victory.

As for the rest, due to the rules, they were only here to make up the numbers...

"Actually treating me like cannon fodder!"

Yang Haoran clenched his fist, as the veins on his forehead went taut. The hate for Yi Yun became stronger after receiving this name list. If it wasn't for his missing arm, how could he have ended up as cannon fodder!?

He swallowed his anger because with Cang Yan here, he didn't dare show it. He was only hoping that the two people he found the other day would be able to cripple Yi Yun or even kill him.

While at that moment, Yi Yun had also obtained the name list of his group. The four forerunners were all first year cultivators. Besides Wen Yu being not that bad, the rest were only there to make up the numbers.

Cang Yan had purposely placed the stronger people under the age of fifteen with Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran, strengthening their group's strength.

As for Li Hong, his group's strength was also not that great, it was on par with Yi Yun's. Clearly, it was another of those groups that had been given up.

As for why the slight stronger ones were placed in Li Hong's group, it was probably due to the Tai Ah Divine City's upper echelons fear of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom using similar tactics. If they were all cannon fodder, then if their own cannon fodder was too weak, losing to the opponent's average weak cannon fodder would be a huge waste.

In general, the upper echelons of the Tai Ah Divine City were confident in the under-fifteen groups, so they hoped that they would win more seats this way.

As for the above-fifteen groups, they only wished for one group to win. As for the other groups, they were completely given up on them without a second thought.

Li Hong felt gloomy seeing the names he had. He looked at Yi Yun's name list and his subordinates were not that great either.

But Li Hong did not gain any satisfaction from that. He had guessed the intentions of the Tai Ah Divine City's upper echelons. They probably trusted Yi Yun, so they sent weaker forerunners to

Yi Yun, hoping that Yi Yun could turn the tide just by himself.

Li Hong gritted his teeth. "Those old fools sure look down on people! To treat us as cannon fodder and let Yi Yun be the hero. Heh! It's not so easy to be a hero!"

Li Hong looked at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side.

There, the snake youth was discussing something with people and looked to be talking jovially.

Seeing the calm snake youth, Li Hong insidiously laughed twice. "The Tai Ah Divine City's arrangements suit my wishes. Now my plan will be even easier to be carried out. Yi Yun, just you wait..."

After the groups were formed, the birthday banquet began.

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was dressed in a blue shirt and he was seated beside the Seven Star Pagoda Owner in the seats of honor. He looked with a smile at the youths from the various factions.

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner was already informed of the Tai Ah Divine City's grouping methods and laughed, saying, "City Lord Yang sure has a strong nerve. You can still smile so naturally even at that moment."

"Same to you." The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord responded.

"It seems City Lord Yang has gathered all the experts in one group. This method sure is clever."

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner's words sounded like praise, but it was clearly mocking the City Lord.

This tactic was not considered honorable.

The City Lord faintly smiled as if he never heard the Seven Star Pagoda Owner's mockery, and simply went with the flow by saying, "Thank you for your compliments. Everything is for victory, so there has to be some strategy in the assignment of troops."

"Unfortunately, against absolute power, any strategy is useless." The Seven Star Pagoda Owner's smile turned cold. "You will see my Yun Long 72 Pagodas' disciples sweeping the arena."

"Oh? Then I look forward to that!"

...

The atmosphere in the arena was all set for a showdown. The birthday banquet only had some symbolic dishes. Not many people actually used their chopsticks as all their thoughts were on the alliance competition.

Yi Yun took his group's four people to sit on the participant's benches.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom's people were sitting next to them.

At that moment, a youth whose body was filled with tattoos and had a snake wrapped around him walked towards Yi Yun.

"Yi Yun, right!? You are the leader, and so am I. This will be fun. I will be taking the 2 seats you have!"

Both sides could freely challenge each other in the match. The decision to accept the match was decided by the leaders from both sides.

If there was no agreement, then the opponents would be decided by drawing lots.

Yi Yun had already expected that the snake youth would challenge him, as for who to fight, he did not care.

Since someone had challenged him, he accepted it.

"Oh? Then let's see if you have the ability to take it over!"

When Yi Yun said this, Wen Yu, who was behind him, jumped up. Her expression looked bitter. You sure accepted the challenge

too easily!

"That...Senior Yi, do you know who that is?"

As they were to fight in an alliance battle, people like Wen Yu had long did their preparatory work. They had sought information on their opponents.

This tattooed youth was nicknamed Viper. He was ruthless and very strong.

He had just reached the age of fifteen and his cultivation level had broken through to the Yuan Foundation realm. He was one of the toughest guys under the age of fifteen from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

Wen Yu did not want to fight a sinister-like person like him as she felt that in front of him, she was like a mouse in front of a venomous snake. But her leader had agreed immediately to Viper's challenge.

This made Wen Yu sad enough that she couldn't shed tears.

Chapter 312: Humiliation

"You are asking about the guy whose body is full of tattoos?"

Yi Yun glanced at Wen Yu who was half a year younger than him. She looked a little weak, and since Yi Yun had little contact with her, he had the impression that she was just a very quiet girl.

Wen Yu nodded as she stared on with her watery, dark eyes. She looked at Yi Yun with hope, "Yes, Senior Yi, his name is Viper. You must have looked up his information before the battle, right?"

The opponent was just too terrifying, so she could now only hope that Yi Yun was stronger, even by just a bit. She was really hoping that Yi Yun had carefully researched their opponents, and that he only took on Viper's challenge because he had confidence in winning against him.

After all, Yi Yun was rumored to be the strongest person amongst the second year cultivators, at least a year ago. With such a halo around him, he should be reliable, right...?

Wen Yu thoughts were like this, but clearly Yi Yun was unaware of them. He shook his head, "Viper? Never heard of him. Is he famous?"

Yi Yun was not being arrogant. He had just been informed of the alliance competition the night before. Although Cang Yan had given Yi Yun some information, Yi Yun had only paid attention to the strongest people from the Yun Long 72 Pagodas.

There were a few people that Yi Yun really needed to pay attention to, or even be alert against!

As for Viper, he was clearly not within the circle that Yi Yun chose to pay close attention to.

Upon hearing Yi Yun's response, Wen Yu became dumbfounded. He accepted the challenge without even knowing anything about the other party?

She really felt speechless. She was together with Yi Yun in this match, and was there to shield Yi Yun from the challenges from others. As he was the leader, Yi Yun had the final say in who were the first and the last to go on stage.

As a leader, Yi Yun was crucial. Yet, he had not done any research on his opponent's information, and accepted an opponent's challenge casually, without even knowing how strong he was.

This way of doing things made Wen Yu sad to the point where she couldn't even shed tears.

She opened her mouth, but the words she wanted to say would not come out. She had an extremely ominous feeling...

She turned over to look at Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu's groups. These two groups were having their own small meetings, discussing the choice of opponents.

As for Li Hong, this group that had practically already been given up, were choosing their opponents very carefully.

As Li Hong could not come to a consensus with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom in the choice of opponents, it had to be decided by drawing lots eventually.

Only on her side was it decided in a second by Yi Yun.

At that moment, Yi Yun, the leader who was supposed to be facing a mortal enemy, was closing his eyes while sitting at the participant benches. From the looks of it, it was good that he was not sitting at the birthday banquet's feast tables, or he would probably have begun eating.

Encountering this situation, Wen Yu felt as if her heart was being trampled by 10,000 near-horned beasts with mud-stained hoofs.

At that moment, the three juniors beside Wen Yu gathered over and apprehensively asked, "Senior Wen, Senior Yi should be very strong, correct...?"

These three juniors were in the same group as Yi Yun.

They were weaker than Wen Yu and were there just to make the numbers. They knew where they stood, so they were especially nervous with such a looming huge battle.

Wen Yu bitterly smiled. She could not impact the original tiny confidence these few juniors had. She bit the bullet and said, "Senior Yi should not be too bad. After all, he was the last rookie competition's champion. Juniors, do not worry. Let us do our best later."

After Wen Yu said this the three juniors seemed to ease up a little. They were however still lacking confidence needed to face the Yun Long Divine Kingdom opponents.

"Ah! Kid, you sure are confident!"

While Yi Yun was meditating, he heard a wretched voice transmission. Without even looking, he knew that it was Cang Yan, that unscrupulous old man.

"It is Senior Cang Yan who is confident. To give me such troops is to make me be the vanguard. That is also looking up to me."

"Hehe, do not try to take advantage of me. Do you want to use the pretext of forcing you to do something you are unwilling to do to gain some advantages from me? Don't keep thinking about me. If you fight well, the benefits given by the City Lord will be much more than I am able to give! He's so rich that oil flows out from him."

After saying a few words, Cang Yan became serious again, "Kid, do not think too lightly of your opponents. Your opponent is not weak. This snake kid is a tough person. Do not fail miserably at an easy task!"

"Got it." Yi Yun laughed. He was watching the competition's main referee walk up the Divine Wilderness Stage as he announced the beginning of the competition!

The few smaller group's competitions were held concurrently!

Yi Yun's side was just the younger group, so he could not go onto the Divine Wilderness Stage.

They were sent to the eighth stage.

At that moment, Viper seemed as if he was a cat looking at mice. He looked at Yi Yun with great interest. Indeed, he had the rights to being arrogant. These few batches of Yun Long 72 Pagodas disciples were filled with talents, and the quality of them exceeded those of the past!

And him, Viper, was still as outstanding as ever, even amongst all these experts.

If not for the 72 Pagodas recently having extremely strong batches, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner would never have suggested the condition of letting these juniors decide on the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's future.

"Sun Long, go on up. Take care of those small fish, and force Yi Yun's hand. I will then go on up to have a great time."

Viper laughed and completely did not take Yi Yun to heart. He was one year older than Yi Yun and his cultivation level was an entire realm higher than Yi Yun's, how could he lose?

"Haha! My hands have been itching for a long time. I can finally see blood once again. Who knows, maybe I will even get rid of Yi Yun!"

Sun Long put on his black iron claws and jumped up on stage. He was one of the backbones of the Viper clan, and usually followed Viper around, so his style was very similar to Viper's!

"Who's my opponent? Come on up!"

Sun Long grinned. He stretched out his tongue and gently licked the blades of his black iron claws. His expression was that of extreme evil.

For warriors, their stance was important. Sun Long's ominous stance made people feel fear just from standing before him.

"Senior Yi, who are we sending up?"

Seeing Sun Long, Wen Yu's heart thumped. It seemed that even Viper's henchmen were not to be trifled with!

This person was filled with murderous intent. He was more terrifying than any other person they had ever seen by a lot!

The cultivators present were mostly children in their teens. Although they were strong, they had not killed many in real battles.

"Up to you all. Pay attention to safety."

Yi Yun exhorted them. He also felt that Sun Long was not a person to be trifled with, but warriors who practiced martial arts would meet enemies in the future that were far more malicious than Sun Long.

These Tai Ah Divine City young seedlings had to go through slaughters to grow up too.

Ignoring other things, just the possible beast horde that might happen soon would be a baptism of blood. Unknown numbers of people would die in it.

It was best to suffer a bit now rather than losing one's life in the future.

However, Yi Yun's orders made Wen Yu angry. What did he mean by "Up to you, pay attention to safety"?

Was this something a leader should say?

"Xiao Zhen, go on up!"

Wen Yu ordered angrily. Since the leader did not care, she had to take over.

Xiao Zhen was a youth of short stature. Hearing Wen Yu's words, he grit his teeth and jumped up onto the stage.

Before Xiao Zhen was Sun Long who was laughing sinisterly. "Tsk, sure is fresh. Let me taste... your blood!"

As Sun Long spoke, his body surged with murderous intent. With his Yuan Qi exploding, the claws on his arms turned blood-red in color. It was as if he had suddenly turned into an evil demon.

"I practice the laws of killing! The more I kill, the more my hands are stained with blood, the stronger I become! I have already forgotten how many people or desolate beasts I have killed up to this day. Even in a tournament, I am afraid that I cannot curb my urge to kill."

Sun Long laughed manically while Xiao Zhen's face turned pale.

He was a young master from a family clan. He had lived a pampered life since he was young. When had he ever encountered such a twisted person his own age before?

Yi Yun who was watching below the stage began to secretly shake his head.

To him, Sun Long was not big a deal, but the difference between his stance and Xiao Zhen's was huge.

This was because Sun Long and Xiao Zhen had different growing experiences. Secondly, the recent Tai Ah Divine City's batches were weaker than those of the past. As a result, when the Divine City's warriors faced the Yun Long 72 Pagodas' warriors, they naturally lacked confidence.

In this situation, even if their strengths were similar, it would be a completely one-sided battle.

Furthermore, Xiao Zhen's strength really was weaker than Sun Long's.

"Three moves!" Sun Long extended three fingers. "In three moves, I will open up the right side of your face! Then I will break your right hand and right leg's tendons! I like to attack my opponent's' right side, tearing their right side to shreds while leaving the left side in a good condition. Isn't that very interesting? Ahahahaha!"

Sun Long was extremely arrogant. After hearing this, Xiao Zhen turned angry. Did he think I am a weak and soft lamb to be slaughtered?

"This is going too far!"

Wen Yu clenched her small fist as her face filled with anger.

At that moment, Sun Long moved. He was extremely fast and appeared right before Xiao Zhen in an instant. He swiped at the right side of Xiao Zhen's face with a claw!

Xiao Zhen was greatly alarmed, but he was after all one of the best amongst this batch of rookies. Although his stance was weaker at the beginning of the battle, he was able to reveal his real strength due to his anger.

How could he let this opponent hit him wherever he liked? It was too shameful!

He retreated and at the same time stabbed his sword at Sun Long's palm.

A claw was considered a short-range weapon and was shorter than a sword. The longer it was, the stronger it was. Xiao Zhen believed that by stabbing like this, his opponent would either pull back his hand or his palm would be pierced right through by his sword!

However, as Xiao Zhen was stabbing, a grin flashed across Sun Long's face. His body twisted in an incredulous fashion and three claw beams appeared from nowhere.

"Ah!"

Xiao Zhen let out a blood-curling scream as blood splattered out!

These three claw beams had slashed across the right side of Xiao Zhen's face. His cheek, nose, ears and the corner of his eye had been ripped open by the claw blades. Three deep claw marks appeared on his face!

Xiao Zhen clutched his face. His hand was filled with blood and his eyes were bloodshot!

The flesh on his right face had sank downwards. Sun Long's attack was too ruthless!

Chapter 313: Taste Of Your Own Medicine

"What the heck?"

Xiao Zhen's team members below the stage were extremely alarmed. Xiao Zhen supposedly dodged Sun Long's attack, so how did he get hit?

This slash on his face by the claws was too terrible. His face had been ripped open, it looked like even his bones might have been slashed through.

And behind these people was a sullen Yi Yun.

Sun Long was stronger than Xiao Zhen and could have easily defeat him, only leaving him with slight injuries.

However, that was not what he did. Instead, he first indicated where was going to attack, allowing Xiao Zhen to be prepared, yet the attack still connected.

This was extremely shameful for warriors.

And to have one's face ripped open, to the point of being disfigured, was a great humiliation.

Such humiliation happening at such an important occasion, under the attentive gazes of the various factions' important

figures, was equivalent to stamping Xiao Zhen's face onto the ground.

It could even destroy Xiao Zhen's confidence in martial arts, giving his mind demons in the future.

Even if Xiao Zhen's wounds were to completely heal, the psychological impact would be hard to get rid off. Doing it like this was an extremely evil act!

"Xiao Zhen, admit defeat and come down here!"

Yi Yun stood up. The battle's result was already obvious.

Originally, getting these young masters and mistresses, who had never experienced the cruelty of battles, to experience a little bloodshed was a good thing, but going beyond the limit was no good. If this carried on, it would cause demons to appear in Xiao Zhen's mind, and these mind demons could cause Xiao Zhen to fail in breaking through in the future.

Xiao Zhen covered his face. His mouth and the right side of his face had been ripped open. He could not speak, yet he tried to open his mouth with great difficulty.

However, at that moment, he saw a blur in front of him and suddenly his right leg and right arm felt cold. Following that was an intense pain.

"Ah!"

Blood once more appeared as Xiao Zhen tumbled out. His right hand and right leg's tendons had all been cut apart!

Sun Long licked the blood off his metal claws and wantonly laughed, "Hahaha, I said that I would break the tendons of your right leg and hand, how can I break my promise? I am a man of my words."

Xiao Zhen's team members fumed with anger when they heard Sun Long. He was going too far by bullying others to such an extreme!

According to the alliance ranking competition's rules, as long as there was no intent to cause death to the other party, or to deliberately cause permanent disability to the other person, it would not be breaking the rules.

However, "deliberately" was something which was hard to define.

This rule was filled with loopholes. Besides, Sun Long cutting Xiao Zhen's tendons would not create a permanent disability as they could be healed with good medicine.

However, the damage inflicted to Xiao Zhen's psyche and the humiliation he experienced would be hard to cure.

"What a pathetic sight!"

Sun Long shook his head as the cultivators from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom behind him all began to laugh.

"This is a Tai Ah Divine City warrior? He's no different from a dog. Being placed on par with us from the Yun Long 72 Pagodas is a great humiliation!"

As these harsh words reached Yi Yun's small team, Viper pointed a thumbs down towards Yi Yun.

"Weak!"

The team members present were all teenagers and they were all at the age where their self-esteem was at their highest. Being humiliated like this made them feel an understandable amount of humiliation and anger.

Especially Xiao Zhen, who had been seriously injured. His body was shaking. He really wished he could die in exchange for a victory in battle.

Yi Yun turned silent. He calmly looked at Sun Long on the stage, "Your name is Sun Long?"

"Yes, you better remember my name!" Sun Long smiled willfully. His chin raised slightly as he looked at Yi Yun with contempt.

Yi Yun lightly touched the ring on his hand and calmly said, "I already made him throw in the towel. Why did you carry on attacking him?"

"You made him throw in the towel? I need to stop just because of that? Who do you think you are? What a joke!" Sun Long looked at Yi Yun as if he was looking at a retard. "Just because you are a leader? Don't you know that in the competition's rules, only the opponent's own concession counts. Too bad he couldn't open his mouth just now! Hahaha!"

Sun Long laughed and behind him, Viper and company also laughed.

"Tsk, your gaze looks terrifying."

Sun Long looked at Yi Yun and knew that there was killing intent in Yi Yun's calm eyes. Yet, he did not feel any fear, "Who's the next one? Come on up. Should I rip the left side or the right side of your face?"

"You are courting death! I will seek revenge for Xiao Zhen!"

The Tai Ah Divine City's youths were weaker in their stance, but being hot-blooded and because of Sun Long's provocation, they could no longer endure it.

A youth pressed the edge of the stage and was about to jump on

up but was stopped by Wen Yu.

"You are not his match. Going up will just make him show off more!"

Wen Yu gritted her teeth. She was prepared to go up to fight Sun Long herself. Actually Wen Yu also felt immense pressure, her opponent was also older than her.

"Tsk! What a pretty girl. You want to come up? If I were to rip open such a pretty face, it will be an interesting event."

Wen Yu became even more enraged at Sun Long's words.

However, at that moment a voice transmission from Yi Yun reached her ears, "Your mind is already in chaos due to his provocative words, even before going on stage. If you were to fight like this, the chances of winning will be lower than losing."

"I..."

Wen Yu looked towards Yi Yun and felt some grievance. She felt that if he had not accepted the challenge from such a abnormal team, they would never have been in such a state in the first place.

"Stay put below the stage."

With that said, Yi Yun walked up the stage.

"Senior Yi!"

Wen Yu froze. A team's leader was supposed to be the last to go on stage. If they went on stage early and was defeated, they would lose completely. It was similar to using the King piece to charge into battle in chess.

She did not have time to stop Yi Yun. At that moment, Yi Yun had already walked before Sun Long.

Sun Long looked derisively at Yi Yun, "To think you can be a leader. You can't even hold your own temper. Once you are up here, you can't leave!"

Viper, who was behind Sun Long, also looked dismissively at Yi Yun. As a leader, he was not supposed to be so irrational as to go up on stage like this. The two cloaked men yesterday were actually jealous over such an idiot. That bag of desolate bone relics sure was easy to earn.

Facing Yi Yun, Sun Long casually loosened his wrists. The metal claws on his hands were gleaming coldly. Although he seemed to look down on Yi Yun, he was actually on high alert.

The two cloaked men yesterday had given them precise information on Yi Yun. Sun Long knew that Yi Yun was very strong, he also knew the various moves Yi Yun had.

Sun Long wished to fight against Yi Yun. It didn't mean much to defeat some random fish. Only defeating Yi Yun and obtaining the seats was meritorious!

"Where is your saber? Take it out!"

"Oh? You seem to understand me very well. To know that I use a saber, but... My saber is only used against opponents that are worthy of respect or formidable. Against scum or retards, I will usually only use another weapon..."

Yi Yun gently rubbed his interspatial ring, the corners of his mouth curled upwards, revealing a sinister smile.

This smile made Sun Long feel his heart thump. This smile looked familiar to him because he often smiled like that.

His face sank and gritted his teeth, saying, "I will let you know who's the real retard!"

He was guessing on whether Yi Yun's other weapon was a bow or not. The information the cloaked men gave did mention that Yi Yun's two strongest weapons were the bow and the saber. It did not say anything else.

Yi Yun did not bother with Sun Long's retort and suddenly recalled, saying, "Right... Just now, you said that the competition's rules only allows for the opponents to concede defeat personally. If not, it will not be counted, right?"

Yi Yun asked, and before Sun Long could even reply, Yi Yun had extended three fingers, "Three moves. I will smash your face's left side, your left hand and your left leg!"

"You! You are courting death!" Sun Long turned furious. Yi Yun sure did not know what it meant to die, to use the words he used against him. Did he think he could do anything to him!?

Sun Long's body surged with murderous intent as his eyes locked on to Yi Yun. His body rushed forward like a cheetah!

However, just after rushing forward a few steps, the Yi Yun he saw disappeared suddenly!

Oh!?

Sun Long was greatly alarmed and at the next moment, he felt a cold feeling spread through his whole body. Yi Yun had suddenly appeared on the left side of his body like a ghost!

He subconsciously stabbed at Yi Yun's chest with his claw, but at that moment, he felt his head being pressed down by a hand.

This hand forcefully locked his head, and at that moment, another hand appeared. It was unknown when this other hand suddenly started holding a metallic, rectangular object in it.

Sun Long did not have time to tell what it was as he saw the metallic object grow in size till it covered his entire vision.

"Peng!"

There was a loud rumble. Yi Yun had used one hand to grab Sun Long's head and the other hand to ferociously smash the left side of Sun Long's face with a metal brick!

Yi Yun did not hold back with this brick. He slammed it down like he was using a ripe watermelon, smashing Sun Long's bones apart!

Sun Long's body trembled. He felt as if his head had been hit by a ten thousand pound sledgehammer. His eyes turned black as his ears rang and his mind went blank, and as if at that moment, he was isolated from this world. It was like his soul had been stripped from his body.

Shortly thereafter, an excruciating pain brought him back to reality.

Yi Yun had released his grip, and Sun Long was kneeling on the floor, vomiting.

"Puah!"

The food Sun Long ate and about a dozen blood-stained teeth were vomited out by him.

His teeth had all been knocked out by Yi Yun.

His limbs went cold while his ears and nostrils bled. The left side of his face had been completely smashed. A large portion of his facial bone now sank inwards.

Yi Yun coldly looked at Sun Long. "When mortals receive a heavy blow to their head, they will feel nauseous and vomit. I didn't expect you to be the same. Do you admit defeat?"

Yi Yun asked. Sun Long tried to open his mouth, but his chin's left joint had been broken and with his mouth that was completely smashed in, how could he speak?

"Oh? You don't admit defeat?" Yi Yun nodded, "I understand."

"Stop it!"

At that moment, Viper's cold voice rang in Yi Yun's ears.

However, why would Yi Yun care about him?

Yi Yun kicked Sun Long up as if it was a dead dog, sending him sprawling to the ground. Yi Yun raised the brick in this hand and smashed down, hitting Sun Long's left hand and then Sun Long's left ankle!

Sun Long gave a shrill. His hand and foot had been completely smashed into a bloody mess by Yi Yun!

It was an explosive fracture that turned it to smithereens!

Chapter 314: Against Viper

"Ah, ah, ah..."

Sun Long rolled on the ground. A warrior's strong mentality usually prevented him from fainting, but Sun Long was not far from doing so.

His left hand and leg were not much different from a frog's limbs. They had been completely flattened.

Being smashed by a metallic brick like that was much more painful than being slashed by a claw's blade. Also, the injuries were ten times more severe. Even if he was to be healed with various good medicines, it would take at least half a year for Sun Long's hand and leg to regain their Yuan Qi.

To young geniuses, half a year of time was too precious. It would, to a certain extent, affect Sun Long's future growth.

"You actually dare to say that you cultivate the laws of killing. That is an insult to this Great Dao!" Yi Yun sneered.

The Dao of Killing was one of the Great Dao and it ranked high amongst the 3000 Great Dao. It was ranked above the five element laws, and it was not weaker than the pure Yang Dao.

Sun Long had only gathered some killing Qi, he could at best be described to have a killing aura. He was far from the actual Dao of

Killing!

Behind Yi Yun, Wen Yu, Xiao Zhen and company were too shocked for words. What just happened only took a few seconds. The mighty Sun Long was turned into something like a dead dog in a few seconds, so they could not react in time.

"This..."

Xiao Zhen swallowed mouthfuls of saliva. He had even forgotten the pain of his own body.

Yi Yun had returned everything Sun Long had done to him in a more severe manner. Everything had been done cleanly and easily.

"Senior Yi... is very strong!" A youth said, with an idolatry face.

One year ago, Yi Yun had taken first place in the rookie ranking competition and then, he disappeared. About ten months later, many people doubted if Yi Yun's strength had increased by leaps and bounds, or if it had stagnated over time.

As he had not fought in a long time, people inevitably had their doubts. That was to be expected, but now, they knew that their worries had been completely unfounded.

"He's not only strong, he's also ruthless!" Another youth said. It was not right for a warrior to kill the innocent indiscriminately, but against an enemy, one had to be ruthless, or one would only

end up suffering.

"Senior Wen, Senior Yi's battle sure allows one to vent off one's anger!" A youth said to Wen Yu. Wen Yu was in a daze, she was still unsure of what to say at that moment.

Beside Wen Yu, Xiao Zhen was tightly clenching his good left fist, as his eyes sparkled.

When people were in their weakest and most vulnerable state, it is easy for them to suffer a setback. However, at the same time, they are also easily inspired. This short battle had left an unforgettable impression in his heart.

Xiao Zhen was in such a stage. At the lowest point in his life, Yi Yun's relentless beating of Sun Long unquestionably left a long lasting image in Xiao Zhen's heart.

Xiao Zhen gritted his teeth and secretly made a resolution.

"Thank you, Senior Yi. I will work hard, and one day, I will use my own hands and be like you. Beating those who want to step on me until they turn bloody!"

However, Yi Yun, who was still on stage, did not pay attention to the psychological changes that Xiao Zhen was experiencing.

He was looking straight at Viper while nonchalantly wiping the blood off the brick. After he came to this world, he was getting

more and more used to the rules of the warrior world.

Viper had an extremely ugly expression on his face. His amber eyes were filled with killing intent.

"You... have guts! I will let you know the cost of ignoring my words!"

Just now when he shouted, "Stop it", not only did Yi Yun not listen to him, he had even looked back at him as if nothing happened, after he beat Sun Long up.

The look he gave provoked Viper!

Even though he had his services bought by someone with desolate bone relics, he would still go all out to cripple Yi Yun, hopefully killing him.

"You sure speak a lot of nonsense. Are you going to fight personally? Or are you going to send some more henchmen up here to die?"

Yi Yun was still on the stage, looking down on Viper. The Yun Long 72 Pagodas cultivators sitting besides Viper were all enraged. They seemed like they all wanted to rush up and dice him up.

However, they could only look fierce. If push came to shove, they all knew that they would suffer a crushing defeat in less than two moves.

Yi Yun was very strong!

Although they all despised the Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators, they had no choice but to admit that this was true.

Viper's pupils constricted. The snake on his body spit out its tongue as it hissed.

"Interesting!" Viper grinned as he walked up on stage.

The audience around the eighth stage became dumbfounded.

It was too exaggerating for the eighth stage's matches. The other stages had not even finished their first two battles, but the eighth stage had already finished fighting two battles, and the leaders were already going up to fight against each other!

It was too fast.

Although Yi Yun's performance just now was outstanding, Wen Yu and company were worried for Yi Yun as he went up against Viper.

The reason was because of the difference in cultivation level!

According to the competition's rules, if the gap in their ages exceeded a year, the older person had to suppress his cultivation

level. If the difference was larger than two years, the cultivation level had to be suppressed even more.

For every full year, the cultivation level had to be suppressed by one grade. Only then would it be a balanced competition.

Yi Yun was slightly over 14 years of age and Viper had just turned 15. The difference in their age was just one month short of a year.

As a result, Viper did not need to suppress his cultivation level. And between the two of them, there was the border that separated the peak of the Purple Blood realm and the Yuan Foundation realm, which made this match extremely unfair!

For a warrior at the peak of the Purple Blood realm to fight a Yuan Foundation realm warrior, it would be nothing if the other party was mediocre. Many of the Tai Ah Divine City disciples would be able to do so.

However, the opponent was Viper!

Not only was he a genius, he was also extremely ruthless! With the dispute from before, there was no doubt that Viper would be attacking Yi Yun with death blows.

The hearts of Wen Yu and company were pounding.

"Senior Yi, be careful." Wen Yu said silently below the stage. Her hands were clasped tightly together, indicating how nervous she

was.

At that moment, people from not far away had begun to pay attention to the match of the eighth stage.

"What's this? They are going to start just like that...?"

Cang Yan was originally sitting at a table drinking wine.

Seeing Yi Yun take on Viper, he put his cup of wine down.

Yi Yun's talent was shocking, but he lacked time. Cang Yan was very concerned about this match. He pushed away his chair and walked towards the eighth stage.

Cang Yan did not know how Yi Yun's fight would end. After all, his opponent was a Yuan Foundation realm genius. He went closer to the eighth stage, so that, in the event of Yi Yun losing, he could save him.

As for the rules, old man Cang couldn't care less about them. Protecting Yi Yun was of the utmost importance.

Not only Cang Yan paid special attention to this battle, not far away, Li Hong, Yang Haoran and company had also noticed the match on stage eight. The leaders were beginning their duel.

"It has begun! Yi Yun against Viper!" Li Hong sent Yang Haoran a

Yuan Qi transmission. Yang Haoran grinned because he had been waiting for this moment.

Yesterday, he had taken the huge risk of looking for Viper because he valued Viper's ruthlessness and strength.

Viper could bypass the limitations of the rules while fighting against Yi Yun, so it was just right.

"So what if Yi Yun is a genius. Without the time to develop, it is pointless! Viper will definitely leave an unforgettable mark on Yi Yun!"

Chapter 315: Poison-Elemental Laws

"Yi Yun, meeting me is bad luck on your part. I will make you remember this battle for your entire life!" Viper said in a Yuan Qi voice transmission to Yi Yun before the battle began.

Yi Yun slightly frowned. Viper had been aiming at him from the beginning. It was definitely not because he had beaten up Sun Long, otherwise he would not have taken the initiative to set up the challenge.

"Why are you targeting me?" Yi Yun asked with a Yuan Qi transmission. He did not believe that Viper was interested in him solely because he was the last rookie ranking competition's champion. Viper was obviously a very arrogant person, so he would never have taken interest in a person that was a level lower than him.

Yi Yun was suspecting that there was someone behind Viper deliberately targeting him.

"Hehe, you still have time to think about this. It seems that you still do not know your situation. In a while, it will be me torturing you. If you were to admit defeat now, there would still be time. If you don't, I will first make you unable to speak, then I will make you suffer a hundred times worse than Sun Long!"

As Viper said this, a law-enforcer who was made referee especially for the battles between the leaders asked the two of them if they were ready.

This law-enforcer was a Tai Ah Divine City person. He was mainly asking Yi Yun because he realized that Yi Yun had yet to take his weapon out.

"I am ready."

Yi Yun nodded and casually loosened his wrists, waving the brick which was still dripping with blood.

Oh?

The law-enforcer became momentarily stunned. Yi Yun was planning to fight like that?

Not only the law-enforcer, even the people behind Yi Yun, like Wen Yu and company were stunned as well. They felt that, due to the difference in cultivation level, Yi Yun would find it difficult to win against Viper, yet he chose to not take out a weapon?

"This kid sure makes one worry!"

Not far away, Cang Yan was at a loss of whether to laugh or cry. This kid, Yi Yun, had chosen the 'Myriad Beast Totem' as his totem mystic technique and went into the sword tomb after learning from the saber tomb. Now, he was using a brick to go against a Yun Long Divine Kingdom genius whose cultivation was a level higher than his.

Were these things a normal person would do?

Viper laughed heartily upon hearing Yi Yun, "Is your brain normal? You actually do not want to use a weapon to go against me?"

Yi Yun said with a smile, "Who told you that this isn't my weapon? I've said it before, my saber is only to be used against opponents that are worthy of respect or formidable. Against scum or retards, the brick is sufficient."

Yi Yun's words made Wen Yu and company hold their breaths. Viper was already a lunatic, yet Yi Yun purposely provoked him. If Viper were to really get mad, the outcome would be unpredictable.

Viper's face started to tense up as his pupils turned into the shape of a spindle, like that of a snake. "I see... you wish for me to send you to the netherworld!"

"Whew!"

Viper charged forward. His speed was extremely fast and his body seemed to lack bones as he moved forward while sticking close to the ground. He was like a python that was moving forward quickly!

It was the first time for many to see such a weird movement technique.

"Die!"

Viper swiped forward with his claw. His weapon was also a metallic claw and his swipe came from the top heading downwards. His attack's target was Yi Yun's chin!

If it were to dig in, the metallic claw would pierce through the chin, stabbing into Yi Yun's mouth and tearing apart his tongue. This would naturally prevent Yi Yun from speaking.

Viper was fulfilling his words, attempting to prevent Yi Yun from admitting defeat.

Yi Yun's gaze turned cold as he raised the brick in his hand and smashed it at Viper's claw!

For a brick to go against a metallic claw, a blunt weapon like the brick would naturally hold a greater advantage. However, at that moment, the venomous snake that was resting on Viper's shoulders suddenly flew out towards Yi Yun's chest in an attack.

Heart Piercing Snake!

Yi Yun had a deep impression of this snake. A few days before he went out into the Divine Wilderness, about a year ago, a three-man cultivator team had been completely obliterated because they had misidentified a Heart Piercing Snake as a Golden Line Snake.

This Heart Piercing Snake was an extremely dangerous desolate

beast. Yet, how could Viper control a desolate beast? Yi Yun had the impression that it was extremely difficult for humans to tame desolate beasts!

Yi Yun did not have time to think about it too deeply. Just as the Heart Piercing Snake was about to bite at his heart, he quickly retreated.

However, Viper swiftly followed him as a grin flashed from the corner of his lips, "You're finished!"

Viper's murderous Qi exploded and then merged into one with his Yuan Qi, turning into a visible black air flow. This air flow covered Yi Yun's surroundings like a lock, sealing every direction that Yi Yun could use to dodge!

"Let me see how you will dodge this!"

Viper thrust his claw at Yi Yun and at the same time, the Heart Piercing Snake on his shoulders went straight for Yi Yun's mouth. It wanted to swallow Yi Yun's tongue!

Almost at the same moment as the Heart Piercing Snake was about to bite Yi Yun, his body suddenly twisted bizarrely and thick layers of after-images appeared. Yi Yun's body seemed to suddenly transform into a flexible swift, shuttling through the air without any resistance.

Large success stage of Minute Subtlety!

"Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!"

Yi Yun abruptly changed directions in the air and went through the murderous Qi lock using an incredulous trajectory! He dodged more than ten of them continuously, upon reaching the last few that he could not dodge, he smashed at them with his brick.

"Peng Peng Peng!"

Three of the murderous Qi locks were broken by Yi Yun!

"Hiss!"

Suddenly, the hissing sound of the venomous snake came from behind Yi Yun!

This Heart Piercing Snake was like a maggot, following Yi Yun without being shaken off.

Its speed was extremely fast, almost like a beam of light. However, Yi Yun did not even look at it, for in his energy vision, he could perfectly grasp the Heart Piercing Snake's attack trajectory!

Yi Yun sent out a brick attack!

"Peng!"

Yi Yun's brick heavily hit the Heart Piercing Snake's triangular-shaped head!

With a loud moan, the Heart Piercing Snake was sent flying by Yi Yun!

"What?"

Seeing the Heart Piercing Snake fly out and how most of his murderous Qi had been dispersed by Yi Yun, Viper was greatly alarmed.

By using such a blunt weapon in hand, Yi Yun's attack speed should have been greatly limited, so with the Heart Piercing Snake being as quick as lightning it was completely unexpected that it would be smashed by Yi Yun's brick!

Viper's spindle-shaped pupils stared at Yi Yun, a flash of shock appeared in his eyes.

The two of them had only exchanged blows for a few seconds. Many of those watching did not even have time to react to what was going on, it was so fast that people like Wen Yu and company did not even see the process of them exchanging blows.

They could only feel that the battle was intense enough to take their breaths away.

"Senior Yi is amazing. He isn't at a disadvantage at all!" To Wen Yu and company, to not be disadvantaged against a Yuan Foundation realm expert was an extremely amazing feat.

"Senior Yi hasn't even used his saber!"

Yi Yun's team of rookies were all bright-eyed.

It was a great mistake to think that Yi Yun would be weak with the brick, even though he did not use his saber to deal with Viper.

As Yi Yun had said, the brick was also his weapon.

Viper's expression turned sullen from this first exchange of blows. He originally thought that victory was his, he never expected that Yi Yun would be able to counter attack and even injure his Heart Piercing Snake.

He felt that it was humiliating that despite him being at the Yuan Foundation realm when going against a peak Purple Blood realm opponent, who was one year younger than him, he could not brutally kill him in one move.

"Hiss—"

The Heart Piercing Snake, who had been hit to the ground by Yi Yun, climbed back onto Viper's shoulders while spitting out its tongue.

Upon seeing this, Yi Yun was alarmed. The Heart Piercing Snake had received a heavy blow on its head, yet it was able to withstand it and did not die.

This snake was stronger than a typical Heart Piercing Snake!

"Phew—"

At that moment, the Heart Piercing Snake emitted green Yuan Qi. It was like the miasma that arose from a swamp. The Heart Piercing Snake's body began to emit crackling explosive sounds as a layer of scales grew on its body. This layer of scales were extremely sharp looking almost like blades.

"This is..." Yi Yun was shocked. How could the Heart Piercing Snake transform?

And this feeling was as if it was... an Aspect Totem!

"Kid, the Heart Piercing Snake on Viper is actually a puppet made from the corpse of a Heart Piercing Snake. And Viper's Aspect Totem is also in the shape of a snake. He has combined his Aspect Totem and puppet into one body. He is going to use his real abilities now, be careful!"

At that moment, Cang Yan's Yuan Qi voice transmission rang in Yi Yun's ears.

Heart Piercing Snake puppet? Combined with an Aspect Totem? There was such a technique?

Yi Yun was alarmed. The path of martial arts did indeed have many roads. There was no lack of different sorts of battle techniques.

Viper roared as green smoke appeared from his body. The purple tungsten stage below his feet began to emit "chi chi" sounds the moment they were stained by the green gas. Holes were eroded out where the gas met the stage.

Such a powerful poison?

Many people held their breaths. Even the purple tungsten metal corroded from it. If it touched a person's body, everything would have been burnt off before it even reached the bone!

"Yi Yun, you are indeed very strong. To force me to use my Aspect Totem and poison laws is impressive." Viper approached Yi Yun step by step as he planned to use the poison to corrode Yi Yun's body.

Yi Yun remained silent as he loosened his wrists and turned the metallic brick in his hand.

"You still aren't using your saber. You really are courting death!" Viper raged. For him, as a Yuan Foundation realm warrior, to fight against Yi Yun's who was at the peak of Purple Blood realm, it was

undermining his title of a genius. He never expected that even after he used his Aspect Totem, Yi Yun would still not use his saber. Even if he were to win, it would be disgraceful.

"I've said before. My saber is only to be used against opponents that are worthy of respect or formidable. You, as a scum, are only worthy of a brick."

Yi Yun's voice was nonchalant. Around the stage, Wen Yu and company gaped when they heard him, they were speechless. At that moment, Viper had presented all of his techniques, yet not only did Yi Yun not use his saber, he was also repeatedly cursing Viper as a scum.

"Stop provoking him any further..." Wen Yu said in her mind. She had seen Viper's complete information and knew of his character. This person was perverted and cruel. She was afraid that Viper would use some sort of cheap shot in this battle, causing Yi Yun an incurable injury.

"I will corrode your flesh and blood cleanly, bit by bit!"

Viper roared as both of his metallic claws turned into a misty green. The entire eight stage was covered in green smoke.

This green smoke was ten times stronger than the miasma of Blackwater swamp!

Warriors could endure the swamp's miasma for short periods of

time, but in this green smoke, even weapons refined by masters would start to corrode.

Those who practiced the poison-elemental laws would have to swallow all sorts of poisonous things, changing their Yuan Qi into a highly toxic Qi.

There were even legends that said that when the poison-elemental laws reached the highest levels, they could make all the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi in the world become an extremely toxic Qi, corroding an entire world, transforming it into large tracks of toxic marshes that caused death!

All the toxic gas gathered towards Yi Yun. This was an attack a metallic brick could not block against!

Chapter 316: Defeating Viper

Hum Hum Hum...

That toxic green gas seemed to take on a life of its own as it began to wail like a ghost.

The toxic gas was extremely thick, as if it was made from that of a snake's bile. It emitted a putrid smell that assailed one's nostrils.

Hiss—

The Heart Piercing Snake puppet began to sound out as it flew in the air. It stared on with its dark green pair of eyes as it silently approached Yi Yun. Not only did this toxic gas not affect this venomous snake puppet, but it even supplemented it with energy!

Aspect Totems could originally fly, so this venomous snake puppet also had the ability to fly.

It could actually be considered a doppelganger of Viper, and although it was a puppet, it had a life of its own.

"So what if you don't use a weapon. Be it a saber or this metallic blunt weapon, it will not be able to withstand the poison! In this toxic area, I dominate absolutely everything!"

Viper laughed sardonically. With the metallic claw in hand, he

started to rapidly move!

Amidst poison, a typical warrior could only power up his protective Yuan Qi to withstand the poison's corrosive properties.

However, by doing so, not only would their Yuan Qi be quickly consumed due to using a large portion of their Yuan Qi to withstand the poison, the amount left to block Viper and the Heart Piercing Snake puppet's attack would also be reduced.

Only one could be handled, leaving the other free to reign!

As such, Viper could maximize his combat power within this toxic mist.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

Upon coming into contact with the toxic mist, Yi Yun's protective Yuan Qi began to corrode and shrink.

Yi Yun was after all only at the peak of the Purple Blood realm, the amount of Yuan Qi he had was much lower than that of a Yuan Foundation realm warrior. As a result, it would be harder for him to withstand the toxic mist as time went on.

Many people were worried for Yi Yun, but there were also Yang Haoran and company who were looking forward to seeing Yi Yun turn into a skeleton after being corroded by the toxic mist.

"Die!"

Viper roared as he and the Heart Piercing Snake puppet split into two different directions. One came from the front while the other came from the back, attacking Yi Yun who was in the middle of the toxic mist!

"Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!"

Viper's body began to flash out tens of after-images, preventing others from telling where he was. As for the Heart Piercing Snake, it was like lightning, turning its airborne body into a blur.

Against Viper's attack, Yi Yun's mind was as still as water. He gathered his Yuan Qi to an extreme with the brick in hand.

"Weng–

With a clear sound, the Purple Crystal Origins within Yi Yun's heart shook.

At that moment, it was as if a volcano had erupted. Burning hot, pure Yang Qi gushed out from Yi Yun's body!

Second stage of the "Tai Ah Sacred Technique"!

Pure Yang Qi of the finest purity turned into the image of a Tang

Valley image in the air. A thin mist covered the ghostly valley, shrouding the divine green trees within!

After absorbing the Golden Crow species's beast mark and having cultivated in the burning hell's Pure Yang Sword Palace for ten months, Yi Yun's 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was no longer comparable to what it once was!

The pure Yang flames burned and a large portion of the toxic mist was burned up by the pure Yang fire.

The poison-elemental law ranked on the same level as the five elemental laws. It could not withstand the burning of a higher grade pure Yang flame.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

Large swaths of green mist burned into green smoke. Even the purple tungsten metal beneath Yi Yun's feet had melted into a molten liquid!

"Huh!?"

Viper was great alarmed. To have such a thick pure Yang flame, Yi Yun's attainment in the pure Yang laws exceeded his own poison-elemental laws.

Although there was a difference in cultivation level, Yi Yun's pure Yang Qi came from the Pure Yang Sword Palace and the

Golden Crow species. The quality was not something comparable to the poisonous elements Viper had extracted from desolate beasts like the Heart Piercing Snake.

This difference in quality reversed the deficits of his cultivation level!

At that moment, Yi Yun's eyes flashed, all his body's pure Yang Qi had been injected into the metallic brick. The metallic brick began to shine and burn with pure Yang flames!

This was no longer any typical metallic brick, but a pure Yang flaming brick!

Viper held his breath as he shuttled around. He pushed his snake-like movement technique to the limit. Even with the pure Yang laws, there was still a chance for one of his attacks to hit Yi Yun if he was to attack together with his Heart Piercing Snake puppet!

However, at that moment, Yi Yun moved. He opened his Purple Crystal energy vision and the after-images that covered the sky disappeared from his view. Yi Yun clearly locked onto Viper's actual position.

As for the lightning fast Heart Piercing Snake puppet, it could not hide in the Purple Crystal's vision.

Large success stage of Minute Subtlety!

Sou!

Yi Yun's body mysteriously disappeared. Viper felt his back turn cold and a chill arose from his heart. Without thinking, his claw attacked towards his back!

At that moment, the pure Yang flaming brick in Yi Yun's hand had been sent slamming heavily downwards.

With the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' pushed to its limits, the slamming of the brick created fiery arc beams in the air.

"Ka-cha!"

Yi Yun's flaming brick smashed into Viper's metallic claw. The hot, pure Yang flames bent the claw, while the brick did not lose any of its momentum. After it pushed down the metallic claw, it went straight for Viper's head!

"Boom!"

When the pure Yang energy burst out, Viper's protective Yuan Qi shattered like glass. He felt his head buzz, as if his head had been smashed by a crazily charging near-horned beast. His mind went blank and his vision was completely covered by a golden color, he could no longer see anything else.

As for the Heart Piercing Snake puppet, the Aspect Totem within it dissipated when its owner was severely injured. It lost its combat

power and its speed rapidly decreased. At that moment, Yi Yun grabbed the snake three inches away from its head!

With one hand grabbing the Heart Piercing Snake, and the other hand holding the pure Yang flaming brick, Yi Yun saw Viper's body sway. Viper was delirious and Yi Yun did not hesitate in raising his brick to smash down on him again!

At that moment, Viper was like an immobile target. So Yi Yun's brick attack smacked right into the right side of Viper's face!

"Peng!"

Viper began spinning in the air like a top, his body revolving while he threw up blood, the blood smeared the air into a red spiral. Even a few blood-stained teeth were spat out by Viper.

Seeing Viper fall to the ground, Yi Yun quickly rushed forward and sent out another brick attack.

This brick attack reversed its direction and hit the left side of Viper's face. Viper, who was like a spinning top, was spinning clockwise, but after this hit, he began spinning counter-clockwise.

Viper's face was completely mangled. Again, he threw up blood in a spiral.

Following that, Yi Yun leaped up with the brick in hand, and curving his body, he sent out a heavy third brick attack, as if he

was smashing a ball.

Ka-cha!

Yi Yun's brick hit Viper's back and with the sound of a broken spine, Viper heavily fell to the ground!

Viper's mind was completely in a daze.

However, at that moment, Yi Yun did not carry on minding Viper. Instead, he threw the Heart Piercing Snake in his hand down on the purple tungsten ground. Without Viper's commanding it, the Heart Piercing Snake had lost its combat strength. Upon being thrown to the ground like this, it merely sprawled on the ground.

Following that, Yi Yun aimed right at the Heart Piercing Snake's triangular shaped head and smashed down at it.

"Pfft!"

The Heart Piercing Snake's head turned into bloody meat paste. Although this snake now lacked a head, its body was still struggling.

Wen Yu and company were completely stupefied on seeing what happened during this duel. Only one word appeared in their minds, brutal!

With the brick in hand, Yi Yun was a brutal erratic demon.

Sun Long and Viper, who had both gone up against him, were both smashed beyond recognition with just a few brick attacks!

After taking care of the Heart Piercing Snake, Yi Yun walked towards Viper with the brick in hand.

Although Viper had not fainted, the bone on both sides of his face could be seen. His eyes were completely covered in blood and he could not see anything, but he could still hear Yi Yun's footsteps.

The footsteps for him sounded as if Death was approaching, making him horrified.

This person was a demon!

Viper, who had always abused others, had suddenly gone from being the abuser, to becoming the abused. His fear reached an extreme point.

"Are you not admitting defeat?" At that moment, Yi Yun's voice reached Viper's ears.

Viper felt as if he had been granted amnesty. His jaw had been beaten off so he was still unable to speak. He quickly sent a Yuan Qi voice transmission to Yi Yun, "Sto... Stop... I admit defeat..."

"Oh? Still not admitting defeat?" Yi Yun ignored Viper's Yuan Qi transmission. How could it be admitting defeat without saying it personally?

Yi Yun firmly raised the metallic brick.

Viper was frightened out of his wits. If this brick were to slam down, such as hitting his head, he would die.

He did not wish to die here.

"Stop... Stop! I... I will tell you about the people who want to harm you!" Viper pleaded with a Yuan Qi voice transmission.

"Oh?"

Upon hearing Viper's words, Yi Yun slowed down his attack, "Speak!"

"It was two black-cloaked people. They conceal... concealed their looks. Their voice... voice also changed, but... one of them only had one arm..."

Viper used his Yuan Qi to intermittently describe the characteristics of the two cloaked people from yesterday.

After Yi Yun heard this, the corners of his mouth curled

upwards.

One arm...

Yi Yun already knew who the cultivator with one arm that had a feud with him was.

As for the other person, although he was not sure about exactly who it was, he could make an educated guess that it was none other than either Li Hong or Yang Yuefeng.

Yi Yun kept the brick and stopped brutally attacking Viper.

According to the competition's rules, he could not purposely cause the death of others and could not purposely cause the person to become permanently disabled.

Now, Viper had lost all ability to resist. If he were to continue abusing him, it would not be against the rules, but he could not kill or permanently disable Viper.

If so, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom would not turn a blind eye to it. It would also not be easy for the Tai Ah Divine City to protect him.

As such, Yi Yun decided to leave it as it was.

"Stage Eight, Yi Yun wins! He defeated the opponent's leader,

winning two seats!"

The law-enforcer announced the battle's outcome.

This was the first round that ended in the alliance competition. It was also the first seats that got an owner.

The speed at which this battle ended was so fast that it felt like it was an exaggeration.

As Yi Yun walked down the stage, Wen Yu and company were still in a daze. They felt like all that happened just now was a dream.

They knew that Yi Yun was not simple, but they never expected that Yi Yun would be so violent. To finish Viper with a brick!

And the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' that Yi Yun displayed at the end stunned them even more.

Chapter 317: Jun Yue

"Senior Yi, were you using the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' just now!?"

When Yi Yun got off the stage, his team members asked as they gathered around him.

As the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's top cultivation technique, the "Tai Ah Sacred Technique" was very famous.

Many rookies had long heard of its name, but had never seen it before.

"Of course, is there a need to ask!?" Another junior said, "The 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' is so powerful. All that poison was burnt away in a second."

These juniors had previously heard rumors that the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was extremely difficult to cultivate. Many geniuses had attempted cultivating it but ended up failing.

For the outstanding leaders amongst the rookies like Wen Yu, they set mastering the "Tai Ah Sacred Technique" as their goal. But this goal was extremely distant.

Now, Yi Yun could use the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' in a very well-versed manner. He could easily use it even with the metallic brick as a weapon. Yi Yun was not much older than them, yet he

had reached such an amazing level with the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', which made them admire and envy him.

"Hehe, this kid Yi Yun did well!" Not far away, Cang Yan was rubbing his chin with a satisfied look.

Beside Cang Yan was Jian Ge who had seen the entire match. He said, "Yi Yun's 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' has improved a lot since he went out for almost a year."

The current Yi Yun not only had a simple transformation in his cultivation level, he experienced a qualitative improvement in every aspect.

"Of course, who do you think taught him!?" Cang Yan was very pleased.

Jian Ge turned speechless upon hearing this. This old man sure liked to boast without shame.

Old man Cang had naturally given a lot of help to Yi Yun, but as for teaching him, old man Cang had obviously never taught Yi Yun anything.

But, Jian Ge did not argue with Cang Yan over this. He knew that it was indeed Cang Yan who first discovered Yi Yun. At the beginning, it was also Cang Yan who brought Yi Yun into the saber tomb.

"He has already won two seats. Yi Yun's batch is the strongest batch our Tai Ah Divine City has seen in recent years. It even exceeds Qin Haotian's batch. Unfortunately, they haven't grown up yet. If they were to break through to the Yuan Foundation realm, it would be even better."

The competition rules set the demarcating age to be fifteen years of age. This was extremely disadvantageous for Yi Yun, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran.

In this tournament, the third year cultivators were actually the most important. Unfortunately, there was only Li Hong amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's third year cultivators that was worthy.

And Li Hong clearly could not hold the ground.

The first match had ended, so Yi Yun had nothing to do. There was still some time left for the remaining matches.

Yi Yun sat in the participant benches and began meditating.

He was trying to understand the sword truths from the sword tomb.

Upon seeing Yi Yun meditating, a few of the juniors looked at each other. Yi Yun still had matches he had not fought.

At that moment, Yi Yun should have gone to learn about the other teams' battle situation and understand his competitors, yet

he was sitting there meditating.

If it was 15 minutes ago, Wen Yu would have despised Yi Yun in her heart for his actions. But now, after easily taking down Viper, Wen Yu no longer said a word.

Different people doing the same thing would have completely different results. Weaklings who did so were retards, but when the strong did so, they had the bearing of experts.

"What are you dazing for. Let's get some information!" Wen Yu tapped on a junior's head. As they did not play a significant role, this was the time for them to do something.

The four factions' alliance tournament began with the small group battles happening concurrently.

Later on in the championship match, the under-fifteens groups would first compete before the above-fifteen and the overall group matches.

They split up to watch the battle situation of the various teams.

Yi Yun, who was meditating, ignored Wen Yu and company's departure. He felt that there were a few stares watching him. The stares came with both hostility and fear.

Yi Yun did not need to see to know who they were.

"This kid actually defeated Viper despite being a level lower..."

Not far away, Yang Haoran was clenching his only fist so tightly that his whole hand shook.

The outcome of Yi Yun and Viper's battle was unexpected to him. He had handpicked the ruthless and powerful Viper to get rid of Yi Yun.

To what extent...did Yi Yun's strength reach?

He suddenly realized a possibility that made him despair. Even now, with Yi Yun not grown up, he with his severed arm might not be Yi Yun's match!

This made Yang Haoran experience an extremely great setback.

"Haoran...It's better we...don't target him anymore..."

Beside Yang Haoran, Li Hong was beginning to lack confidence.

Li Hong was a vengeful person. He would think of ways to retaliate more than ten times worse against anyone that provoked him.

However, who the other party was mattered. If he knew that the other party far exceeded him, it would only be him being stupid to

provoke the other party.

Li Hong initially went against Yi Yun because he thought Yi Yun would be easily bullied.

But now, Yi Yun's strength and talent was greater than his. Yi Yun already exceeded him in several aspects. The only advantage he had was his family clan behind him. But compared to the high regard given to Yi Yun by the Tai Ah Divine City Elders, it was nothing.

And after not being able to deal with Yi Yun, he would only end with a tragic fate when Yi Yun eventually became a mighty figure in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Li Hong already had thoughts of backing out.

"Are you afraid?" Yang Haoran looked angrily at Li Hong.

Li Hong shook his head. He was afraid of Yi Yun, but he did not want to offend Yang Haoran. "I only feel that we might not be his match..."

"Not his match..." Yang Haoran gritted his teeth. He had to admit that what Li Hong said was the truth.

Yi Yun was a person who had shown brilliant results in the alliance tournament, and was being highly regarded by the Divine City's Elders, and also taken in as a disciple by Grandmaster

Yuehua. Their families would not offend someone like him just for them.

And what was most critical was that a family clan would weigh the pros and cons. They might even give up on him. After all, he had lost an arm.

This was the cruelty and the reality of a large family clan.

Upon thinking of this, Yang Haoran felt extreme sorrow.

"Yi Yun broke my arm, ending my martial arts career. Yet, I, Yang Haoran have to endure this...When have I ever suffered such humiliation..."

The world of warriors respected those who were strong. When Yi Yun proved his strength, even as a son of a prominent family clan, he had to bow.

As Li Hong was talking with Yang Haoran using Yuan Qi voice transmissions, a loud scream from the stage sounded out from behind Li Hong.

Li Hong turned around and saw that one of his team members had his arm broken, and had been thrown down the stage.

That team member was also a rookie. His face was pale and laid on the ground twitching. The outcome was obvious.

The groups that progressed the fastest was Li Hong's team other than Yi Yun's.

This was because Li Hong's team was also filled with a bunch of ineffective troops. It was about the same as Yi Yun's team.

But with similar ineffective troops, Yi Yun had shone. He managed to win two seats in less than 15 minutes after the competition began. As for Li Hong's side, they were almost wiped out.

Seeing the 'forerunners' that were supposed to protect him get defeated one after another, Li Hong could no longer sit at ease.

This difference was too great!

"Really so weak!"

On the stage was a stout youth. He was laughing, "You are the group that was given up, right? You sure are humiliated being the leader of this group."

The youth's words struck a nerve with Li Hong.

Li Hong's expression turned cold as he carried his long staff up the stage. His team no longer had anyone left except him, so he had to go on stage anyway.

He swung his staff and pointed at the stout youth, "Cut the nonsense. Let me see what allows you to be this arrogant."

Li Hong was after all the best cultivator amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's third years. How could he not be angry after being provoked by a forerunner.

"Ah Jun, come on down. Let me take him on."

At that moment, an indifferent voice came from off the stage. A tall and thin man stepped onto the stage.

This man did not look anything like a youth. He looked cultured and his eyes were slender but had spirit in it. He gave off a different kind of aura.

Upon seeing this man, the arrogant youth immediately became a lot more respectful.

"Senior Jun Yue, you are the leader. Why would there be a need for you to deal with a small fry?"

Although the youth said such words, Jun Yue did not mind and laughed, "I actually thought that I didn't need to do anything, but...I saw Viper being defeated on the eighth stage. The person, who defeated Viper, is very interesting. As a result, my hand is itching. I should be battling him, so this will be my warm up before it."

Jun Yue's voice was very casual. While speaking, he kept looking far away at Yi Yun who had his eyes closed. A smile formed on his lips.

And at that moment on the stage, Li Hong's face had already turned green.

Jun Yue was taking bullying to an extreme!

This Jun Yue only saw Yi Yun as his opponent. He actually treated the battle with him as a "warm up"?

Courting death!

Li Hong clenched his fist. The veins on his fist started to twist like earthworms. He had to fight well to regain his dignity in this match!

He too was a proud son of Heaven. By being disregarded in such a manner, he wanted to bite off a piece of his opponent's flesh even if he would be sent flying.

As this was another battle between leaders, a Tai Ah Divine City law-enforcer came forward to be the referee. After he asked if both parties were ready, Jun Yue's hands remained empty. He did not take out a weapon.

"Not taking out a weapon?" Li Hong's expression turned sullen. But he did not shout for his opponent to take out his weapon.

He knew his opponent was very strong. Even though his opponent did not have a weapon, he would still have to go all out. The only way of obtaining victory was to take advantage of his enemy's underestimation.

"The match begins!"

With the announcement from the Tai Ah Divine City's law-enforcer, Li Hong charged forward with his staff in hand.

At the same moment, an Aspect Totem the shape of a gray bear appeared behind him!

Over the past year, Li Hong had also gained his own Aspect Totem. Against Jun Yue who was unfathomable, Li Hong had to go all out from the beginning!

However, Jun Yue stood on the stage like a sword even though Li Hong was charging forward.

At the moment Li Hong reached 30 feet in front of him, Jun Yue's pupils contracted, emitting an eye-catching cold glimmer.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

Below Li Hong, the metal tiles suddenly underwent an incredulous change. Metallic arrow projectiles that were the thickness of a thumb began separating from the ground, shooting at Li Hong!

What!?

Li Hong's expression changed. What sort of attack was this!?

Chapter 318: Metal-Elemental Laws

With the metallic arrow projectiles flying towards him, Li Hong did not think twice and immediately retreated, smashing his staff down to deflect the projectiles.

"Ding Ding Ding!"

A series of metallic collision sounds rang. Li Hong had deflected the metallic projectiles, but at the same time he felt his arms go numb, and the thigh of his hands felt pain. It was difficult for him to withstand the strong attacks.

Could it be...

A thought suddenly appeared in Li Hong's mind, but at that moment, the metallic projectiles that Li Hong had deflected returned and flew at Li Hong once again!

These metallic projectiles seemed to have a life of their own and they pierced the air without any resistance. They could even dodge Li Hong's staff.

The quantity and intensity of the attacks had increased. Li Hong's forehead was covered in cold sweat.

"Metal-elemental laws!"

Li Hong finally realized what sort of attack it was.

Amongst the five elements; Metal, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth, the metal-elemental laws were the best. There were very few who could master the metal-elemental laws.

This lanky youth was a metal-elemental practitioner, and the degree of his nomological insight was extremely terrifying!

Typically for those who practiced the five elemental laws, even if they would have some achievement amongst those laws, they would only be able to inject the power of the five elements into their own attacks. Very few people could be like this lanky youth, who could control the elemental energy so easily, like it was a part of his body.

He could even manipulate the purple Tungsten tiles on the ground. This power was very terrifying.

"Ding Ding Ding!"

Many projectiles flew in the air as Li Hong conjured his Aspect Totem. However, the projectiles pierced right through his Aspect Totem!

Li Hong felt his soul tremor and his face went white.

His limbs numbed from the relentless attacks. He could not take it any longer.

"Whew!"

A projectile had finally bypassed Li Hong's defenses and penetrated his shoulder. It exited his shoulder from the back, bringing with it a shower of blood!

Li Hong grunted and fell backward.

At that moment, another projectile pierced through his belly. Li Hong's protective Yuan Qi was like paper in front of these sharp metallic projectiles.

Li Hong's body was sent flying before he landed heavily on the ground, while his entire body twitched.

Jun Yue's metallic arrows moved in a spiral and after the arrows the thickness of a thumb pierced through Li Hong's body, the wounds inflicted were the size of a cup of alcohol. Li Hong's entire arm had nearly been twisted off.

"I...admit defeat..."

He said those words with difficulty. Li Hong's face was pale and it was covered in sweat. The two open wounds made him lose a lot of blood.

The Tai Ah Divine City's medical staff rushed up to save Li Hong.

Jun Yue's expression remained calm. He only nodded and from beginning to the end, Jun Yue did not move a single step. He had only used the metal-elemental laws to control those arrow projectiles and eventually, he gained victory.

The gap was too large!

Li Hong was extremely depressed. This alliance tournament had become an unforgettable experience for him.

After Jun Yue clinched victory, he stared right through the crowd, straight at Yi Yun who was meditating in the participant benches.

Yi Yun heart thumped. He did not open his eyes but using the Purple Crystal's energy vision, he could feel the existence of this person.

It was because he was too striking.

In the energy vision, human Sages like Cang Yan and Jian Ge only gave off a dim light as they kept their energy within. Even for figures like the Tai Ah Divine City City Lord, they were no different from mortals.

As for people like Wen Yu, they were too weak so their presence was very small.

He could pick Jun Yue out clearly. Not only was he strong, his energy was willfully displayed. His existence was like a fire in the night. It was extremely visible.

"This person does not seem typical."

Yi Yun quietly took note of this person. But he was currently trying to comprehend the sword truths, so he was unable to check up the other party.

But beside Yi Yun, Wen Yu and company had already dug out all the information of Jun Yue.

The world was vast, and there was always someone stronger. Even though Jun Yue's nomological insight reached such a perverse level, he was not very famous. From the information gathered by Wen Yu, there was less information on Jun Yue than that of Viper.

"Senior Yi has met his match..."

"This Jun Yue is really terrifying." A few juniors lacked confidence. It was hard to determine who would win when Yi Yun faced Jun Yue.

After Jun Yue defeated Li Hong, the results of Chu Xiaoran and Qiuniu's battles also came out. Chu Xiaoran had won and Qiuniu had lost!

For the under-fifteen teenager group matches between the Tai Ah Divine City and the Yun Long 72 Pagodas, it ended in a draw with both groups securing two wins and two losses.

Cang Yan was very satisfied with this result.

After all, the Tai Ah Divine City only had three main powerhouses; Yi Yun, Qiuniu and Chu Xiaoran. They were not even fifteen years of age, so they had a handicap in terms of age. Even so, they managed to tie with their opponents.

At least they had managed to hold on to 4 seats.

But following the under-fifteen group matches was the teenager group championship. To become group champion was the most important thing.

If someone became a champion, their camp would gain at least eight seats.

The person who could win the championship for the Tai Ah Divine City was none other than Yi Yun, but he had to face Jun Yue.

Cang Yan frowned slightly. Previously, in Li Hong and Jun Yue's battle, it was clear that Jun Yue did not use all his strength. Cang Yan found it hard to determine how Yi Yun would compare with Jun Yue. This was a serious challenge.

Immediately following that, the results of the above-fifteen groups' matches came out.

Yao Dao's team had managed to clinch victory, while the other three teams were undoubtedly annihilated.

In fact, when the three teams faced their opponents, their opponents only sent out one or two people and they fought all the way to the end.

As they belonged to teams that were abandoned, those members lacked fighting spirit because they knew no matter how much they fought, they would end up defeated as well.

"The Tai Ah Divine City's cultivators' battle strategy is very effective!" On the seats of honor, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner laughed while saying that. He still had a sarcastic tone. "To give up on three groups and concentrate all your power into one group, and win that match. That match was against my Yun Long 72 Pagodas' weakest team, and that is all thanks to your luck."

"Luck is also a kind of strength." The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was unaffected by his words. No matter what the Seven Star Pagoda Owner said, he would respond with a smile, not taking it to heart.

"Unfortunately, luck does not mean anything in the final match. There's no avoiding it."

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner was full of confidence. The outcomes of the matches before did not matter much. What was most important were the matches ahead.

A group's champion could win at least 8 or 10 seats.

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner was confident that the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was able to win all those seats.

His goal was to obtain more than 60% of the seats, and that was including the Southern 10 countries and the other neutral factions!

The battle carried on.

After the small group matches, there was a break for an hour. Following that was the group championship!

The teams that won in the group matches and those cultivators who were not defeated could participate in the group championship.

The group championship rules were very simple. There was freedom to challenge anyone.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would send one person out and challenge one person from the other side. The person who lost was eliminated. The person who won would carry on fighting. It would be fought to the end and the last man standing would be the group champion.

For the under-fifteen group, the group champion would win eight seats.

For the over-fifteen group and the overall group group champions would win ten seats.

If there were more than ten people left on one side, an additional two seats could be won.

The group championships were what the Seven Star Pagoda Owner cared the most about.

There were nearly 30 seats. In contrast, the 6 seats lost in the small group matches did not mean anything.

"Kid, the group championship is beginning soon!" While Yi Yun was meditating, Cang Yan's voice rang in Yi Yun's ear.

Yi Yun opened his eyes. The Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword truths were too profound. Even with the Purple Crystal's help, Yi Yun found cultivating it impossibly difficult. This was definitely the most difficult and hardest to understand cultivation technique that he had faced in his martial arts career until now.

"The group championship is an elimination tag-team tournament. The more people you have, the more advantageous for you would be. We do not hold the advantage in numbers. Do your best." Cang Yan said while pointing to a girl not far from Yi

Yun. She was none other than Chu Xiaoran.

"We have become teammates now..." Chu Xiaoran said with a smile.

Yi Yun looked at Chu Xiaoran and noticed that she was alone.

Chu Xiaoran smiled coyly. "My teammates had all been defeated. Qiuniu and Li Hong's groups lost, so there's really only me. Together with the people from your team, there is a total of five people..."

Uh...

Yi Yun's eyebrows scrunched together. Around him, there were Wen Yu and two other juniors who lacked any presence.

The three of them were there to make up the numbers.

No matter how it was counted, there were only two people who were actually participating in this championship, Yi Yun and Chu Xiaoran.

Looking back at his opponents, they were a group of powerful people that were like wolves and tigers.

This number sure was "not holding the advantage"!

Chapter 319: Cang Yan's Ass

The Human Lords and sages from the various factions gathered for the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord's birthday banquet. But now that the small group matches were over, the arena was completely made available. All the matches from now on would be held on the Divine Wilderness Stage. And everyone was waiting for them!

In the past, when Tai Ah Divine City cultivators battled each other, the audience would only be cultivators from the Tai Ah Divine City. Since everyone was from the same faction, even if someone lost, there would not be much disgrace.

But now, every match was being watched by the different important figures.

There was no doubt that such a situation would make people tense up.

"Senior Wen..." A thirteen year old junior swallowed a gulp of saliva as he pulled on Wen Yu's sleeves before turning silent.

Wen Yu knew what he was nervous about. The three of them should have been eliminated. It was because Yi Yun had fought early, so there was no need for them to fight in the first round, and this allowing them to survive. Their opponents for the battles ahead were all much stronger than the three of them, so going up on the stage to fight was a masochistic move.

It wasn't a big deal to be battered by others normally, but under

the watchful gaze of all the important figures in the audience, the resulting embarrassment from being badly beaten was obvious.

Wen Yu was helpless. In fact, her situation wasn't any better than the junior.

Just glancing at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom participant benches, each person gave off a terrifying aura that made people fear them.

"You guys don't have to go up." Yi Yun said from behind Wen Yu. His voice was calm.

"Ah? I... " Wen Yu's face turned red as she fell into a predicament, "At least... we can test them out..."

Wen Yu felt that she had to play a tiny role, no matter how tiny it was.

Having joined this alliance tournament, she had done nothing besides gathering intelligence.

"There is no need."

Yi Yun also did not need Wen Yu to test his opponents out. In fact, they were unqualified to do so. The battles that were going to happen only involved him and Chu Xiaoran.

As for their opponents, there were seven people! The number of people was more than three times larger.

The VIPs from the various factions were observing these new people, especially Yi Yun and Jun Yue.

Everyone focused on them.

Yi Yun had defeated Viper without using a weapon and Jun Yue defeated Li Hong without moving a single step.

Both of them were absolute geniuses, but unfortunately, Yi Yun was one year younger than Jun Yue.

For geniuses in their teens, it was the period where they progressed the fastest. A year's time was too long. Even 3-4 months could unsurprisingly allow a person to increase their strength exponentially due to one breakthrough.

"Such a pity. That Yi Yun is young and he doesn't have many team mates. One person alone can't save the situation." said an Elder of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, who was sitting in the Elders seats, while stroking his beard.

"If Yi Yun was a year older, he might be able to fight Jun Yue. But now...he is too young."

Another Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder echoed. He was dressed in a plain white robe and had the demeanor of an immortal, it was

as if he existed on a different ethereal plane.

The two of them believed that there was no doubt that Jun Yue would win the battle.

"Dumb ass!"

Just as the two Elders finished saying their respective statements, they suddenly heard someone exclaim that. They were stunned. In such an occasion, with so many legendary figures sitting together, who would use such low-grade words?

They turned around and saw a thin old man. He was nibbling on seeds and also throwing the shells away without thought.

The old man was looking right at the Divine Wilderness Stage and he wasn't even looking at them.

This thin old man was none other than Cang Yan.

The immortal-looking white-robed Elder was sure that the "retard" who said those words was that old man.

"My friend, why do you say so!?" The white-robed Elder exclaimed angrily.

"What?" Cang Yan looked shocked at being shouted at. He gave a confused expression, "Are you referring to me?"

"Yes!" The white-robed Elder's expression was ugly. "Please explain the words you said just now!"

"Just now? Me?" Cang Yan looked surprised before finally understanding, "Oh, while I was chewing on these Spirit Abutilon Seeds, I suddenly remembered something about my mount, a green ass. It had overturned my herb furnace yesterday, so I cursed it. Is there a problem?"

Cang Yan gave a look of innocence, while the two Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders' faces turned livid.

They were questioning Cang Yan in a disapproving manner but they had been scolded by this old bastard once again.

But Cang Yan had scolded them using the words "dumb ass". Now, he said he was scolding his mount, which was a green ass. So it seemed like there was no problem. After all, Cang Yan did not look at the two of them from the beginning.

This made the two white-robed Elders fume. Clearly, they had been made into fools twice, but they could not find a reason to vent their anger. They could only stare helplessly.

The two Elders were completely helpless. Who would have thought that such a rogue character would appear in this circle of large factions' legendary figures?

"That darned old fool!" One of the white-robed Elders transmitted his voice angrily.

"Forget it. He won't be able to boast much longer. We just need to hold our tongues for a while. Once the results are out, we shall see what he else he has to say!"

"Right, our Yun Long Divine Kingdom is filled with proud sons of heaven this time! This is the most flourishing generation in the past hundred years. We will disgrace the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom completely!"

As the two white-robed Elders communicated with each other, they temporarily calmed down. They looked at the Divine Wilderness Stage because the first match had just begun.

Someone from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom first went onstage. It was a very cute boy who looked about seven or eight years old.

He held a small umbrella in his hand. The umbrella had no driving force, so it was floating in the air and spinning on his fingers.

"Oh? A child?"

"He only looks young. His name is Lin Tong. He is about the same age as us. Do not look down on him. I've seen the information on him. He is very strong. And to be first to fight also illustrates that."

At the beginning of the competition, it was atypical to send a person who was too weak as they needed to establish their foothold.

"I'll fight!" Chu Xiaoran said as she walked up to the stage.

They only had two people, and naturally Yi Yun would be last. Hence, the only person that could be sent out was only Chu Xiaoran.

"Alright, be careful." Yi Yun nodded.

"Hehe..." The child laughed. He looked at Chu Xiaoran while revealing two rows of white teeth.

"Let the match... begin!"

As soon as the referee said "begin", a Glacier Snow Wolf Aspect Totem appeared behind Chu Xiaoran as she held her long sword.

Chu Xiaoran conjured out her Aspect Totem from the beginning as she wanted to end the battle quickly.

"A wise decision!" The child praised her.

Yi Yun and Chu Xiaoran were battling against seven opponents. As such, their stamina was especially important. They had to conserve their strength for every battle and they could not drag

any of the battles out for too long.

"Roar!"

The wolf howled and charged at Lin Tong.

At the same time, Chu Xiaoran slashed with her sword. A cold wave surged. One ice column after another began appearing above the purple tungsten stage as they trapped Lin Tong!

This was Chu Xiaoran's frost ice area of influence. Yi Yun had experienced this move a year ago.

But the current Chu Xiaoran was a lot more skillful with her frost ice area of influence. The power could not be compared to what it was in the past!

"Peng Peng Peng!"

The ice columns exploded into countless pieces of ice crystals as they shot towards Lin Tong.

This was an attack with no room to dodge. Even with Yi Yun's large success stage of Minute Subtlety, he would not be able to dodge this!

At the same time, Chu Xiaoran's sword and the Glacier Snow Wolf had shot at Lin Tong as two beams of light.

It was a three-prong attack!

Chu Xiaoran had used all her techniques from the beginning!

Against this storm-like attack, Lin Tong had no way of dodging, but at the same time, he did not have any intentions to dodge.

He roared deeply and all his Yuan Qi exploded as he rapidly circulated his Qi to form a huge whirlpool.

"Peng Peng Peng!"

Numerous ice crystals bounced off the Yuan Qi whirlpool the moment they collided with it.

The concept of rotation!

Lin Tong had used his rotation powers to deflect all the ice crystals!

At the same time, Lin Tong's hands extended forward. Twelve small umbrellas flew out from his palms. The large ones were the size of a face basin, while the small ones were the size of a bowl. There were all sorts of colors and they were extremely pretty.

The small umbrellas twirled around as they flew towards Chu Xiaoran.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

With the sharp hum of air being sliced through, shiny razors suddenly emerged from the umbrellas. What were originally pretty spinning small umbrellas now became ferocious death-seeking flywheels!

The twelve flywheels blocked off Chu Xiaoran's multi-pronged attack from twelve different directions. Lin Tong was forcing Chu Xiaoran to back away.

Lin Tong had broken through Chu Xiaoran's three pronged attack, which seemingly had no room for dodging.

However, when facing off against the twelve flywheels, a flash of determination appeared in Chu Xiaoran's eyes. She gritted her teeth and twisted her body in an incredulous fashion and went straight through a gap amidst the twelve flywheels!

Hard-Soft concept!

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

But no matter how perfect Chu Xiaoran's Hard-Soft concept was, she was not able to dodge the flywheels perfectly.

Three flywheels scratched Chu Xiaoran's shoulders and belly.

Blood splattered!

"Die!"

Chu Xiaoran stabbed straight at Lin Tong's face with a death blow!

"What!?"

Lin Tong retreated in shock. His hands formed seals and a large umbrella opened up to protect him!

"Peng!"

With an explosion, Chu Xiaoran's sword had pierced through the large umbrella. Sword beams exploded as the large umbrella vibrated violently.

And at that moment, Chu Xiaoran's Glacier Snow Wolf had charged from behind Lin Tong biting his shoulder.

Lin Tong cried out in shock. His shoulder had been torn apart by the wolf's teeth. His Yuan Qi had diminished and he was unable to maintain the large umbrella in his hands.

And at that moment, Chu Xiaoran had barely managed to gather a little bit of Yuan Qi to shoot sword beams at him!

"Peng!"

The large umbrella exploded and dispersed into Yuan Qi. The sword beams were relentless as they collided with Lin Tong's protective Yuan Qi.

Lin Tong spit out a mouthful of blood and flew backward, landing heavily outside the stage.

That large umbrella was Lin Tong's Aspect Totem.

Some warriors' Aspect Totems would not be in the shape of a desolate beast. It could be related to their cultivation techniques or the weapons they used.

Lin Tong was the latter. He cultivated the concept of rotation. It was not a very powerful law but it was very effective.

"Lin Tong has been defeated!"

The Tai Ah Divine City camp's spirits rose the moment they saw the battle end.

In this battle that went by like a flash, Chu Xiaoran had attacked decisively. She had defeated the storm-like Lin Tong, a strong cultivator from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom!

This was greatly encouraging.

However, there were people who worried for Chu Xiaoran. Yi Yun sighed silently after seeing the wounds on Chu Xiaoran's shoulders and belly.

The wounds were very deep. Lin Tong was very powerful and Chu Xiaoran had aimed for a quick and decisive battle. To save her stamina, she had to forcefully attack. With injuries like that, Chu Xiaoran's battle prowess would be greatly reduced.

Chapter 320: The Saber That Pressed Forward With Indomitable Will

"Well done, senior Xiaoran!"

As Chu Xiaoran got off the stage, a few of the Tai Ah Divine City juniors rushed forward to give Chu Xiaoran some healing medicine. However, Chu Xiaoran's complexion was unnaturally red. The moment she got off the stage, she suddenly shook and spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Senior Xiaoran!" Wen Yu and company jumped with fright. They quickly rushed to grab Chu Xiaoran.

Yi Yun looked at Chu Xiaoran's wounds and frowned, her injuries were more serious than he imagined. Lin Tong was indeed not an average cultivator. He had cultivated the uncommon concept of rotation, so all of his attacks included a spiral force to them.

Although Chu Xiaoran did not seem to have been hit in any vital spots, but the spiral force from the flywheels had penetrated Chu Xiaoran's meridians through the wounds, causing her meridians and organs to be damaged.

This sort of injury needed at least one to two days for it to completely heal. It was highly unlikely that Chu Xiaoran would be able to use half of her strength in battle with an injury like that.

With so many strong enemies to face, Chu Xiaoran's 50% battle

power was clearly insufficient.

"Sorry...I wanted to finished it quickly, but I never expected it that...the gains could not make up for the losses."

After spitting out a mouthful of blood, the redness in Chu Xiaoran's face disappeared and she turned pale.

Yi Yun shook his head, "If you did not finish it quickly, you would have consumed too much Yuan Qi and end up too weak to fight. The outcome would have been the same."

Lin Tong was indeed very strong. With Chu Xiaoran's strength, she was unable to battle again after beating Lin Tong.

The people in the Elder stands saw the scene of Chu Xiaoran spitting blood.

"Such a pity. It seems that there is only Yi Yun left. And he has six opponents left." A Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder took pleasure for their misfortunes.

Yi Yun was facing an elimination tag team battle. He might not enough last long enough to face Jun Yue.

At that moment, a person from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom walked up the stage. This person was extremely thin. He gave a sense of fragility but his eyes looked like a blade. There was some killing intent in them.

"It's Kui Yu! He is actually second up! He defeated Qiuniu before!"

A junior standing beside Yi Yun exclaimed after seeing this skeleton-like person walk up the stage.

"Oh?" Yi Yun was slightly shocked. So this was the person that Qiuniu lost to.

"Kui Yu was born in a Divine Wilderness mystic clan. His mystic clan has the ability to create puppets. And this Kui Yu is a puppet master himself!"

"Kui Yu? An odd name..." Yi Yun had heard of Divine Wilderness mystic clans in the past. There were some tribal clans that had a long history of living in certain areas of the Divine Wilderness. This tribal clans were not as backward as the small tribal clans in the Cloud Wilderness. As the Divine Wilderness was extremely dangerous, for any mortal tribe clan to survive and live on in the Divine Wilderness, they had certain fortes.

They often had a unique heritage that was very difficult to deal with.

"I never expected a descendant from a Divine Wilderness mystic clan to go to the Yun Long 72 Pagodas for training..."

"Brother Yi, be careful. That Kui Yu is very tough. A puppet master's weakness is his own body, but when puppet masters fight,

they would enter into a puppet with super strong defenses. It would be like a turtle shell. Although it does not have any offensive power, nor does it have the advantage of speed, it is extremely resistant to attacks."

"Kui Yu is no different. When he enters his 'turtle shell', he would command his puppets to battle from within. If you were to attack his main body, then it would be over. Because as you are attacking, his puppets would take advantage of the moment when you run out of Yuan Qi and launch killing blows!"

Wen Yu finally showed her usefulness at that moment. She knew a lot about the Yun Long Divine Kingdom experts, and she searched for a lot of information about Kui Yu as well.

Wen Yu carried on, "To deal with Kui Yu, the best approach is to attack all of his puppets first. Once you get rid of all his puppets, he would be like a tiger without claws and teeth. It would not be sufficient to cause fear. Although his main body would still have strong defenses, he would not be able to fight without his puppets. At that point, he would just be a moving target, so it will be easy to defeat him then!"

"But... dealing with Kui Yu's puppets is not easy!"

Wen Yu really did do her homework. She again introduced Kui Yu's weaknesses. "Puppets are refined using special techniques. It is either made of metallic armor or strong scale armor from desolate beast corpses. These puppets have high defenses, so it would be very difficult to damage a puppet directly!"

"But thankfully, puppets have a weakness... Every puppet has a core array within their body. It is used to receive the instructions from their owner. Although each core array have layers of protection, just destroying the array will make destroying the entire puppet much easier. As long as you destroy the array, then the puppet will be an immobile object. If so, then Senior Yi can win!"

Wen Yu said all of that in one breath. Yi Yun nodded upon hearing it and gave a simple reply, "Got it."

Wen Yu was overjoyed. She had finally made herself useful.

After this, Yi Yun walked up onto the stage.

Kui Yu laughed without any restraint and quipped, "Are you discussing battle strategies? Hehe! That young lady seems to be prepared. She must have told you to attack my puppets' core array, right?"

Wen Yu had spoke to Yi Yun using Yuan Qi transmissions, so it was impossible for Kui Yu to have heard them. However, he was able to guess what she had said.

Wen Yu's expression changed. It did not feel good to be completely grasped by others.

"Unfortunately, although the battle strategy given by this young

lady is good, it is useless against me. I am completely different from other puppet masters. It has to do with my blood lineage, Je Je Je Je!"

Kui Yu laughed strangely. Wen Yu's expression turned increasingly ugly after she heard what he said. She lost all confidence the moment Kui Yu said those words.

With blood lineage coming into play, it was hard to tell. It was possible that Kui Yu did not need to use a core array to control his puppets.

Wen Yu felt a sense of defeat. Was all the intelligence she gathered wrong?

"But, that young lady said something right. That is... my main body's defense has no weaknesses!"

Kui Yu suddenly let out a hoarse scream. His body shrank and completely entered a turtle shell-like puppet.

The turtle shell puppet was dome shaped and made of some unknown alloy. Its surface, which was covered in mysterious lines, shimmered. These lines were injected with Yuan Qi, forming a Yuan Qi shield.

There were two layers of defense!

The audience were secretly horrified. If Yi Yun wanted to harm

Kui Yu's actual body, he had to break through two layers of protection. The difficulty to break through a Yuan Qi layer of protection and an additional alloy shell was obvious.

And the surrounding puppets would not let Yi Yun attack Kui Yu's main body freely.

"Ka Ka Ka Ka!"

Eight puppets appeared around Kui Yu.

These eight puppets were all sorts of shapes and sizes. Some were made of pure metal and others were made from some unknown divine wood. And he had desolate beast corpses as well.

The eight puppets held different types of weapons. They formed a battle array around Kui Yu, keeping Kui Yu in the middle!

"Oh no. Back when he was fighting Qiuniu, Kui Yu only used six puppets! Now against Yi Yun, not only is he using eight puppets in an array, but with his main body's crazy defense, Kui Yu would be invincible! And he also said that he does not have the weaknesses of typical puppet masters! How can we beat against him?"

Yi Yun's expression turned slightly sullen upon facing the puppet battle array. He rubbed his interspatial ring and pulled out a long saber from within.

This saber was entirely black. The blade was about two-fingers

wide and it was exactly five feet in length.

The blade was straight and it shone beautifully. Its body was engraved with beautiful patterns that looked similar to crushed ice.

The saber's name was Sonic Deathblade and it was a weapon that Yi Yun had selected from the Tai Ah Divine City armory.

The meaning behind the Sonic Deathblade's name was that it could kill people just from the sound waves emitted from brandishing the saber!

After being used to the Thousand Army Saber, Yi Yun still preferred straight sabers that were like Tang sabers. The Sonic Deathblade was slightly shorter than the Thousand Army Saber, but its quality was far beyond it!

"Oh? Finally using your saber? This would be fun! Unfortunately, it is still useless!" Kui Yu's hoarse voice could be heard from within the turtle shell.

At that moment, Yi Yun moved. He leaped forward and charged straight at the puppet battle array.

"Phew—"

Yi Yun's Yuan Qi exploded and like the flare of the Sun, the Yuan Qi that appeared formed a phantom image of the Tang Valley

behind him.

Radiant Sun Qi!

Yi Yun's eyes flashed as killing intent surged out like a tidal wave from his body!

“Phew! Phew! Phew!”

The eight puppets moved and they began to gather around Yi Yun.

At that moment, Yi Yun reduced the footprint of the Sonic Deathblade. Without using his blade, he rushed straight inside the puppet battle array with just his body.

These puppets were extremely fast, rows of sharp blades and sharp claws hacked at Yi Yun!

Yi Yun's mind was as still as water. He began to use his large success stage of Minute Subtlety and took advantage of the successive order of the puppets' attacks to dodge every one of their attacks using incredible angles. In a blink of an eye, he had rushed at Kui Yu's main body!

The Sonic Deathblade that had been pulled back suddenly flashed a cold brilliance!

He was attacking the main body immediately!?

The audience were surprised. Yi Yun did not look for the puppets' weaknesses and he targeted Kui Yu's main body. But Kui Yu's body had two layers of protection and was almost invulnerable!

In the Elder stands, smiles formed on many of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders' lips.

Attacking Kui Yu's main body was a fool's errand. It was equivalent to digging one's grave.

They seemed to imagine the scenes of Yi Yun's attacking with no avail. And right at the moment when he lost his momentum, he would be surrounded and attacked by all the puppets, resulting in him vomiting blood from his heavy injuries.

The thoughts of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders had coincided with Kui Yu's in his turtle shell.

He grinned cheekily. As he powered the turtle shell puppet's defensive shield, he gathered energy in preparation for his counter attack.

In front of him, Yi Yun was not distracted. Yi Yun's body was covered in killing intent and it was raised to an extreme, merging with the Radiant Sun Qi as one!

The saber truth, pressing forward with an indomitable will!

The Sonic Deathblade issued out a long cry and it became one with Yi Yun!

One With the Saber!

"Cha!"

The bright blade beam slashed through the sky, making the celestial bodies lose their color. The only thing that was left behind was the blade beam that shone like the bright Sun!

This saber hit the turtle shell puppet without any fanciful moves!

"Boom!"

A terrifying explosion sounded. The Radiant Sun Qi flooded the audience's visual facilities, they could not see what had happened.

After the flash disappeared, what remained was a jaw-dropping scene. The five-foot-long Sonic Deathblade had completely pierced through Kui Yu's turtle shell.

It had penetrated from one side and out the other, revealing a three-inch-long blade tip on the other side and it was dyed with blood...

Kui Yu and his turtle shell puppet had been...penetrated!?

Chapter 321: The Precise Saber

The five foot long Sonic Deathblade had stabbed right through, till the base of the blade. The front portion of the shell had already started to crack. Due to the powerful impact, the purple tungsten tiles below the turtle shell had slightly cratered downwards.

It was obvious how powerful Yi Yun's attack was.

And at that moment, Yi Yun was still holding onto the Sonic Deathblade's hilt. Behind him, the eight puppets that had been rushing to attack him had all lost their ability to move and just stood in their spots like straw men.

The entire arena turned silent. Everyone was extremely shocked, especially the people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. They found it impossible to accept the situation right in front of them.

Yi Yun's saber had pierced through Kui Yu...

Kui Yu's main body, whose defense he was proud of, was not even able to withstand a single blow from Yi Yun.

Originally, people thought that Yi Yun would attempt to look for Kui Yu's weakness.

However, he unexpectedly, brutally, attacked Kui Yu's main body. In front of an absolute attack, Kui Yu's defense as well as his puppets lost their meaning.

"Is Kui Yu dead?" The Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors said as if they just woke up from a dream.

That impact, coupled with his body being pierced through like that, likely meant that the odds were greatly against him being alive.

"This Yi Yun is too ruthless!"

Many of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors saw the killing intent that accompanied Yi Yun's gaze. Although the alliance tournament would not hold someone accountable if they did not have the intent to cause death, the killer would still be hated by others if someone really died.

A Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder disappeared and appeared on the stage. His face was sour as he pressed onto Kui Yu's turtle shell puppet with one hand.

"Ka-cha!"

The turtle shell was removed by the Elder through some unknown technique.

At that moment, everyone could clearly see that Kui Yu's chest had been penetrated straight through by the Sonic Deathblade.

His face was pale and his forehead was covered in sweat as his body slightly trembled.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder's face turned increasingly ugly.

He did not dare to rashly pull out the Sonic Deathblade. He placed one hand on Kui Yu's chest, intending to inject Yuan Qi into him to extend his life.

At the same moment, he took out a sacred healing pill from his interspatial ring to feed Kui Yu.

However, the moment he rested his hand on Kui Yu's chest, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder's expression suddenly changed.

"Oh?"

He realized that Yi Yun's saber had pierced right through Kui Yu's body, without causing much damage to his meridians, even his organs were intact.

Yi Yun's saber had pierced through a narrow gap between Kui Yu's heart and right lung.

Although it seemed to have pierced through his chest, he was not greatly injured.

"The saber pierced through the gap between the organs!?"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder looked incredulously at Yi Yun.

The organs of a human body were basically stuck to each other. It was difficult to explain this phenomena just by luck.

The organs' placement are slightly different in everybody's body, so to avoid stabbing an organ was extremely difficult to do. Some saber users could sometimes do it with their intuition. However, just now, Kui Yu's body had been hidden within his turtle shell puppet. Not even his position was clear, so how was Yi Yun able to attack him so precisely with his saber?

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder looked deeply at Yi Yun, "Yi Yun right? I will remember you!"

This Elder tapped on Kui Yu's acupuncture points to stop the flowing blood.

"Can I pull away my blade?"

Yi Yun had opened his Purple Crystal's energy vision in his attack. He was able to see the placement of Kui Yu's organs, so although his attack looked fatal, Kui Yu was not severely injured at all.

"Hmph!" The Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder grunted as he

flicked the blade with his fingers.

"Clang!"

The Sonic Deathblade emitted a clear sound as it flew straight out and into Yi Yun's hands.

Yi Yun wiped the blade with one hand, and all the blood on the Sonic Deathblade had been cleanly dropped off. Not a single blood drop was left on the blade.

A saber was chief amongst weapons. In terms of variations of moves, it was inferior to a sword, but in terms of attack power, it exceeded that of a sword.

In the countries of mortals, to prevent citizens from rebelling, sabers and crossbows were banned while swords and bows were permitted. This explained things clearly. In the hands of mortals, a saber's destructive power exceeded that of a sword by a lot.

After Kui Yu was defeated, there were only five people left on the Yun Long Divine Kingdom side.

Yi Yun stood on the stage with the Sonic Deathblade in hand. His blade formed an angle with the ground as he waited for the next person to come on stage.

"Yun Long Divine Kingdom, who is fighting next?"

The referee shouted loudly on stage as he looked at the people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

Who should go up?

The few people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom looked at each other. They did not know who to send. Many of them were even weaker than Lin Tong.

As for Kui Yu, he was stronger than Lin Tong. In the previous small team matches, Kui Yu fought as the leader and defeated Qiuniu, proving his strength.

Yi Yun had instantly defeated Kui Yu, so if they were to go up, they would most likely end up worse than him.

Against such a strong opponent as Yi Yun, the people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom were experiencing tremendous pressure. With so many important figures focusing on them, not one of them wished to be tortured by Yi Yun on stage. It was a very embarrassing outcome.

"I'll fight..."

At that moment, a deep voice said. Jun Yue stood up.

"Jun Yue..."

When they saw Jun Yue standing up, they clearly showed greater respect.

Jun Yue said, "The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom side still has three people who have not gone on stage. However, this group championship is eventually still a contest between me and Yi Yun."

As he was speaking, Jun Yue had already walked up on the stage. He stood 100 feet away from Yi Yun.

"Jun Yue has gone on stage. The number one person amongst our Yun Long Divine Kingdom's younger generation. To think that he went on stage so early... against Yi Yun..."

People originally thought that Jun Yue was the leader amongst their leaders. That he only needed to fight at the end, or might not even need to at all.

However, now, before even 15 minutes had passed, Jun Yue had already gone up on stage to have a showdown with Yi Yun.

And the outcome of this battle determined the group champion.

Jun Yue...

Yi Yun opened his Purple Crystal's energy vision. In the Purple Crystal's vision, Jun Yue's body was surging with energy. Standing

on stage, he looked like the bright moon in the night sky.

"Senior Yi, this person's attainments in the Metal laws are extremely high. When fighting against him, be careful of the ground beneath you. He can control even the purple tungsten ground."

At that moment, Wen Yu's Yuan Qi transmission reached Yi Yun's ear.

Yi Yun nodded slightly. The Yun Long Divine Kingdom was filled with elites. Their areas of expertise and their battle strategies were all different. To fight against them on the same stage benefited him by broadening his horizons.

"Jun Yue, just over fifteen years of age, and more than a year older than Yi Yun. You will need to suppress your cultivation level by half a small realm." The referee in charge of the group match said.

Jun Yue's cultivation level was at the peak of the early stages of the Yuan Foundation realm. After suppressing it by half a small realm, he was still in the beginning stages of the Yuan Foundation realm, which was still higher than Yi Yun's.

Jun Yue nodded. Suppressing his cultivation level was very easy. It could be accomplished by injecting a seal mark into his body.

Chapter 322: Fighting Jun Yue

Jun Yue stood on the stage where his entire body felt like a sword. He looked at Yi Yun and smiled, "I've been paying close attention to you for a long while."

Yi Yun looked at Jun Yue as his heart jumped.

"Amongst all the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators, you are the one I want to fight the most! Now, without anyone interfering with our battle, you will be able to fight in your best condition, so this battle is how I like it. I have been looking forward to this battle with you!"

Jun Yue said as he took a weapon out from his interspatial ring. It was a sword.

The sword was extremely long. It was even longer than the Thousand Army Saber. The sword's blade was broad, its width was about a foot long. The blade's central ridge was about an inch thick.

It was an extremely heavy sword.

The audience gasped when they saw the sword. Not many of them had seen a sword with such an exaggerated size like that before. Even if they did, it was usually an ornamental sword. They had never seen one being used to kill enemies.

This sword looked like it was like a door that was split in the middle, with the two halves connected together.

It did not look easy for a person to hold such a sword.

"How do you brandish such a heavy sword? It cannot be used agilely." A Tai Ah Divine City warrior said. Although there was a saying that the longer a weapon was, the stronger it was, it did not really mean that it was that much better the longer it became.

A sword that exceeded one's height by more than 100% would be severely constricted them when it was brandished.

But just as the Tai Ah Divine City warrior was midway through his words, he shut himself up.

This was because he was shocked at what he saw. Jun Yue had casually released his hand and the sword began floating in midair. Following that, Jun Yue landed on the sword's blade with a gentle leap.

"What?"

Many of the audience were dumbfounded. You could do that?

Wasn't this flying on a sword?

Yuan Foundation realm warriors could not really fly, but by

standing on the large sword, Jun Yue was able to fly in any direction. This was no doubt the advantage of having a large sword.

When one's insight into the laws reaches a certain realm, they are able to use all sort of bizarre combat techniques. This was the power of the laws.

"I'm going to attack."

Before Jun Yue attacked, he warned Yi Yun, showing his great confidence!

"Cha!"

A sword beam flashed as Jun Yue flew towards Yi Yun while standing on the large sword!

This sword's speed was extremely fast. It was very difficult to tell its trajectory!

Just as the sword was about 30 feet away from Yi Yun, a “Ka” sound rang, and the sword's body split!

"What!?"

Yi Yun constricted his pupils. He saw that the large sword had split into 24 flying swords.

The huge sword was not one sword, but it was made up of 24 swords. No wonder it was that big!

In this split second, Yi Yun did not have time to think carefully. The 24 flying swords had surrounded him!

Minute Subtlety!

Yi Yun's body began creating multiple after-images as he retreated hurriedly!

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

There were about 20 sword marks on the purple tungsten tiles on the ground. At the same time, two of the flying swords flew close to Yi Yun's cheek and body. The sharp sword wind cut through Yi Yun's Yuan Qi protection and two bloody slashes appeared on Yi Yun's face and body.

"Your speed is very fast, too bad..."

Jun Yue gripped both his hands, "Ka Ka Ka!"

The purple tungsten tiles underneath Yi Yun's feet sprouted out metallic poles about the thickness of a thumb.

These metallic poles immediately formed a cage the moment Yi

Yun landed, trapping him in it.

"How are you going to dodge this time?"

With a thought, more than 20 flying swords flew towards Yi Yun who was in the metallic cage!

At that split moment, Yi Yun roared, and his body's Radiant Sun Qi erupted like a volcano!

The power of the pure Yang flames burnt the metallic cage and turned it into molten metal. Yi Yun flew out of it.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

The place Yi Yun was originally standing was instantly diced.

And at that moment, Yi Yun changed directions in the air. With the Sonic Deathblade in hand, he attacked from top to bottom while charging straight at Jun Yue.

The Saber Truth's 32 Words – Reigning Supreme!

An emerald green saber beam with its formidable presence tore through the air, emitting a sharp howling whistle!

The Sonic Deathblade could kill people just with its sound waves!

Against this attack, Jun Yue remained calm. He stretched out his palm and blocked Yi Yun's attack with just his bare palms.

What!?

The audience were shocked. But just at the moment when Yi Yun's saber was about to slash at Jun Yue's palm, a huge metallic shield appeared in front of Jun Yue's palms.

"Boom!"

The Sonic Deathblade slashed on the metallic shield. The half foot-thick shield was split into two by the Sonic Deathblade. But the remaining saber force had dissipated.

"Good saber technique!" Jun Yue gasped in admiration from the bottom of his heart.

He had always been proud but against a younger Yi Yun, whose cultivation level was lower than his, Jun Yue was still unable to suppress him.

Yi Yun's insight into the the saber truths startled Jun Yue.

The exchanges between the two were so fast that the audience were too engrossed to take a breath.

Jun Yue moved his fingers and the huge metallic shield dissipated, turning into flowing metal that covered Jun Yue's entire body. Slowly, it formed into a metallic armor.

This metallic armor was much more exaggerated than the armor Qiuniu wore. It was impossible to estimate its weight, but Yi Yun knew that the metallic armor would not give Jun Yue the slightest feeling of heaviness. This was because Jun Yue could manipulate it as he wished.

"This battle armor specially made from Tai Cang metal. It follows my every wish. If I were to inject Yuan Qi into it, it will be indestructible. As long as your Yuan Qi is weaker than mine, you have no way of breaking through my defense. Even though my cultivation level is suppressed to the early stage of the Yuan Foundation realm, the amount of Yuan Qi I have far exceeds yours. Therefore, you will not be able to hurt me." Jun Yue's voice was calm as if he was narrating a fact.

"Can't break through your defense?" A flashed beamed in Yi Yun's eyes. He was always very confident in his own attacking power, "Let me try!"

Yi Yun took one step forward before his body transformed into a beam of light, heading straight for Jun Yue!

Boom!

The Radiant Sun Qi exploded behind Yi Yun, forming the phantom image of the Tang Valley.

Yi Yun's Sonic Deathblade began burning with pure Yang flames.

Saber Truth's 32 Words–One With the Saber!

"Cha!"

With a slash, the pure Yang flames exploded, flooding everyone's vision with white light.

Yi Yun's saber had made its impact on Jun Yue's armor. From the right shoulder to the left thigh, the blade edge slashed past. The vicinity of the blade mark on the metallic armor had been melted. There was a shocking one meter long blade mark!

"Oh?"

Yi Yun was surprised. He did not hold back with this attack, but at the moment the Sonic Deathblade slashed on Jun Yue, he felt Yuan Qi surge in Jun Yue's armor. Jun Yue's Yuan Qi had combined with the metallic essence as one, and had greatly dissipated his Radiant Sun Qi.

He had not been able to hurt Jun Yue's body!

"Good attack!" Jun Yue gritted his teeth. He began circulating his Yuan Qi. After enduring Yi Yun's attack, the veins on his forehead bulged, making him look ferocious.

"But...you are still lacking by just a bit..." Jun Yue grinned. A flash appeared in his eyes!

"Cha!"

24 flying swords around Jun Yue suddenly came stabbing towards Yi Yun!

"Boom!"

The 24 flying swords impaled the purple tungsten ground. With his Yuan Qi exploding, Yi Yun used his large success stage of Minute Subtlety. However, he was still hit by the energy. He flew back and when he landed, he moved back another tens of feet. His Qi and blood was in chaos.

Jun Yue's defense was too strong. It was completely on a different level from Kui Yu who Yi Yun had previously defeated.

Jun Yue was not bragging about the so-called absolute defense. Anyone whose Yuan Qi was inferior to his could not break through his armor.

At that moment, Jun Yue's armor had already begun repairing. The large saber mark that Yi Yun had left behind was slowly disappearing.

Soon, the saber mark had completely disappeared, and the armor looked as good as new. It was as if Yi Yun had never slashed on it before.

The Tai Ah Divine City audience did not know what to say upon seeing this scene.

This kind of manipulation of the laws was too terrifying. If one could not break through Jun Yue's defense in one strike, then he would just restore it again.

"Jun Yue! Jun Yue!"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom cultivators began cheering.

The female cultivators were the ones who screamed the most passionately. In the world of warriors, the men who were strong and had extraordinary talent would easily win the hearts of women.

"Jun Yue is sure to win!"

"Wipe the Tai Ah Divine City! Kill all these useless fools!"

People from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom began shouting even louder, while the people from the Tai Ah Divine City did not look so good.

At that moment, Jun Yue was indeed mighty. He was wearing armor that had incredulous weight and 24 flying swords were revolving around him.

These swords were all of different weights and lengths. The presence they gave off was full of power.

With his strong defense and incredible attacking strength, it made others not be able to muster the courage to fight him.

Yi Yun's expression was solemn.

This opponent was indeed tricky.

The five-elemental laws may be lower in grade than the pure Yang laws, but when the other party's insight into the laws exceeded his, then the power the laws would give could not be measured by the differing grades in the laws.

Yi Yun only wanted to use his Aspect Totem as a last resort as it was too shocking. He would have to come up with explanations if he were to use it.

But now, it seemed like typical attacks would not be able to beat Jun Yue.

By controlling the metallic armor, Jun Yue began to slowly fly. Up in the air, he looked down at Yi Yun with a commanding presence.

The 24 swords were around his body, arranged in a manner similar to a peacock's revealed tail.

"Your speed is very fast and your movement techniques are strong. Even when I power my swords with all my strength, I still can't seriously injure you, so I have no choice but to use my last sword."

Jun Yue said this as his body began sparking with streams of rainbow light. A purple energy sword appeared from behind him before landing in his hand.

This energy sword was thin and long. It looked like a purple light beam had shot out from Jun Yue's hand.

Many in the audience were greatly alarmed seeing the purple beam.

"Aspect Totem, this is Jun Yue's Aspect Totem!"

A sword-shaped Aspect Totem was the Aspect Totem that swordsmen dreamed of.

By conjuring his Aspect Totem, Jun Yue was prepared to go all out!

Chapter 323: Luminous Moon Against The Radiant Sun

Being covered in metallic heavy armor and with the Totem beam sword in hand, Jun Yue looked like a war god.

"Yi Yun! I've conjured my Aspect Totem to fight you, even though I am one realm higher than you. You should be proud!"

Jun Yue's voice resounded throughout the arena. It was a shockingly powerful.

"My Totem sword is 100% faster than my flying swords. Your movement technique is extremely fast; but now we shall see, how you are going to dodge my sword."

As Jun Yue said this, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors began to cheer.

"Jun Yue! Attack!"

Many of them were shouting as the atmosphere went into a frenzy. In the world of warriors, nothing was more exciting than watching experts fight on the same stage. National pride also rested on the outcome of this battle, so their emotions were easily incited.

With the beam sword in hand, Jun Yue raised it above his head.

Although he had an indifferent attitude, he could not help but become intoxicated by the excited cheers.

He gave a deep roar as the 24 swords around him shot out like raindrops in a storm!

After Jun Yue conjured his Aspect Totem, the 24 swords were much faster than before!

Yi Yun constricted his pupils and quickly retreated.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

The purple tungsten tiles where Yi Yun originally stood cracked. At the same moment, Jun Yue's beam sword already came slashing down at Yi Yun!

This sword had locked onto Yi Yun's location and it came at him with an irresistible force!

Extreme Kill – Vault of Heaven Luminous Moon Sword!

The moment Jun Yue brandished his sword, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi gathered behind him, forming a emerald green phantom image that resembled the luminous moon.

The luminous moon dangling in the sky was covered in mist, making it look mysterious, as if it was something untouchable.

As for the Totem sword in Jun Yue's hands, it suddenly rose up. The sword became like a light pillar, shooting straight into the clouds. This slash from the sword seemed to be able to split apart the vaults of heaven.

At that moment, Jun Yue's domineering armor and his beautiful swordplay made a perfect combination. It created a strong visual impact, making the cheers in the crowd reach a crescendo!

Yi Yun's mind was as still as water when facing this sword. With both of his hands holding the saber, he circulated his body's energy as the Radiant Sun Qi began to burn.

Yi Yun knew that the Saber Truth's 32 Words' saber intent and the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' were not enough to withstand Jun Yue's attack. Neither could they break through Jun Yue's absolute defense.

Yi Yun sent his thoughts into the Purple Crystal, within the Purple Crystal's core was a small flame, quietly burning.

This small flame was the pure Yang spirit Yi Yun had captured in the burning hell.

The pure Yang spirit was a divine item that had been condensed from the infinite pure Yang essence within Fallen Star Gate. Even sages would find it difficult to refine it in a few hundred years alone. And now, it was sealed within the Purple Crystal, becoming the Purple Crystal's own source of pure Yang energy.

"Your strength shall be given to me!"

In his spiritual world, Yi Yun looked straight at the pure Yang spirit within the Purple Crystal. His voice had a domineering aspect to it.

The Purple Crystal began to gather Heaven Earth Yuan Qi as energy began to rapidly circulate. With an explosive boom, what was at first a small flame quietly burning suddenly shot up!

Extremely pure Yang energy surged throughout Yi Yun's meridians. At that moment, burning pure Yang Qi poured out from all of the pores of his body as he circulated the burning flame.

It was as if Yi Yun's body had changed into that of the Sun.

The Saber Truth's 32 Words – Reigning Supreme!

With the Sonic Deathblade in hand, Yi Yun's slash was as if a mighty god had descended, as if a Sun had entered the mortal realm.

The Tang Valley image behind Yi Yun was like a huge picture scroll. It covered the entire arena. If one looked from up high, they would see that, above the arena's dome, was a burning Yuan Qi flame.

"Huh!?"

Jun Yue was greatly alarmed but he still powered his Vault of Heaven Luminous Moon Sword and slashed at Yi Yun.

The Luminous Moon against the Radiant Sun, Metal against pure Yang!

"Boom!"

A terrifying explosion happened and the world turned silent. The expressions of everyone present froze as they could only stare. They looked at the pure Yang flame, burning in the air. It was like as if a Sun had swallowed the luminous moon!

Metal melted while pure Yang Qi flared.

Jun Yue let out a deep growl as his Totem sword was split apart by Yi Yun's slash!

Yi Yun's saber did not stop and carried on slashing at Jun Yue's armor. From his shoulder to his thigh, the saber slashed diagonally!

"Peng!"

Jun Yue flew out and heavily slammed into the purple tungsten walls by the side of the Divine Wilderness Stage.

A foot-long purple tungsten wall was brought down by Jun Yue's impact!

"Ka Ka Ka!"

Jun Yue's battle armor was torn apart. His metallic armor could not withstand the burning power of the pure Yang energy. It began to melt from the middle while Yi Yun's pure Yang saber Qi entered deeply into Jun Yue's body, burning all his internal organs and meridians.

Jun Yue spit out a mouthful of blood as his face flushed red while his body trembled.

A bloody line went from his shoulder to his thigh as blood spurted out, but it was instantly incinerated by the burning hot armor.

Yi Yun's attack had completely cut through Jun Yue's flesh and ribs!

Besides his saber injury, there was the internal injuries caused by the pure Yang Qi. The injuries he suffered were horrible.

Yi Yun landed on the tip of his feet with the Sonic Deathblade in hand. The Sonic Deathblade was not covered in blood but had turned heated red from the pure Yang Qi.

The attack Yi Yun used was powered by the pure Yang spirit's energy. As a medium between the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi and the pure Yang spirit, Yi Yun had consumed a lot of Yuan Qi himself.

At that moment, the pure Yang Qi around him was still burning. The rising golden flames left a long trail from Yi Yun's descent. They looked like the beautiful scene of a phoenix's tail feathers fluttering.

The entire audience turned silent upon seeing this.

Especially the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors. They went from frenzied cheers to dead silence. Everything had happened in just a few seconds, resulting in many of their frenzied expressions still being fixed on their faces.

Jun Yue was defeated?

At the last moment, Jun Yue had conjured his Aspect Totem and went all out, but he still lost to Yi Yun even at his peak.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors could not believe it.

Many of the obsessed girls that were crazy over Jun Yue still had their mouths agape.

Many of them had admired Jun Yue for a long time. He was the unbeatable war god in their hearts, but now, Jun Yue had been defeated.

"How was Yi Yun's last attack so powerful?"

Many people were privately discussing. In the beginning, Yi Yun clearly could not cut through Jun Yue's defenses, but his last attack actually defeated him in one strike!

"I do not know. Maybe this is his hidden move."

People could only comprehend it this way. The pure Yang spirit was hidden within the Purple Crystal which was within Yi Yun's body. When it spewed out pure Yang energy, it was not much different from the pure Yang energy that Yi Yun usually gave off. As such, no one noticed it. They only felt that Yi Yun's Yang Qi's purity and strength rose a level during this sudden explosive display.

Medical personnel rushed to the side of the stage and began checking on Jun Yue's injuries.

Jun Yue's was badly injured. In the last instant, Yi Yun was fighting against Jun Yue who was at his peak. He could not go easy or he would definitely be defeated.

"Yi Yun vs Jun Yue. Victor, Yi Yun!"

The Tai Ah Divine City law-enforcer announced the outcome of the battle. Even the law-enforcer, who was usually cold, was so excited that his voice actually trembled.

The victory in this match meant that the teenager group champion most likely belonged to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!

After a few moments of silence, the audience burst out into a tumultuous cheer.

"Yi Yun! Yi Yun!"

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were all shouting loudly. Their expressions were that of joy and frenzy!

From the beginning, as the Tai Ah Divine City warriors were lacking in strength, they did not bear too much hope. When they suddenly obtained the final victory, this unexpected joy made them become ecstatic.

"This kid sure fought well! Hahaha!" In the Elder stands, Cang Yan began laughing loudly. The grin on his face nearly reached his ear lobes. Yi Yun's victory made this old man, who did not have much of an image, become highly conceited. He suddenly recalled something and looked sideways at the two Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders who previously looked down on Yi Yun. That expression seemed to read, "The two of you, shall we talk about my ass from yesterday?"

The two Elders, whose expressions were already ugly, now saw Cang Yan's wretched smile dangling in front of them like a chrysanthemum flower. It looked as if they had swallowed a huge house fly, and it was the type that had a green head.

They could only ignore Cang Yan. They knew that, the moment they responded, they would end up being ridiculed.

"Yi Yun really gave me a great surprise!"

Even the calm and indifferent Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was in a good mood as he gave a heartfelt laughter.

Beside him, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner's face was now gloomy.

The outcome of the battle had completely gone beyond his expectations.

He had originally proposed the alliance tournament because he knew of the Yun Long 72 Pagodas' few geniuses in the younger generation. They were invincible against their peers. And with the Tai Ah Divine City facing the pressure of the Shepherd Boy appearing within the borders of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, they had no way but to compromise.

However, now, Jun Yue's failure was a severe blow to the Seven Star Pagoda Owner! With his loss, the plan of taking 60% of the seats came to an end.

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner took a deep breath and said to the middle-aged scholar, "The teenager group is just the beginning. Sir City Lord, are you not laughing too soon?"

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner did not mince his words towards the middle-aged scholar. He believed that, in the young adult and the overall groups, the Tai Ah Divine City did not have anyone left. Yao Dao and Yang Qian were far from enough. The Yun Long 72 Pagodas would sweep it all, leaving the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom with nothing.

Unfortunately, they had lost the teenager group. Although the Yun Long 72 Pagodas would eventually win, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner could no longer laugh.

He had not expected someone like Yi Yun at all. If he knew about him earlier, he would not have separated the teenager and the young adult matches. There would only be an overall group and all the seats would be determined by the overall group's results. Then, no matter how much of a genius Yi Yun was, he would definitely not be able to win against opponents 4-5 years older than him.

The middle-aged scholar laughed, "I do not ask for much. Your country aimed for the fact that in this year, our Tai Ah Divine City's new crop has yet to come in to replace the old. And, with the pressure from the Shepherd Boy, you forced me to accept the proposed alliance tournament. However, now that the Tai Ah Divine City has won a third of the seats from your hands. Why shouldn't I be laughing?"

"Hmph!"

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner snorted and remained silent. He had divided the cultivators into a teenager and young adult group so that he could showcase the strength of the Yun Long 72 Pagodas,

but he had ended up lifting a stone only to drop it on his own feet.

Chapter 324: The Young Adults Battle

"Does anyone from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom want to challenge Yi Yun?" The referee on the Divine Wilderness Stage asked loudly.

There were still four more people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom left who had not gone up after Yi Yun defeated Jun Yue. They were eligible to challenge Yi Yun.

The four of them had ugly expressions, but none of them really went on stage to fight Yi Yun. The difference in strength was too great, going up on strength would only end with them being brutally beaten up by Yi Yun. As such, whether they went up on stage or not had lost its meaning.

No one answered the referee. After the referee repeated that statement three times, he said loudly, "No one from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom is challenging, so I shall now announce that for the alliance tournament's Tai Ah Divine Kingdom vs Yun Long Divine Kingdom teenager division, the winner is the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!"

The referee's voice was excited as the Tai Ah Divine City audience burst out into a tumultuous cheer.

This victory was really surprising. Having thought that their Tai Ah Divine City's new crop had yet to come in to replace the old, they had still managed to beat the Yun Long 72 Pagodas in the teenager division competition. This result was something to be

proud of.

But not all the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators were happy. At that moment, Li Hong, Yang Haoran and company's faces were ugly listening the tumultuous cheers.

In particular, Yang Haoran was clenching his fist tightly, his nails were lodged deep in his flesh.

See his arch-enemy become the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's hero, even gaining the attention of the City Lord, together with Cang Yan, Jian Ge and Yuehua's support and favor granted to Yi Yun, the hopes of taking revenge on Yi Yun had become a joke.

Compared to the aura of being the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom hero, he, with his broken arm was no different from a lost dog. This difference made Yang Haoran feel anguish that did not need further elaborating.

At that moment, the referee on the Divine Wilderness Stage was also extremely excited as he announced with an exhilarated voice, "Next, we have the young adult division competition. Yun Long Divine Kingdom and Tai Ah Divine Kingdom will have 15-18 year-old cultivators coming to the stage to battle!"

When the referee said this, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's audience became excited. After having their moods dampened by Yi Yun, they were filled with anger. Now that it was the young adult division, their Yun Long Divine Kingdom's young adult division was filled with elites. In comparison, the Tai Ah Divine

City's young adult division was like a handful of kittens. There was no doubt what the outcome of the battle would be.

"Yun Long Divine Kingdom is sure to win!" Some of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom cultivators shouted loudly.

They were looking forward to obtaining revenge for the disgrace they suffered.

"Wipe them out! Wipe out the Tai Ah Divine City!"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience was excited. On the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom side, the audience went tit-for-tat as they cheered as well.

The situation looked as if the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience were almost about to fight.

"It's really crazy!"

Yi Yun, who was on the participant benches, sighed upon seeing this scene. But it was reasonable. In his past life, there were some ball-related sports matches where the audience would become so agitated watching the game that they led to stampedes and other accidents, what more, this is a warrior's world. Compared to the sports matches in his previous life, elites battling against each other was a matter of greater importance and with it came greater excitement.

Yi Yun glanced at Cang Yan who was in the Elder stands. He transmitted his voice, "Senior Cang Yan, I can't participate in the young adult division matches, right?"

Cang Yan, who was still being highly conceited, was shocked hearing Yi Yun's Yuan Qi voice transmission. "No, you can't. However, you can participate in the overall group matches in two days."

The overall group competition was scheduled in two days time to allow the competitors to rest and heal, allowing them to adjust themselves to their optimum states.

"Alright, I got it. Then, I want to go to the sword tomb."

The Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword Dao was extremely profound. Yi Yun always felt his understanding of the sword Dao was still lacking up to this point. The path of martial arts was fraught with dangers and difficulties, and could be said as defying Heaven. Yi Yun had to grab every opportunity to strengthen himself.

"Sword tomb? You are going just like that? Aren't you going to watch the young adult division matches?" Cang Yan said with a shock. "You sure are grabbing every second."

"I'm not going to watch." Yi Yun shook his head. Actually, watching the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's experts' performance before the overall group match was necessary. However, it was not that Yi Yun was being arrogant and underestimating his enemies,

but he guessed that the person he really wanted to see would not appear in the upcoming young adult division matches. Even if the person appeared, that person would not go all out.

In that case, there was not much difference whether he watched or not.

"Alright." Cang Yan nodded and stood up to guide Yi Yun.

At this point, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience's cheers had reached a crescendo. From the Yun Long Divine Kingdom cultivators side, a fatty dressed in yellow jumped on to the Divine Wilderness Stage.

He raised a fist and shouted loudly, "Yun Long is sure to win!"

"Yun Long is sure to win!"

"Yun Long is sure to win!"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience responded like a surging tide.

At that moment, the fatty lowered both his hands, motioning for the crowd to be quiet. He gave a faint smile and looked at the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom cultivators, "Today, I will represent the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and declare war on the Tai Ah Divine City!"

As he said that, he pointed out his index finger and pointed towards the Tai Ah Divine City's side, "Just me alone will be sufficient! Who will fight me? I'll take on as many as you send!"

The fatty's words were highly rousing and it had a provocative vibe to it. When he declared war in such a domineering and arrogant fashion, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience cheered once again. Previously, Yi Yun had won despite being up against five people in the teenager division matches. This made them fume inside, but now with the fatty's domineering declaration of war, all the shame they had suffered was being vented.

All of them were extremely excited.

"Your Tai Ah Divine City may have gone one against many, but so can our Yun Long Divine Kingdom!"

"This darn fatso, who does he think he is?"

On the Tai Ah Divine City side, the participants were furious.

Yang Qian's expression was extremely ugly, "Is he bullying our Tai Ah Divine City as if we don't exist? What does he mean, 'take on as many as you send'. Those words sound so arrogant. We only have two people we can send out for the young adult division."

According to the alliance tournament's rules, everyone was only allowed one defeat. Once they were defeated, they could not carry on participating in the group championships.

Previously, in the Tai Ah Divine City young adult division small group matches, three of the four groups had been wiped out. There was only one group left. And in that group, only Yang Qian and Yao Dao remained undefeated.

The fatty's words were nicely put, but it was in actual fact, one against two, and that wasn't much of an exaggeration.

"He is just going with the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience's wishes. By declaring war in such a manner, he can increase his popularity. This fatso sure is crafty!" Yao Dao, who was beside Yang Qian, gave his evaluation. These two former rivals were now comrades in arms.

"Hmph! How powerful can a fellow, who just messes around, be? Although there's only two of us left in the Tai Ah Divine City young adult division, we will not be defeated by him. I'll go up and finish him off!"

Yang Qian said as he jumped up the Divine Wilderness Stage, "I'll challenge you!"

"Yang Qian! Yang Qian!"

The Tai Ah Divine City cultivators shouted loudly to cheer on Yang Qian. As one of the top ranked people on the Tai Ah Divine City's Earth roll, he was extremely popular.

Yang Qian and Yao Dao were the only hopes that the Tai Ah Divine City young adult division had.

"Hehe!" The fatty looked at Yang Qian as his lips curled into a sinister smile. To establish his reputation, he began with Yang Qian.

In a short while, it would be his personal performance.

After today's young adult division match, there was no doubt he would become the brightest person in the Yun Long Divine Kingdom!

He was looking forward to the fame gained from this one battle! By performing well in the tournament, besides being rewarded, he would also gain the attention of the upper echelons of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. There were many benefits!

The fatty smiled as he subconsciously glanced at the Tai Ah Divine City teenager division participant benches. He knew that in two days time, he would meet Yi Yun in the overall group match.

He wanted to let his future opponent see his performance.

But this glance made his expression go stiff.

Because, at that moment, Yi Yun was carrying his Sonic Deathblade and walking towards the arena's exit. From the fatty's perspective, he could only see Yi Yun's back.

"What!? That kid!"

The veins on the fatty's forehead bulged. He had been ignored?

Yi Yun had actually left the arena without watching his match? Who did he think he was?

Seeing Yi Yun leave the arena without even turning back, the fatty's expression turned gloomy.

"In two days time, I will teach you manners."

The fatty clenched his fists and began thinking hateful thoughts. Next, he turned towards Yang Qian and said coldly, "Yang Qian, right? I will defeat you in less than ten moves!"

"The nerve!" Yang Qian unsheathed a sword and pointing straight at the fatty's eyebrows.

"The person who will be defeated is you!"

Chapter 325: Qianshui Family Clan

As part of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royalty, Yang Qian was the second most important person in the Tai Ah Divine City for this alliance tournament. Yang Qian was always proud, but against someone from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, he held back his pride and focused all his spirit and mind.

Before the battle, he had also gathered information regarding the Yun Long Divine Kingdom geniuses.

However, as the alliance tournament had happened too suddenly, and due to the large distance between the Yun Long 72 Pagodas and the Tai Ah Divine City, it was difficult to obtain detailed information of the Yun Long 72 Pagodas in such a short time. Yang Qian was also unable to use the royal family's powers, so whatever he gathered was just general information.

The general information he gathered that dealt with the Yun Long 72 Pagodas geniuses was extremely limited. Yang Qian only knew their weapons and commonly used attacks. As for their trump cards and killer moves, Yang Qian was also not able to probe in detail.

For example, the information on Jun Yue was very little. And it was same for the fatty in front of him.

Yang Qian only knew that this fatty came from a Divine Wilderness mystic tribal clan. Anything related to the Divine Wilderness tribal clans was not simple. They had unknown blood

heritage and their tribe's mystic techniques.

For example, Kui Yu, the puppet master from before was also from a Divine Wilderness mystic tribe. But there was no doubt this fatty was much stronger than Kui Yu.

Although Yang Qian had not lost his presence in this battle, he knew that this battle would be extremely difficult.

"Let the match... begin!"

With the referee's announcement, light circulated around Yang Qian's body as a tiger appeared behind him. It was Yang Qian's Aspect Totem.

"Roar!"

The tiger roared as Yang Qian rushed forward. While moving forward, his body began burning with flames.

It was pure Yang flames.

As one of the elites of the Tai Ah Divine City and as a royal house member, Yang Qian's core cultivation technique was also the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

Compared to Yi Yun's 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', Yang Qian's 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was unable to conjure the Tang Valley

Radiant Sun phantom image. However, with his cultivation level being at the mid-stages of the Yuan Foundation realm, the pure Yang flames burning around his body encompassed an even greater area!

"Phew—"

Slashing with his sword, the pure Yang flames flared. At the same time, the tiger behind Yang Qian charged at the fatty.

The tiger roared and swiped downwards with its sharp claws. The fatty grinned as he stretched out his right hand, and blocked the tiger's claw attack with just his arm alone!

Courting death! Yang Qian's expression revealed killing intent. This fatty obviously did not want his arm anymore by using it to block the Totem tiger's sharp claws!

"Peng!"

With a powerful impact, the fatty's body shook as he took a half step back. He pressed his feet into the purple tungsten ground, creating a deep footprint.

The cloth on his arm was torn, but his arm remained fine.

The corners of fatty's mouth formed a grin. He had really used his arm to block the Totem tiger's attack!

"What!?"

Yang Qian was greatly alarmed. How was this possible? The totem tiger behind him was a mutated Golden Eyed Tiger. This kind of desolate beast's strength was immense. It could smash a tiny mountain with a swipe of its claw. It was a strength that really could smash a mountain!

The Aspect Totem behind him may be weaker than a real mutated Golden Eyed Tiger, but its attack was not something that a Yuan Foundation realm warrior could withstand with his body.

Yang Qian believed that even Qin Haotian would not have such terrifying physical strength!

Could this be the mystic technique that belonged to the fatty's Divine Wilderness mystic tribe?

Yang Qian may have been awed by it, but his attack was treated seriously. He slashed with his sword as the pure Yang flames flared at the fatty.

"Peng!"

The fatty clasped his two big hands together, clamping Yang Qian's sword!

"Phew—"

Yang Qian powered the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' to an extreme. The fatty may be able to block Yang Qian's sword, but with the pure Yang flames flaring, he could not block the burning flames.

The flames engulfed his body. The fatty's body was covered in flames. Even his hair began to burn.

However, the fatty began roaring with laughter within the fire.

"So this is your strength. It feels like a fire during winter. It's pretty warm. Hahaha!"

Fatty's laughter resounded through the arena. It was like a demonic curse when it entered Yang Qian's ears. "How is this possible? He does not feel a thing with the pure Yang flames engulfing his body?"

What sort of Divine Wilderness mystic technique was this? He could both block the mutated Golden Eyed Tiger's sharp claws with his bare hands and laugh even while his body was engulfed in flames?

Yang Qian felt true fear. He felt that his opponent's strength had gone far beyond his imagination.

And he did not even know what his opponent was relying on. Logic told him that it was impossible to have such a strong body,

but it was happening right in front of his eyes.

Without understanding what mystic technique this fatty was relying on, Yang Qian knew that he was bound to lose. His strongest attack now couldn't even hurt the fatty, while his opponent had not even used a weapon!

Yang Qian panicked. He used strength in both his hands and pulled his sword out from the fatty's hands.

But fatty seemed to be invulnerable. His palms did not shed a single drop of blood.

"Tai Ah Sacred Technique: Radiant Sun Sword!"

Yang Qian's sword swept up the flames, forming a golden Radiant Sun swirl as his sword stabbed straight at the fatty's heart!

But the fatty only laughed. He did not dodge but instead, sent a palm towards Yang Qian!

"Cha!"

The sword pierced through the fatty's body, but at the same time, the palm had slammed onto Yang Qian's chest.

"Puah!"

Yang Qian felt a huge tremor in his chest as he flew backward. In the air, he spit out a mouthful of blood.

On the other hand, the fatty's body had been pierced through, however it was like as if nothing had happened. He grinned showing the blood in his mouth.

The fatty could still laugh with a sword stabbed through his body. The scene was extremely weird. His body shook a bit before he grabbed the sword with one hand. Bit by bit, he pulled out the burning hot sword.

"Good attack, too bad...It's useless against me!"

The fatty wiped the blood off his lips. It was as if Yang Qian's sword had never stabbed at him.

Seeing this scene, Yang Qian, who had always been extremely proud, nearly collapsed.

How could there be such an opponent? Did he have an undying body?

Could the Divine Wilderness mystic technique be an undying body? How could an opponent with an undying body be defeated?

Yang Qian had never felt so powerless before.

...

"What's the matter? The match has began a long time ago. What are they doing?"

In the arena, people were watching the "battle situation" on the Divine Wilderness Stage, but were confused.

After the referee declared the beginning of the match, Yang Qian and the fatty stood motionless a hundred feet apart.

The only change was a mystic mark that had appeared between the fatty's eyebrows. The mystic mark sparkled and gave off an ancient mystic aura.

"Why are they just standing? Why aren't they fighting?"

Some of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors asked. They were looking forward to an intense battle, but they were left scratching their heads with the actual situation.

But in the stands where the Tai Ah Divine City's instructors and administrators sat, many of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom Human Lords had solemn expressions.

"The battle has long since begun..." A Tai Ah Divine City instructor said. His voice sounded worried, "That fatty's move is an illusion technique. The situation is not good. Yang Qian is lost in the illusion technique."

"Illusion technique?"

Many of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors were shocked hearing this. Attacking with illusion techniques?

There was such a move?

Some people suddenly recalled the mark between fatty's eyebrows. Could the shimmering ancient mystic mark be the source of the illusion technique?

As they looked at Yang Qian again, his face was covered in sweat. The hand that was holding his sword was trembling slightly. It seemed like his mental condition was extremely unstable!

"This is bad!"

Although they did not know the actual situation an illusion technique duel entailed, just from Yang Qian's condition, they knew that he could not hold on much longer.

Within the world of the illusion technique, the fatty was the absolute master. Once his opponents entered the illusion, they would fall under his control.

Whatever the fatty thought up in his mind, it would happen in the illusion. As such, in the illusion, the fatty was in an

unassailable position!

"The Qianshui Family Clan really has matchless illusion techniques." In the Elder stands, a white-robed Elder, who had the bearing of an immortal, stroked his beard and laughed happily.

"Of course. It is a pity the Qianshui family clan is so limited in numbers. In this generation, they do not have many people left. Some Divine Wilderness mystic tribes have problems with reproduction due to their blood heritage."

Another white-robed Elder added on. These two white-robed Elders were the ones who had disparaged Yi Yun previously, and also the two that had bickered with Cang Yan.

As they spoke, the two of them glanced at Cang Yan with smiles on their faces. Cang Yan had just given Yi Yun a token, allowing him to enter the sword tomb. He had just returned and had been targeted by the two white-robed old men.

The white-robed old men purposely reminded Cang Yan, "The greatest advantage of illusion techniques is that it ignores the opponent's movement techniques, attack moves, cultivation techniques and laws. As long as the opponent's mental strength and Yuan Qi is lacking, then just entering the illusion would render any move meaningless."

Cang Yan understood the thoughts behind the two. They were hinting that Yi Yun's cultivation level was limited, and it would be difficult for him to stay clear-minded in the illusion.

Cang Yan grunted and could not be bothered to reply. He grabbed a handful of Spirit Abutilon Seeds. As he was munching on it, he was also beginning to worry. If Yao Dao could not defeat this fatty, then what would be the outcome when Yi Yun were to duel this fatty in two days?

As Cang Yan was thinking, something happened on the Divine Wilderness Stage. Yang Qian's body suddenly quivered as his nostrils and ears bled. His face was pale and his eyes listless. It seemed like his fighting spirit had been destroyed inside the illusion!

The fatty chuckled as he leaped forward. Like a violent bear, he rushed right in front of Yang Qian and sent a forceful punch right into Yang Qian's chest!

"Peng!"

With an explosive sound, Yang Qian's sternum fractured. His body flew out, slamming heavily into the purple tungsten wall, immediately fainting.

Yang Qian could not withstand the double attack against his soul and body.

"Haha!" The fatty began laughing loudly. "It was so easy!"

With his illusion, the yellow-clothed fatty only used one move,

other than the illusion technique, from beginning to end.

Immediately, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors in the audience erupted with cheers.

The fatty closed his eyes as he stretched out his arms to enjoy the cheers and shouting. This was his stage. This was his glory.

The fatty was intoxicated by the cheers the crowd gave him!

Chapter 326: The Memories Of The Broken Sword

Below the Divine Wilderness Stage, Yang Qian slowly regained consciousness under the care of a few medical personnel. He was still coughing incessantly as he weakly said, "Sorry..."

The proud Yang Qian felt ashamed at that moment. The gap in strength between him and the fatty in yellow was too great. Being unguarded against illusions, he had fallen into the fatty's illusion, causing him to lose terribly.

Beside Yang Qian stood a young man, Yao Dao.

Yao Dao was silent. As he looked at the fatty on-stage who was enjoying the cheers of the crowd, his gaze turned grim.

The fatty was older than him, and his cultivation level was higher than his. Fighting him was very tricky!

Yao Dao was full of confidence regarding his saber techniques, but Yao Dao had never undergone training to combat in an illusionary world.

This fatty was the first illusion warrior Yao Dao had ever met.

Fighting in an illusion was completely different from actual fighting. Without experience, he was bound to suffer.

Now, Yao Dao felt like he had just mastered his saber techniques and had challenged an expert without having any combat experience.

Everything had to be discovered on his own.

"Yao Dao, just do your best."

Yao Dao's instructor, who was standing beside him, pat him on the shoulders.

Yao Dao nodded. Before the competition, he had never expected his opponent to turn out this way. He had originally looked forward to a stormy duel, but things did not go according to his wishes.

Yao Dao carried his saber up onto the Divine Wilderness Stage. The fatty who was across him revealed a playful smile, "Yet another one. Interesting."

"Cut the crap. Let's fight!"

The moment he finished saying that, Yao Dao circulated his Yuan Qi and began focusing his mind, in preparation to withstand the fatty's illusion attack.

The fatty laughed as he slowly took out a gourd from his

interspatial ring.

The gourd was small and about a foot tall. It was dark gold in color.

"Oh?"

Yao Dao focused his mind as his right hand gripped his saber's hilt tightly. The fatty did not take out a gourd when he was fighting Yang Qian.

Or could this scene of the fatty taking out the gourd be an illusion?

At that moment, Yao Dao hesitated attacking the fatty. He was afraid that he would fall into the illusion the moment he moved and end up in a pointless battle with the fatty inside of the illusionary world. If that happened, he was bound to lose!

But he could not just stand there watching. It was equivalent to letting the fatty use his mystic techniques. Yao Dao had a hunch that whatever was within the gourd was extremely dangerous. If he allowed the fatty to use it, only grim possibilities awaited him.

Upon thinking of this, Yao Dao suddenly bit the tip of his tongue. By biting his tongue, the pain would allow him to wake up.

"How can I be so timid? The battle has not even begun and I have lost my fighting spirit. How can I hesitate attacking my enemy just

because I'm afraid of the illusion!?"

All these thoughts appeared in Yao Dao's mind. He was suddenly enlightened. As a saber user, one had to foremost press forward with indomitable will. He calmed his mind and his saber Qi exploded to slice through all that was unreal!

"Die!"

Yao Dao charged forward, and with his narrow saber in hand, he slashed at the fatty.

And at that moment, the fatty pulled out the gourd's stopper. Rainbow-colored smoke emitted from the gourd like a thin veil.

"Using the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke against you is because I, the Fat Lord, thinks highly of you. You should be proud to lose in the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke!"

The Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke instantly thickened, covering everyone's vision. It formed a barrier on the stage. Everything inside could no longer be seen.

In the stands, the audience were staring widely with their eyes open, afraid to miss a single scene.

However, they could not see a thing.

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were extremely nervous. They were worried for Yao Dao, and did not know what the outcome would be.

Yao Dao was the only person left in the Tai Ah Divine City's young adult division. The moment he lost, their Tai Ah Divine City young adult division would suffer a terrible failure!

...

In the sword tomb, Yi Yun was sitting crossed legged. On his lap was a broken sword covered in patches of rust. This sword was the one Yi Yun had taken out from the Pure Yang Sword Palace.

Yi Yun had tried to learn the way of the sword for nearly a year. He had come up with numerous scenarios and simulations in his mind regarding the huge sword scar left in the Pure Yang Sword Palace, but up to this day, he still had a vague feeling whenever he recalled the sword scar.

It was as if there was something hiding the sword scar when he tried to recall it, preventing him from identifying it.

Today, Yi Yun was still maintaining his cross-legged posture. Subconsciously, he had entered a state of forgetting everything else. It seemed like there was a heavy mist in his mind.

Yi Yun tried hard to see through it and when the mist slowly dissipated, he saw blurry figures.

Oh? This is...

Yi Yun mind lit up. He had never seen this scene before.

Amongst the figures was a man holding a sword. He was brandishing his sword without thought and every sword beam that slashed out had the power to destroy celestial bodies and cut open the Heavens.

The scene was in complete chaos. At times it was clear, but at other times, it was blurry. Yi Yun could not see the opponent of the sword-wielding man. He only felt that the chaotic battle was earth-shattering.

At that moment, a giant appeared high in the sky.

This giant was as if he was casted out of bronze. His body was like a vast mountain, emitting a suffocating aura. It was as if he was a divine spirit that came from the Nine Heavens, a controller of the Heaven and Earth, a proud being over all existence.

He held in his hand a humongous bronze halberd. Just brandishing the halberd caused the world to fracture!

This shocking crack spread through the ground, all the way to the oceans and sky!

The oceans ripped apart as the sea water formed numerous huge whirlpools. Everything that entered the crack disappeared till the oceans was completely dried up. Following that, the sky tore apart. Eventually, a complete world had been ripped apart by the giant!

A halberd attack that could split an entire world!

Yi Yun was greatly shocked. What sort of existence was this giant?

He did not have time to think carefully as light began to distort. In the blurriness, he saw the sword-wielding man turn into a beam of light as he flew towards the bronze giant.

At that moment, the man and his sword had combined into one.

The sword beam flashed past and the man stabbed the bronze giant's neck, almost to the point of cutting off the bronze giant's head!

Yi Yun's pupils constricted. This attack was too terrifying!

The giant's strength was able to split a world apart with his halberd. Now, his head had nearly been chopped off by the man's sword?

Next, Yi Yun seemed to hear a "ping" sound. The man's sword had broken because of the enormous impact!

The man was left with half a broken sword in his hand. Because it had been stained by the bronze giant's blood, it was slowly being corroded, emitting trails of green smoke.

The divine sword was originally covered in flowing light, but now the light rapidly disappeared. The sword seemed to have a life of its own as it issued out painful cries.

The bronze giant, whose head had nearly been chopped off, also let out a painful roar. He swiped his halberd towards the sword-wielding man!

The halberd flooded Yi Yun's vision. He could only vaguely see the sword-wielding man being hit by the halberd and his body flying out. His body even flew out of this world.

And this world also shattered with the bronze giant's second attack.

An entire corner of a world peeled off and left the world's main body as it drifted into the endless universe...

Following that, this corner of the world experienced a long and aimless drifting through the universe...

And that broken sword was left in that world.

It had already completely lost its spiritual essence. As it was corroded by the bronze giant's blood, its surface began to rust.

Rust kept building up and soon, this broken sword was covered in rust, and looked no different from a piece of junk metal...

From the beginning to the end, Yi Yun was like a spectator of this world. He had silently witnessed everything.

He saw the river of time flow as he saw seas change into mulberry fields...

Yi Yun did not know how long he spent in his vision. He seemed to experience numerous lifetimes that lacked any emotion, and only after leading a long and callous life did he somehow suddenly awaken.

The awoken Yi Yun was covered in cold sweat. The dreary life he experienced refreshed his memory. He felt like he had turned into a lifeless stone residing in that world, which did nothing but be a witness.

Yi Yun looked towards a wall corner. The oil lamps were still silently burning in the chamber. From the amount of oil that was consumed, he estimated that he had only spent about an hour throughout that experience.

But in the dream, Yi Yun felt like he had experienced thousands of years.

Yi Yun lowered his head as he pondered. He looked towards his knees and there laid the broken sword motionless on his lap.

The patches of rust covered the entire blade. Vaguely, Yi Yun could see a few brown spots on the broken sword. Around the spots, there was clearly more rust.

Were these spots left behind by the bronze giant's dried up blood?

The scenes in his vision seemed to be the origins of the broken sword...

And the corner of the world that the bronze giant ripped off with his large halberd must have been the world that had drifted amongst the stars for a long period of time before crashing into this world. It was the so-called meteorite that fell into Fallen Star Gate?

Normal warriors believed that a meteorite had crashed into Fallen Star Gate, while there were reclusive family clans that thought that it was a mystic cave.

But no matter what they believed, it was not right.

It was a corner of a world that a bronze giant had cut off.

Yi Yun's mind became clearer. He finally understood that the vision he previously saw was the memories of the sword.

A sword could also have memories?

Yi Yun lifted up the broken sword from his lap as he examined it from all angles.

No matter how he examined it, the sword was like a piece of scrap metal. It was unbelievable that before it lost its spiritual essence, it was the sword of a peerless expert that could kill gods.

Could the sword-wielding man be the Pure Yang Sword Palace's owner...?

Many thoughts flashed past Yi Yun's mind. It was hard to believe what sort of martial arts realm the Pure Yang Sword Palace owner and that bronze giant had reached.

After being hit by the bronze giant's blow, did the Pure Yang Sword Palace owner die?

That terrible blow could ever shatter a world, and with the tens of millions of years, the odds of him still being alive were low.

If he was still alive, how could he ignore the Pure Yang Sword Palace?

It was such a pity for this peerless expert!

Chapter 327: Overall Group Match Begins

With the broken sword in hand, Yi Yun injected his spiritual energy into the sword as he stood up to obtain the memories from the sword.

He began brandishing the sword slowly, as if he was immersed in that dream-like spiritual world.

The sword-wielding man's attack that cut the bronze giant's neck was naturally much clearer than the sword scars left in the Pure Yang Sword Palace. Yi Yun just needed to recall it as it was now a clear memory in his mind.

Looking at a sword scar to learn an attack was naturally limited. But having seen the attack personally, and having the scenes of the sword attack imprinted into his mind, it was completely different.

Yi Yun slowly entered that mysterious state again. He wandered around that dream-like world and he could faintly feel that the things he had previously not understood become clearer.

So that was how it was...

Yi Yun muttered to himself. He did not know how much time had passed when suddenly, he heard footsteps coming from outside the sword tomb.

The sound of the footsteps were very soft, but they had a rhythm

to it. The interval between each step was like clockwork precision. It was the footsteps of an expert.

Cang Yan...

Yi Yun knew who the owner of the footsteps was immediately.

Yi Yun was surprised that he could hear the footsteps from inside the sword tomb. It was fascinating.

This was because the sword tomb's door isolated the sword tomb from the exterior world once it was closed.

And not only could he hear the footsteps, he was even able to identify the owner of those footsteps.

"This kid still hasn't come out yet."

Outside the sword tomb, Cang Yan began talking to himself in an annoyed manner.

There were only two hours left till the beginning of the overall group match. Every time Yi Yun entered the sword tomb, he will lose track of time, requiring Cang Yan to remind him.

But, Cang Yan was afraid of disturbing Yi Yun. Warriors were most afraid of being disturbed when they were cultivating.

Just as Cang Yan was looking at the hourglass, the sword tomb's door suddenly opened.

Yi Yun appeared by the door, "The overall group matches are beginning?"

Yi Yun was able to hear the words Cang Yan was saying to himself from inside the sword tomb.

Cang Yan was stumped for a while before saying snappily, "You sure are on time, you seemed to be in the right place to catch that. Almost everyone is at the arena now. There are still two hours left. You can still meditate and rest for a while to adjust your condition. Your opponent today is very strong, extremely strong!"

Cang Yan used two consecutive "strong" words to describe the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's overall group match opponent.

"This old man doesn't expect you to become the champion, and I only want you to fight to show our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's forceful stance, lest those sons-of-bi*ches continue being so complacent in front of me!"

Cang Yan looked pissed. He was in a bad mood after those two white-robed Elders nipped at him.

"I got it." Yi Yun responded tersely as if his mind was still wandering. He was still immersed in gaining insight of the Sword Intent, so he could not help it.

Seeing Yi Yun not taking it at heart, Cang Yan turned despondent, "Kid, what are you thinking? The entire Tai Ah Divine City's hopes for the overall group match are resting on your shoulders."

"Kid, let me tell you. The Yun Long Divine Kingdom's young adult group has several people who are very strong. If you can just beat any one of those strong ones, or win five consecutive matches, I will get the City Lord to give you a saber!"

Cang Yan felt that Yi Yun was like a rabbit who did not worry until it saw an eagle coming, so he decided to bait him with some attractive prizes.

"Saber?" Yi Yun was slightly stunned.

Cang Yan smiled mysteriously, "Don't be deceived by the City Lord's scholarly appearance. He actually uses a saber. And the City Lord loves to collect all sorts of treasured sabers. His personal arsenal is filled with great sabers. If you can win five consecutive matches, you can pick any saber!"

"The City Lord's collection?"

Yi Yun was tempted. The Sonic Deathblade he was currently using was taken from the Tai Ah Divine City's armory. Although it was a good saber, it was much worse compared to those the City Lord collected.

He already had the mysterious broken sword, and as for his saber, it was indeed normal.

If he had a good saber to help him in his battles, his combat powers would go another step further!

But...actually, the broken sword was not something that could see the light of day. Yi Yun did not dare use it easily as it was one of his absolute trump cards. Therefore, he was lacking a sword as well.

Upon thinking of this, Yi Yun glanced at Cang Yan, and grinned, "About that...Senior Cang Yan, why not give me a sword too. Elder Jian Ge likes collecting swords, right?"

Upon hearing Yi Yun's words, Cang Yan's beard went diagonal with a quirk of his lips, "Kid, you sure take a yard when given an inch! You aren't even at the Yuan Foundation realm and you want to keep two sage-level weapons. Aren't you afraid people will eye them!? With your current strength, you can't even use the power of a sage-level weapon!" Cang Yan said unhappily.

But upon saying that, he changed his mind and said, "Hmph, if you win, so what if I want to give you a good sword. Don't even talk about that old kid, Jian Ge's collection, even if you want the sword in Jian Ge's hands, I'll grab it for you!"

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's honor was on the line for this battle. Although sage-level sabers and swords were precious,

rewarding Yi Yun with them was not a big deal.

But Cang Yan knew that it was not easy for Yi Yun to beat any of those strong experts, or to win 5 consecutive matches!

If Yi Yun did well, the opponent will realize his outstanding strength and send an expert to end Yi Yun's winning streak.

With Cang Yan's guarantee, Yi Yun smiled, "Then this junior thanks Senior Cang Yan."

Seeing Yi Yun smiling, Cang Yan rolled his eyes. This kid even thanked him. Did he really think that sword and saber were already his?

Yi Yun followed Cang Yan to the arena. The overall group matches were about to begin!

Yi Yun arrived at the participant benches. Chu Xiaoran was also there. For the Tai Ah Divine City overall group matches, only Yi Yun and Chu Xiaoran had the participating qualifications.

But not much could be expected of Chu Xiaoran's strength. Basically, only Yi Yun could fight.

Glancing at his opponents, there were 15 people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom!

Other than the weakest young adult team having lost and being eliminated previously, every person from the other groups were present from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

They still had their full lineup after the young adult group match?

Yi Yun was surprised and he asked Chu Xiaoran who was beside him, "Xiaoran, wasn't there a young adult match before the overall group match? Our Tai Ah Divine City's Yao Dao and Yang Qian had fought. Both of them are very strong, but they could not defeat a single person from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom?"

Upon hearing Yi Yun's question, Chu Xiaoran smiled bitterly, "The person they fought against was that fatty in yellow. He is proficient in using illusions. Yang Qian did not understand the situation and got hit with fatty's illusions, resulting in his immediate defeat."

"As for Yao Dao, he was in a better condition. He used his saber intent to break through the fatty's illusions and slashed at the fatty thrice. Although the fatty had managed to dodge the slashes, preventing damage to any of his vital parts, he was still quite injured."

"But the fatty is older than Yao Dao, and his cultivation level is higher. He used a gourd's weird smoke, called Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke. The Wolf Smoke was very weird, it could form into an illusion barrier. Within the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke array, Yao Dao was unable to keep his mind absolutely clear, so he was eventually defeated by the fatty."

"Illusion?" Yi Yun thought for a while. He never expected that humans could use illusions as an attack.

It was not much different from the Heaven Purple Yang Ginseng's powers.

Back when Yi Yun first met the Heaven Purple Yang Ginseng, he had been hit by the herb's illusion and nearly fell off a cliff.

Yao Dao was a very strong saber user. Although he was inferior to Qin Haotian, Li Xiao and company, he could not be defeated so easily. A person like Yao Dao, who faithfully trained the way of the saber, would have very strong martial arts conviction.

But even so, he still succumbed to the fatty's illusion. From this, it was indeed true that the fatty was outstanding.

Yi Yun subconsciously looked towards the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's small groups and met the fatty's gaze.

The fatty was leaning on a chair with his hand supporting his chin. He was looking at Yi Yun with great interest. That gaze looked like a hunter having seen his prey.

"Really interesting."

The fatty began to laugh. Yesterday, he had met the one-armed

man once again. This time, the one-armed man had offered a greater reward to get the fatty to maim Yi Yun.

The fatty was proficient in illusions, which was a spiritual mental attack. The souls of humans are very fragile, so once they get injured, they are very difficult to treat.

So whenever spiritual mental attacks were involved, it could easily hurt others, but it was also easy to have the attack reverse back at the caster.

In the illusionary world, it was not difficult to cause permanent damage to the other party's soul.

The fatty did not care who the one-armed man was, but he was swayed by the high price the one-armed man offered. Hence, he did not mind doing so. After all, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was a rival faction of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"That fatty is targeting me!"

Yi Yun frowned slightly. At that moment, the fatty's Yuan Qi voice transmission came into Yi Yun's ears, "This Fat Lord will be the first one fighting. Have you gotten any information about this Fat Lord from the babe beside you? I recommend you to gather as much intelligence as possible, if not, in the match, you might just die without knowing why."

Hearing the fatty's words, Yi Yun hesitated for a while before

scrunching of his eyebrows. He gave of a helpless looks. This fatty sure felt good about himself.

"I've asked. I heard you use illusion, I'm actually quite afraid."

"Oh?"

The fatty frowned as he sat up straight. He stared at Yi Yun from a distance more than a hundred feet away.

He stared at Yi Yun for more than the time it takes for 10 breaths before suddenly laughing, "Newborn calves sure aren't afraid of tigers. Who gave you this courage?"

The fatty's cultivation level was at the peak of the mid-stages of the Yuan Foundation realm, and he was just a bit short of entering the late stages of the Yuan Foundation realm.

During the match, the fatty had to suppress his cultivation level to the early stages of the Yuan Foundation realm due to the age difference, but his illusions did not need to be suppressed. There was not much difference using illusions at the early stages of the Yuan Foundation realm.

This was also the source of the fatty's confidence.

He was not good at actual fighting, but he could prevent enemies, who were good at actual fighting, from showcasing their strength.

This was the fatty's ability.

Yi Yun could not be bothered with the fatty as he began meditating. As he digested the insights gained from the sword tomb, he adjusted his breathing, pushing his condition to its peak before the match began.

At that moment, the Tai Ah Divine City referee had walked up the Divine Wilderness Stage. The overall group matches had officially began!

Chapter 328: Yi Yun vs Qianshui

"Today is the overall group competition and it is also the last competition! The group champion will win ten seats! Tai Ah Divine City's fighters, Yi Yun, Chu Xiaoran! Yun Long Divine Kingdom's fighters, Bai, Feng Lin...."

On the Divine Wilderness Stage, the referee announced each and every name of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's warriors. There was a total of fifteen names and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom crowd would loudly cheer as every name was read out. As that happened, the Tai Ah Divine City's warriors became even more solemn with every announced name.

There were just too many people left standing on the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side for the competition.

After the referee finished announcing the names, he carried on, "Next, may the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors come up on stage!"

After the referee said that, the fatty dressed in yellow jumped up on stage from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side.

He was holding the dark gold gourd in his hand. As he raised the gourd high up, he loudly screamed. His presence was domineering!

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience was riled up as they started shouting back, "Qianshui! Qianshui!"

The fatty stretched out his arms and closed both his eyes. He was enjoying the cheers and screams of the audience. As a member of the Qianshui family clan, he enjoyed the infinite glory he got from allowing his surname to reverberate within the Tai Ah Divine City's arena.

The cheers lasted for a long time when they ended the fatty lowered his head slightly and looked at Yi Yun with a provocative smile.

"Yi Yun, I will go up first!" Chu Xiaoran said to Yi Yun. She knew that it was impossible for her to win against fatty, but at least she could share some of Yi Yun's burden. By scouting the battle ahead, she could allow for Yi Yun to gain a better understanding of the fatty's fighting techniques.

"There is no need. I alone will be enough for this overall group competition."

Yi Yun's words stunned Chu Xiaoran, "Yi Yun, you want to fight against all of them alone?"

Yi Yun said, "Actually... Not all of them will fight. Except for a few people, the rest are just there to make the numbers and can simply be ignored."

"Eh..."

Chu Xiaoran was speechless. At that moment, Yi Yun had already reached the Divine Wilderness Stage.

"Yi Yun! Yi Yun!"

In the arena, there were also people from Tai Ah Divine City shouting for Yi Yun. Although this was the overall group competition and the hopes of the Tai Ah Divine City winning were slim they could not lose their stance, even if they lost the match. Having more people, the Tai Ah Divine City's cries managed to drown the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's cheers."

"It's useless to shout with that much strength. Although Yi Yun is not bad, his abilities will be suppressed by Qianshui and he will not be able to use them at all." a Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder said unhappily upon seeing the Tai Ah Divine City's cheers drown out the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's cheers.

Yi Yun's strength came from his 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' and his Saber Dao.

However, fighting against Qianshui, what mattered most was the depth of one's Yuan Qi and the strength of one's spiritual mind.

There were only two ways in which Yi Yun could turn the tables. Either Yi Yun's cultivation level had to be higher than Qianshui so that he could use his thick Yuan Qi to withstand the illusion technique, or he had to have strong spiritual mental powers so that he would not be affected by the illusion technique.

And for these two conditions, the former was not even up for consideration as Yi Yun was still not at the Yuan Foundation realm, the depth of his Yuan Qi was inferior to Qianshui's.

As for spiritual mental powers, Qianshui had cultivated the Qianshui clan's mystic technique, which was a mystic technique that focused on training one's spiritual mental powers. So, his spiritual mental powers were much stronger than his peers, even more so when compared to a younger Yi Yun. Why would Yi Yun, a saber user, specifically train his spiritual mental powers?

Yi Yun's saber techniques and cultivation techniques had no effects in an illusion technique battle.

This was the reason why Qianshui was so confident in himself. No matter how peerless your saber techniques were, so what if you could conjure a Tang Valley phantom image for your 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'? Once you get lost in the illusion, none of those abilities could be used effectively.

Although Qianshui was confident, he did not underestimate Yi Yun. He took out the golden gourd from the beginning and planned to use the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke.

"Yi Yun! You are sure to lose!"

When the referee announced the beginning of the match, the fatty immediately opened up a distance and pulled out the stopper of the golden gourd. Right after, the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke emanated out from it. It was like a colorful cloud.

The illusion only needed an instance to activate. It was impossible to use the short time gap to attack the fatty.

"Yi Yun, preserve your mind. Do not fall under the influence of the illusion. Attack with your saber and finish off the fatty. He is not good at actual fighting, so if you were to inject the strongest combat power of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' into your attack, just one attack alone will secure your victory!"

Cang Yan's Yuan Qi transmission rang in Yi Yun's ear. The old man's voice sounded anxious.

"Got it."

Yi Yun responded tersely. He closed his eyes as his body was slowly covered by the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke.

"If you think closing your eyes is of any use, then you are too naive!" The fatty grinned. Between his eyebrows was a glimmering ancient mystic mark. This was the Qianshui clan's symbol and was also the source of the illusion.

Under the shimmering of the mysterious mark, the Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke completed the forming of its barrier. The Divine Wilderness Stage was completely blocked off as the fatty pushed his illusion to the extreme.

At that moment, Yi Yun still remained motionless.

The fatty did not lie. One could not withstand the Qianshui clan's illusions even with their eyes closed.

Yi Yun saw that he had arrived in the desolate wilderness. This place looked familiar and resembled Meteorite Abyss when Yi Yun was out training in the Divine Wilderness. And right in front of Yi Yun was a huge mutated Three-Eyed Spider!

This mutated Three-Eyed Spider was staring at Yi Yun with its three red eyes. Its mouth constantly dripped with saliva while its two fangs reflected a cold beam.

"Mutated Three-Eyed Spider...This is a desolate beast I have seen before. It is also a terrifying monster that I could not defeat back then. The Qianshui clan's illusions can dig up my memories of terrifying existences."

Yi Yun's spiritual mental powers and Yuan Qi were indeed weaker than the fatty's, so he was not able to shake off the influence caused by the illusion. However, Yi Yun's mind was clear, and he would not succumb to the illusion.

Actually, the fatty's illusion technique had not yet reached the ultimate realm. If so, he could easily cause his opponent to be lost in the illusion, and kills in the illusion would be reflected in reality.

However, even so, the fatty's illusion technique was still very deadly.

It was equivalent to cutting off the five senses of a warrior. Even if you knew that you were in an illusion, even if you knew everything in front of you was fake, you would not be able to do anything about it.

You would see the things in the illusion coming forth to kill you. At that moment, no matter how you resisted, you would not be able to break out of the illusion.

As for the fatty who was outside the illusion, he could attack at any time, killing him in one strike.

At that moment, Yi Yun was standing silently in the illusionary world. No matter how much the mutated Three-Eyed Spider growled, he remained motionless.

Yi Yun had opened his Purple Crystal energy vision before the fatty activated his illusion.

In the energy vision, all sorts of illusions lost their meaning. Yi Yun was able to directly see the origin of the energy flows within this world.

He clearly saw, in his energy vision, that the fatty was huddled in one corner. His energy was not strong and was weaker than Jun Yue's.

Yi Yun even saw thread-like energies flowing from the fatty's

body. It was likely that these energies were responsible for conjuring up the illusions.

"The Qianshui clan's illusion technique is different from the Heaven Purple Yang Ginseng's illusions, but they still have the same effect."

Many thoughts flashed past Yi Yun's mind. Back when he captured the primordial herb, the Heaven Purple Yang Ginseng, he had used the Purple Crystal to see through its illusions, enabling him to lock onto its position.

As for the fatty's illusion technique, it was actually slightly worse than the primordial herb's. It was completely ineffective against Yi Yun.

Yi Yun stood there without a single motion. His right hand silently pressing over his interspatial ring.

Next, he allowed the fake mutated Three-Eyed Spider to attack at him.

Phew—

The mutated Three-Eyed Spider passed right through his body and disappeared like the wind.

Seeing Yi Yun's reaction, the fatty laughed.

"I was pondering over the reason why you were so arrogant. So it is because you think that my illusions will be useless against you if you closed your eyes and remained motionless by not attacking or defending, letting the illusions attack you. It's ridiculously funny! The attacks within the illusion are indeed fake, but some attacks are real!"

The fatty laughed out loud as he took out an ax from his interspatial ring. He was not afraid to let Yi Yun hear his words as Yi Yun's five senses were being controlled by the illusion technique. Yi Yun was unable to hear a single thing.

The fatty played with his Soul Cutting Axe as he slowly walked towards Yi Yun. The ax was very short and there was an extremely hideous, ghastly face drawn on the handle.

"By falling into my illusion, you will lose your body's ability to resist. Let me use my Soul Cutting Axe to send you on your way!"

The fatty laughed. The ax could be injected with spiritual mental energy. Although he was not good at actual fighting, he could imbue a spiritual attack into his physical attack. One attack could severely injure his opponent's spiritual soul, making his opponent turn into a retard.

He purposely measured Yi Yun's neck and head with the ax, as if he was choosing his angle of attack. Attacking Yi Yun now was no different than attacking a motionless straw target.

Seeing the fatty gain complete control over the situation to the point of freely choosing the angle of his attack, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors off-stage turned excited.

"Qianshui! Qianshui!"

They shouted loudly as their emotions amplified in excitement.

"Qianshui! Chop off the kid's head!"

"Qianshui! Cut him to pieces!"

Many of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors were standing up due to their excitement. They were waving their arms. Some even drew their weapons and gestured motions that resembled the act of cutting off Yi Yun's head.

With the Soul Cutting Axe in hand, the fatty raised both his hands to enjoy the cheers. Following that, his eyes immediately turned cold as intense killing intent appeared in his gaze towards Yi Yun.

"Kid, don't blame this Fat Lord."

The fatty grinned as he leaped up to charge at Yi Yun!

His fat body began moving and he looked like a bouncing ball. His speed was not very fast, but there was no need for speed as his

opponent could not dodge.

The fatty rushed right in front of Yi Yun and he injected spiritual mental energy into the Soul Cutting Axe, making it emit a black light. The ghastly face on the handle began to emit wailing sounds that were like a ghost crying!

At that moment, the referee in charge of this match turned nervous. He was, after all, a Tai Ah Divine City law-enforcer, so he was worried that the fatty would heavily injure Yi Yun on purpose. He was prepared to make a move at any time to save Yi Yun. This was instructed to him by Cang Yan as Cang Yan had to guard against the fatty's strange illusion techniques.

However, just as the referee was about to make his move, he was stunned. In his extreme focused spiritual perception, he suddenly noticed that Yi Yun's body was circulating immense amounts of Yuan Qi. It was as if a calm pool of spring water had suddenly transformed into a violent vortex!

At that instant, the Soul Cutting Axe's black light seemed to stall. The originally motionless Yi Yun reflected in the fatty's eyes suddenly opened both his eyes.

Yi Yun's gaze contained a hint of sneer and sinister playfulness.

What!?

The fatty's grin immediately froze. He was like a mortal who was

sneaking up on a tiger and, when he raised his metal fork, the tiger suddenly woke up.

Yi Yun's right hand, which had been constantly pressing on his interspatial ring, suddenly sprang up and in his hand appeared a cold metallic brick.

Everything happened in a split second!

Yi Yun suddenly took a step forward and with his Yuan Qi exploding, the pure Yang Qi from the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was injected into the brick. The pure Yang flames burned as the brick came crashing down at the fatty's head.

The fatty momentarily went into a daze. Although he was not good at actually fighting, as long as he was mentally prepared, he could dodge, but... Yi Yun's sudden attack had exceeded all his expectations and understandings. This resulted in Yi Yun's attack completing about half its trajectory before the fatty suddenly woke up from his daze to retreat.

However, it was already too late!

How could the fatty's speed compare with Yi Yun's?

Yi Yun quickly caught up and, like a maggot that could not be shaken, the brick hit the fatty's oily forehead!

"Peng!"

A thud boomed out and people heard the unmistakable crack of a skull fracture. The fatty's body bounced off as if it was a ball that had impacted a wall. He then flew out tens of meters before heavily crashing into a purple tungsten wall.

"Boom!"

Like the sound of a dead pig crashing down from a high height, the fatty's body was like a large pancake that slapped onto the wall. After a few seconds, his body slowly slid down to the ground.

Left behind on the purple tungsten wall were gruesome blood stains. The fatty's face was covered in blood with his eyes staring wide open. His expression was that of seeing a ghost.

Yi Yun's attack had been too sudden. The final explosive attack at the last moment was Fast! Accurate! Ruthless! It did not give the fatty any chance of dodging.

Around the Divine Wilderness Stage, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience were like roosters who had their necks squeezed. The cheering stopped as the cacophony of voices turned into a complete silence that resembled that of a graveyard. All of this happened in a second.

They were still maintaining their standing positions with their arms high up in the air. Their expressions were that of excitement as if they were waiting to see the mayhem that was to occur. All of that had been frozen on their faces. However, the mayhem that

happened did not befall on Yi Yun, but instead, it befell the unlucky fatty.

A group of people seemed to turn into a row of standing zombies. They were silent, stiff and twisting.

The reversal had happened too fast. They had yet to understand what had actually happened.

This included the Tai Ah Divine City's warriors who were also confounded. They did not understand how Yi Yun had won. Was the fatty's illusion useless against Yi Yun? Even Yao Dao could not break through the illusions, so how was Yi Yun able to do so?

Chapter 329: Feng Lin

"Yi Yun, are you alright...?" Chu Xiaoran worriedly asked as Yi Yun came off the stage, but she quickly realized that her question made no sense.

Yi Yun looked as if he couldn't be any better. In fact, it looked like he never took part in a huge battle. He had casually loosened his muscles, warming up his body before casually defeating the fatty.

Thinking back to the battle process, Yi Yun had won far too easily. From beginning to end, he had only stepped forward once and attacked once. Besides, the weapon he used wasn't even his saber...

If one ignored the time it took for the fatty to prepare his Seven Illusion Wolf Smoke and illusion technique to bewitch Yi Yun, then it took them less than the blink of an eye to exchange blows. This was definitely the fastest Yi Yun had ever taken care of an opponent.

Chu Xiaoran did not really know what to say.

This fatty was not some nobody. He was from the Qianshui clan and this mysterious family clan's mystic technique was dreaded by countless numbers of people. In the Yun Long 72 Pagodas, this fatty should be ranked in the top 3. He had defeated Yao Dao and Yang Qian, but against Yi Yun, this fatty had suddenly transformed into a straw sack. If Chu Xiaoran had not seen the match between

Yao Dao and the fatty with her own eyes, she would have never have believed that the fatty was a top expert.

In the Elder stands, Cang Yan was stroking his chin and he was also very alarmed.

"Could this kid have specially trained his spiritual mental powers?"

Originally, he did not have any hope in Yi Yun truly defeating the fatty, because he could not conceive how Yi Yun could win. It was only because Yi Yun often surprised him pleasantly that he hoped that there would be a pleasant surprise this time. This was the unconditional trust and anticipation he had in Yi Yun.

However, not only did Yi Yun give him a pleasant surprise, it was such a ridiculously pleasant surprise that it made it hard for Cang Yan to believe it.

Though, now was not time to question Yi Yun in detail. Cang Yan stroked his chin as he suddenly recalled something. He turned his head and looked at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders with great interest.

As expected, Cang Yan saw the two white-robed Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders look like their dear sons just died. Their expressions were extremely ugly.

This made Cang Yan overjoyed. His current feelings could be

described in one word: "awesome".

"Feng Lin, what are you doing!?"

One of the white-robed Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder was fuming with anger. Especially after seeing Cang Yan's sardonic, wretched and arrogant smile, he was so angry that even his liver ached.

Letting go of the fact that Yi Yun won the teenager group competition, now he also flaunted himself in the overall group competition. Many of the Elders could not bear it any more!

"Elder Bai Yu, I do not know what happened either. Qianshui's illusions seem to be ineffective against Yi Yun." Said a girl, in a palatial attire, from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's participant benches. She was the leader of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's participants.

When they first reached the Tai Ah Divine City, this girl and the fatty in yellow had stood in the airship, looking down at all of the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators. Back then, the fatty was commenting on others while being highly spirited and vigorous.

Unexpectedly, when the real battle happened, he was nearly beaten into a retard by a fourteen year old kid with a brick.

Feng Lin found it fascinating. Even when she fought the fatty, she had to be extremely careful. She had to use the accumulation of

her family heritage's "Clear Minded Curse", the fact that her cultivation level was higher than the fatty's and the experience that she gained from fighting warriors with illusion techniques to barely beat him.

Yi Yun had nothing. How did he win?

"No matter what the reason is. I absolutely do not wish to see a loss in the next battle!" Elder Bai Yiu said unhappily.

Feng Lin took a deep breath and said, "Do not worry, Elder Bai Yu."

While Feng Lin was conversing with Bai Yu, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors in the arena were filled with high emotions!

Yi Yun's brick really allowed them to vent their frustration!

When they saw the fatty's various forms of arrogance earlier, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors had to suppress their anger, wishing they could go up and step on his fat face.

However, everyone knew that the fatty was very strong. He even defeated Yao Dao. Even Yi Yun would find it difficult, what more them.

They never expected to see the fatty jump up and down on the stage, acting smug and all, only to later be bricked down by Yi Yun. What else could be more exhilarating than that?

Therefore, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors now only wished that they could rush up to the Divine Wilderness Stage and toss Yi Yun up into the air.

In this state of excitement, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors cheers went on without any signs of abating for just a bit under 15 minutes.

Only when the referee went on stage did they slowly quieten down.

"Next match, Yun Long Divine Kingdom, who is fighting?"

The referee did not bother asking Yi Yun as Yi Yun was already standing in the middle of the Divine Wilderness Stage.

Seeing Yi Yun's calm expression while standing on the stage, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors did not look too good.

"This kid must have some method of breaking through illusions. Senior Brother Qianshui isn't good at fighting. Furthermore, Yi Yun took him by surprise and made him suffer. He might not have that much of an ability, I'll go up and finish him!" A youth dressed in a red shirt said just as he was about to jump up on the Divine Wilderness Stage.

However, just as he jumped, he was pulled straight back by Feng Lin.

"Shut up!" Feng Lin suddenly boomed.

"Senior Sister, I..." The youth in red was left dazed by Feng Lin's berating.

"Do you think we haven't lost enough face? You really think Yi Yun is weak? Or do you think that you can squash him just because he's young? Do not forget that you need to suppress your cultivation level. Back then, even Jun Yue lost!"

Feng Lin's words left the youth in red speechless.

His strength was only ranked above average in this group of people, so he naturally did not dare to refute Feng Lin.

As the leader, Feng Lin had the right to decide who was to go up on stage. Feng Lin was originally considering letting their 4th or 5th rank person battle Yi Yun as they wouldn't fight too poorly.

However, now, with Elder Bai Yu's authoritative command, Feng Lin was thinking of going up herself.

This match had to finish Yi Yun off. For even if they won after letting Yi Yun go through a series of battles alone, it would be too shameful.

Before Feng Lin went on stage, she subconsciously looked at the

corner of the participant benches. A pale faced youth in black sat there. His hair covered his eyes. Even when the fatty was defeated by Yi Yun, he never seemed to have any reaction.

Feng Lin took a light breath of air before she walked straight up on stage.

"I'll fight you!"

"Oh?" Yi Yun's heart thumped. In the Purple Crystal's energy vision, Yi Yun had sensed that this girl in palatial attire had surging energy.

"This girl's strength... is very strong!"

Yi Yun knew that he had easily defeated the fatty because he used trickery, thanks to the Purple Crystal.

Unfortunately, the fatty's abilities were completely countered by Yi Yun. Furthermore, Yi Yun had purposely given the fatty the false impression of "I've fallen into your illusion, you can attack me now", luring him to come closer to him. And in the moment that the fatty thought he had already won, Yi Yun beat him with one strike.

This fatty had really been badly cheated by Yi Yun.

The battle was won easily, but Yi Yun would not look down on the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors because of it.

Amongst the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors, there were people who were extremely frightening, so much that Yi Yun did not have complete confidence against them.

For example, the girl in palatial attire was not an ordinary person.

Against this girl, Yi Yun immediately retrieved his Sonic Deathblade.

Chapter 330: Jade Maiden 18 Swords

"Yi Yun, I never expected that in my trip to the Tai Ah Divine City, my first battle would be against you, a fourteen year old child."

Feng Lin looked at Yi Yun as she slowly took her palatial gown off.

Feng Lin's body was slender and she was an elite of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. Although she wore a tight combat attire under her palatial gown and wasn't revealing anything provocative, the blood of the hot-blooded teenagers present started pulsating through their veins upon seeing the stripping scene.

Some of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's youths even started cheering loudly, shouting out Feng Lin's name.

Feng Lin was very popular in the Yun Long 72 Pagodas. She was the object of admiration for many of the male cultivators.

Feng Lin was different from Fatty Qianshui as she did not have the slightest reaction to the cheers. She was only looking at Yi Yun. At that moment, Feng Lin had already appeared in her combat attire that clung closely to her body, perfectly showcasing her relatively well-developed mature figure.

She slowly took out a broad and tall, ice-blue metal box from her interspatial ring.

There was a slender, foot-long sword hilt on the top of the ice-blue metal box.

It was a sword case.

The sword case was wider than Feng Lin's waist and it almost looked like a door. It did not match Feng Lin's figure.

Yi Yun looked carefully at the weapon, "Truly... an exotic weapon, but... you seem to be older than me by only a few years."

Yi Yun found it amusing. This bunch of elites liked to act older than they were. Just because they were a few years older, they would label others as children. However, it was likely that, as the leader of these people, this young girl was used to being a young leader and considered herself mature.

"My sword, is actually not exotic..."

As Feng Lin said that, she lightly pressed on the sword hilt as if activating a mechanism. With a soft "Ka" sound, the sword case opened and numerous small sword cases popped out of the main sword case as they split into two sides.

There were a total of 18 sword cases and they formed into a semicircle, like a peacock's tail. Every sword case had a sword hilt to it.

"Oh? This is..."

Yi Yun looked at the ice-blue, fan-shaped sword cases. These weapons seemed very gaudy.

A single person using 18 swords? Why did the people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom like to use so many swords?

Feng Lin smiled, "My swords are different..."

As she said that, she gently pulled out a sword. This sword case was made of an unknown metal which was ice-blue in color, and so was the sword itself. The sword was about four feet long and the blade was not more than three fingers wide. On the blade, there were blue lines resembling ice cracks, making it extremely beautiful.

Feng Lin said, "Usually when I fight others, using up to my fourth sword will be enough. Today, I have to suppress my cultivation level to the early stage of the Yuan Foundation realm while fighting you. I wonder how many swords I will need? I might even need to use all of them."

As Feng Lin said that, her figure moved, and an unbelievable scene occurred. Behind Feng Lin, water vapor started concealing her, causing her figure to turn blurry, as if she was conjuring many phantom images.

After that, those phantom images suddenly turned into real

bodies as they walked out one by one from behind Feng Lin. These girls were identical to Feng Lin, as if she was part of multiple births.

"Huh!?"

Yi Yun was shocked. What sort of cultivation technique was this? Cloning technique?

A person could suddenly split into so many people?

Yi Yun knew that these were not after-images formed from extreme speed but actual bodies!

Every Feng Lin was identical in terms of clothes and dressing. They all came before a fan-shaped sword case and pulled out a sword.

In a split moment, there were 9 Feng Lins standing in front of Yi Yun, each with a sword in hand.

"For this battle, let's begin with 9 swords!"

The 9 Feng Lins held up their swords and a row of flashes from the ice-blue swords' ice fragment cracks was reflected, creating a dazzling scene.

"Yi Yun, this is a water-elemental mirror-image." Cang Yan's

Yuan Qi transmission rang in Yi Yun's ear.

"Oh? Water-elemental mirror image?" Yi Yun was shocked. The water-elemental laws of the five elemental laws, was a law that had multiple transformations. Different warriors would end up with completely different insights when they tried to understand the water-elemental laws.

For example, Feng Lin was currently manipulating the mirror-like properties of water.

Others would use the water-elemental healing properties, the water-elemental defensive properties, water-elemental attacks or water-elemental elixir refinement.

Every realm, when completely understood, could give rise to a top expert, or a talent many factions would woo to fill a support role.

At that moment, the 9 Feng Lins formed a circle, enclosing Yi Yun in the center.

Yi Yun knew exactly which one that was Feng Lin's actual body, but identifying which one did not have much meaning to it. The water-elemental mirror images were not used to confuse the enemy but they were used to kill.

"Jade Maiden Nine Swords Array!"

All nine Feng Lins moved together! Their motions were uniform as four swords stabbed at Yi Yun's head. Yi Yun brandished his saber, warding off the four swords. However, at that moment, from between the bodies of those four girls came another 4 sword attacks that stabbed forward like venomous snakes!

The other four girls were behind the initial four girls. They coordinated their attacks and their sword techniques were extremely precise!

Yi Yun had not yet recovered from brandishing his saber, so he was unable to do anything but use his Minute Subtlety movement technique to dodge to the side, surviving the second round of attacks.

However, at that moment, another Feng Lin came attacking out from thin air.

This Feng Lin was the real Feng Lin!

"Autumn Waters* of a Sword!"

Feng Lin's sword slashed out. In the sky, her Yuan Qi formed into the phantom image of rippling autumn waters with the setting Sun shining as the sky darkened in the golden lit sparkling autumn lakes. It was extremely beautiful.

This sword's beautiful scene was intoxicating, but Yi Yun knew that behind the beautiful scene, there was deadly killing intent!

Yi Yun gathered an amount of Yuan Qi as the phantom image of a saber mountain in the midst of a sea of blood appeared behind him, as if Ashura hell had entered the human realm. This phantom image was in deep contrast with Feng Lin's Autumn Water Sword image.

Saber Truth's 32 Words – Killing At Its Core!

Yi Yun's killing intent exploded as his saber beam was stained blood-red. Red Yuan Qi gushed out, breaking the Autumn Water Sunset in front of him apart!

"Clang!"

The saber and sword clashed, issuing a clear ring!

The strong impact made both Feng Lin and Yi Yun retreat backward. With a thought, Feng Lin used her Jade Maiden 12 Swords!

"Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!"

Another 3 female figures flew out and, with a chime from the sword cases, 3 swords flew out and entered into the hands of the 3 girls!

These 3 girls attacked at Yi Yun, sending another 3 swords

stabbing right at Yi Yun's face!

At that moment, Yi Yun held his saber back. Seeing the nonstop attacks from the water-elemental mirror images, Yi Yun's eyes were filling with killing intent. He bit the tip of his tongue as he gathered Yuan Qi.

Tai Ah Sacred Technique!

Boom!

Yi Yun's Radiant Sun Qi exploded and behind him, the phantom image of the Tang Valley formed.

Yi Yun slashed with his saber, which now contained the Radiant Sun's power.

The Saber Truth's 32 Words – Reigning Supreme!

The flames burned as the pure Yang Yuan Qi surged. The sky above the arena was immediately dyed golden by the pure Yang flames, as if a Sun had fallen into the human realm!

"Peng! Peng! Peng!"

The 3 closest girls exploded in front of the Radiant Sun, turning into water vapor. Under the pure Yang flames, they instantly evaporated.

Three swords fell to the ground.

With his attack succeeding, without pause, he and his saber flew out in a beam. His target was the fan shaped sword case that was erected on the ground!

He could tell that the core of Feng Lin's Jade Maiden Sword Array was the large sword case, so Yi Yun wanted to destroy the sword case's power!

Seeing Yi Yun's actions, Feng Lin grunted coldly!

Jade Maiden Sword Array – Ten Thousand Swords Firing in Unity!

In that instant, Feng Lin's sword case shot out ten thousand beams of golden light. Each golden beam was a beam made out of Sword Qi!

The remaining 6 swords issued a clear ring as they left the scabbard and directly flew towards Yi Yun!

The six swords flew together with 10,000 sword beams!

Yi Yun constricted his pupils and quickly retreated!

There was no way to dodge such a dense amount of sword beams.

As Yi Yun retreated, he brandished his saber to break the attack.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

The saber beam directly clashed with the sword beams while Yi Yun's protective Yuan Qi was constantly punctured by the swords!

At that moment, Feng Lin's main body attacked Yi Yun from behind.

Jade Maiden 18 Swords!

Feng Lin circulated her Yuan Qi to an extreme as 18 mirror images simultaneously appeared. Even the 3 mirror images that had previously been destroyed by Yi Yun's Radiant Sun Qi were once again recreated. As long as Feng Lin had any Yuan Qi left, she would be able to constantly create new mirror images!

Out of the 18 Feng Lins, 12 of them wielded swords while the other 6 were using their fingers as swords. A cold beam emerged out from their slender fingers that were no different from swords!

The 10,000 sword beams, together with the 18 Feng Lins, attacked Yi Yun from the front and the back!

At that moment, everyone in the audience were highly focused on the match as they held their breaths!

Yi Yun had no way of dodging. He sent his thoughts to the Purple Crystal, and activated the pure Yang spirit's energy. Immediately, all the pure Yang Qi around him rushed towards Yi Yun.

Pure Yang spirit, explode!

"Boom!"

In the Purple Crystal, what was a quietly burning pure Yang spirit now completely exploded. It was as if a Sun was born inside Yi Yun's body. By using the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, Yi Yun was able to attack in all directions! Even the phantom image of the Tang Valley behind Yi Yun exploded.

The flames burned, repelling Feng Lin's 17 mirror images and completely shattering the 10,000 sword beams.

Even so, Feng Lin's main body broke through the pure Yang burning flames, but her sword's momentum was greatly reduced.

The main body's sword flew directly at Yi Yun's heart!

"Cha!"

The sword Qi stabbed through Yi Yun's protective Yuan Qi, heavily impacting the pure Yang energy. Yi Yun flew backward, like a kite, flying diagonally out of the Divine Wilderness Stage.

Feng Lin's attack had lost all of its momentum, so she was still unable to hurt Yi Yun at all.

Yi Yun pressed his chest lightly as he adjusted his breathing and his Yuan Qi as he looked up at Feng Lin.

At that moment, Feng Lin's long hair was a mess. There were many tears on her clothes. Even with the protection of her protective Yuan Qi, her combat attire could not withstand the powerful saber Qi.

And behind her, the 17 mirror images had completely exploded into a pool of water.

Yi Yun's attack was powered by the pure Yang spirit's energy. He may have expended quite a bit of energy, but he finally managed to break Feng Lin's Jade Maiden 18 Swords Array.

Around the Divine Wilderness Stage, the audience stared on in silence as the battle was so intense.

In comparison, the battles before were similarly intense, but they were, after all, only sword and saber attacks. There was plenty of aggression and blood, but they were not as magnificent as this.

They were unlike this battle. The gorgeous lights and the picturesque phenomenon formed in the sky was a feast for their eyes.

Autumn Waters is used to describe the limpid eyes of a maiden, coinciding with the concept of a Jade Maiden.

Chapter 331: The Sword Appears

The audience around the Divine Wilderness Stage were staring unblinkingly at the stage, afraid to miss any of the exciting scenes. The atmosphere in the entire arena seemed to freeze.

Especially the Tai Ah Divine City warriors, who were even more nervous. At that moment, only Yi Yun could fight for their Tai Ah Divine City.

And until now, the battle between Yi Yun and Feng Lin was a close call. It was hard to predict what the outcome of the battle would be.

"You really are impressive!" Feng Lin looked at Yi Yun and showed some appreciation of him, "Unfortunately... your cultivation level limits you, dooming you to fail in this battle!"

Before Yi Yun could respond to Feng Lin's speech, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors off-stage immediately roused up, "This Feng Lin sure can brag. Wasn't her eighteen chicks array or whatever broken by Yi Yun!?"

"Right, she couldn't even beat him with eighteen people. What's she so cocky about!?"

As Yi Yun had created a series of victories previously, many Tai Ah Divine City warriors had absolute confidence in Yi Yun. Although the outcome of the battle was currently not clear, they still hoped that Yi Yun would be able to create a miracle at the very

last moment.

Some of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors were already standing up, jeering at Feng Lin. However, Feng Lin was not affected by it and simply turned a deaf ear.

Feng Lin continued, "Yi Yun, the accomplishments in your saber techniques is shocking. As for your understanding of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', it far exceeds your peers. Unfortunately, your cultivation level has not broken into the Yuan Foundation realm, so you are lacking in Yuan Qi. Your struggle in gathering Yuan Qi could be seen when you were dealing with my Jade Maiden 18 Swords Array."

Feng Lin's words pointed Yi Yun's weakness out in the previous round. When Feng Lin attacked with 18 people, there was no gap in her offense, and the attack was like a relentless rain.

Yi Yun could handle the first wave of attacks, but the second wave would follow closely behind!

This meant that Yi Yun had no choice but to forcefully gather his Yuan Qi. This created extreme pressure on his body and meridians.

If Yi Yun was in the Yuan Foundation realm, the depth of his Yuan Qi would prevent that from happening.

Even the Tai Ah Divine City warriors had to admit that what Feng Lin said was true.

But so what if it was the truth, Yi Yun might still have hidden moves. At the final critical moment, he could conquer and secure victory!

In the audience stands, there were Tai Ah Divine City warriors beginning to shout words of encouragement to Yi Yun.

However, at that moment, Feng Lin grabbed the sword handle on the opened up sword case with a single hand.

"Oh? Could it be..."

Yi Yun's heart thumped. After Feng Lin's sword case was opened, there were 9 swords on both sides of it. All the hilts were pointing upwards, like that of an opened peacock's tail.

However, the fact of the matter was that right in the middle of the sword case was another sword hilt. Yi Yun had previously thought that the sword hilt was the handle to the sword case, but it did not seem so anymore.

"Clang!"

With a clear ring, Feng Lin pulled out a huge sword from the top of the sword case!

The sword's blade was 156 cm long, it was as wide as a palm,

which meant that it was much larger than the other eighteen swords.

This heavy sword was more suited for a stout man. It looked quite jarring to see Feng Lin holding it.

"This nineteenth sword's name is the Angel Sword, and it is also my last sword..." Feng Lin said as she threw the sword into the air.

And at that moment, Feng Lin's body began glowing, as if countless pieces of silver was shimmering.

In this light, a light entity in the shape of a young girl appeared from within her. Her arms were covering her chest and her body was curled up. And on her back was a pair of wings.

"Pa!"

The girl spread out her wings and they spanned nearly three meters, covering Feng Lin completely.

The girl stood up from the light. She seemed to have hatched out from a cocoon. Finally, the "Angel Sword" floated in front of the girl.

She slowly grabbed the Angel Sword and pointed it at Yi Yun!

This winged girl was more than two meters in height. The huge

sword suited her very well!

"Aspect Totem?"

Yi Yun constricted his pupils. From the beginning of the battle till now, Feng Lin had not conjured her Aspect Totem. Yi Yun never expected that Feng Lin's Aspect Totem was the shape of a girl. Looking at the girl, besides the wings behind her back, she looked identical to Feng Lin.

"Phew! Phew! Phew!"

With a soft sound, water-elemental mirror images began appearing beside Feng Lin!

A row of Feng Lins stood. And in the air, there was a winged girl totem.

"Nineteen swords!"

Seeing Feng Lin's Aspect Totem and her forceful stance, all the Tai Ah Divine City warriors who had previously cursed at Feng Lin immediately shut up.

Against such a Feng Lin, they too began to lack confidence.

"There's such an Aspect Totem?"

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors looked at each other. Amongst the Aspect Totems, they had seen beast-like ones the most. They had also seen Aspect Totems in the shape of weapons, such as sabers, swords, spears, and halberds.

However, it was very rare to see a humanoid Aspect Totem.

For a person's Aspect Totem to resemble themselves identically, and with another pair of wings was shocking. It was like the mythical legends of gods!

The winged girl had a listless expression. She seemed to ignore everything, including Yi Yun.

Her wings were gently flapping as a layer of hazy light covered her. The sword in her hand shone a cold beam that threatened one's soul!

"Yi Yun, he..." Wen Yu, Chu Xiaoran, and company, who were sitting in the participant benches, could not help but be worried. One could tell a warrior's strength from their forceful stance.

The current Feng Lin was as such.

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were all silent. Those who were standing up began to sit back into their seats as they looked nervously at Yi Yun.

And opposing the Tai Ah Divine City audience was the Yun Long

Divine Kingdom audience who started cheering. Many of them had never gotten the opportunity to see Feng Lin display her ultimate combat power.

In such a state, Feng Lin gave off the feeling of a fairy landing in the human realm.

"Breaking my Jade Maiden mirror-images was useless too. My Yuan Qi is thicker than yours. I can conjure an endless number of Jade Maiden mirror-images. As for your Yuan Qi, can you sustain it?"

Feng Lin's cold voice rang as she pointed the icy marked sword at Yi Yun.

A total of nineteen swords uniformly did the same!

Yi Yun's face turned serious at being pointed at by nineteen swords.

Feng Lin was indeed very strong. Yi Yun knew very clearly that with the powers that he had displayed, it was impossible to defeat Feng Lin.

Yi Yun was even considering if he should conjure his Aspect Totem.

At this stage, Yi Yun could no longer hide the fact that he had conjured a Golden Crow totem.

If he needed to explain to Cang Yan and company, it might be complicated, but it wasn't like he was unable to explain it away. As long as he retold the story of how he encountered a Golden Crow species fighting a pure Yang spirit in Fallen Star Gate and then used the protective charm Su Jie had given him, then he could explain how he killed the Golden Crow species. It was reasonable. The only thing that was incredulous was how he had managed to master the 'Myriad Beast Totem'.

Yi Yun's Aspect Totem may be powerful, but it had a problem, that was it expended too much Yuan Qi!

Feng Lin was right. Yi Yun's cultivation level was his weakness.

Yi Yun estimated that using his lacking Yuan Qi to support his Golden Crow totem only allowed him to use about one to two attacks.

After conjuring the Golden Crow totem, even if he defeated Feng Lin, Yi Yun would likely take days to recover his Yuan Qi.

But, this overall group competition was one where his opponents would fight him one by one.

Later on, Yi Yun still had to face the other opponents from the Yun Long 72 Pagodas, especially the youth in black. That youth's strength was extremely mysterious that made him worry.

In an extremely weak condition, it would be difficult for him to carry on fighting against the youth in black.

Yi Yun realized that it was extremely hard for him to win the overall group championship alone...

Regardless, he had to do the best he could. Everything else was left to providence.

"Yi Yun, now I will combine all my nineteen swords together. Let me warn you that, due to my present cultivation level and also it being recently learned, I am unable to control the strength of this move well once it is used. It might cost you your life. As a genius, there is no need to risk your life for an alliance tournament. It's still not too late to admit defeat now!"

With a sword in hand, Feng Lin looked elegant with her hair fluttering in the gentle wind!

Yi Yun looked at Feng Lin and took a deep breath. He touched his interspatial ring and a purple sword appeared in Yi Yun's hand.

Sword!?

Everyone in the audience was stunned seeing Yi Yun take out a sword. Wasn't Yi Yun a saber user? Why did he pull out a sword?

Yi Yun looked at the purple sword. Its blade was four feet long and emitted a cold shimmer.

Cang Yan had taken Yi Yun to the Tai Ah Divine City armory to choose this sword. It was one of the highest quality swords prepared for cultivators in the armory.

Its name was Distinguished Light. Even experts like Qin Haotian was unable to use the sword to its greatest capability.

"Indeed..." Yi Yun gently touched the sword blade and seemed to be speaking to himself. "There are some moves whose power is difficult to control. Although it is not a life and death match, it might still cause death. After all, in a final confrontation, when going all out, one cannot guarantee how much strength is used when using a move that you have not perfectly grasped..."

"You may have one, but so have I..." When Yi Yun said these words, the entire audience went into silence.

What did Yi Yun just say? "But so have I?"

By saying that, didn't he mean that he too had a move that he found it hard to control, that might even take the life of Feng Lin!?

Feng Lin was so strong, yet Yi Yun could actually take her life?

Could it be related to this sword?

Is that really true?

Yi Yun had always used a saber, so this made people find it hard to believe that he could have a more powerful move using a sword. After all, since ancient times, warriors would usually specialize in one weapon. In the history they knew, it was extremely rare for a person to train in both sword and saber!

"You have used a sword before?" Feng Lin's eyebrows frowned slightly as she looked suspiciously at Yi Yun. Before, she had some information on Yi Yun. In the Tai Ah Divine City, his weapon had always been a long saber.

"I've never used it in the past, but now I have to use it. I have a vague understanding of this sword attack. I too am not confident I can use this attack to its full extent. And you will be my first opponent to face my sword attack!"

After Yi Yun said this, Feng Lin's eyebrows knitted even closer.

Chapter 332: Breaking Waves

"A sword attack you just learned?"

If not for Yi Yun previously beating the strong Jun Yue, using some unknown technique to defeat Qianshui through trickery, and having a remarkable battle record, Feng Lin would have suspected that Yi Yun had a mental problem. He was actually going to use a sword attack that he recently learned to attack her with all he got when he had never even used a sword before.

"In the Tai Ah Divine City, there is a sacred ground for learning saber and swords. I had the privilege of entering the sacred ground of swords and gained some insight." Yi Yun gave a vague explanation. Feng Lin was stunned upon hearing this. There was a sacred ground for learning the way of the saber and sword in the Tai Ah Divine City?

"What sacred ground of sabers and swords? It's just the saber tomb and the sword tomb!" At that moment, a Yun Long 72 Pagodas Elder transmitted his voice, using Yuan Qi, right into Feng Lin's ear.

This old man knew that the Tai Ah Divine City had two mystic grounds, named the saber tomb and the sword tomb.

Both of the tombs were treated as an absolute treasure by the Tai Ah Divine City. And this bunch of Tai Ah Divine City fellows guarded this place very carefully, believing that it was a remnant of a Great Emperor expert, calling it a sacred ground for

swordsmen and saber users, despite not even being able to verify the tombs' history.

However, to the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders, this was all just intentional idealizing and bragging. Although they had never seen the sword and saber tomb, they knew that, over many years in the Tai Ah Divine City, many sages would constantly enter the tombs to gain insight into the sword and saber Dao, but weren't the sages that grasped something from the tombs still considered a bunch of weak trash?

In every generation of the Tai Ah Divine City, only the City Lord was worrisome.

Even if the tombs' grade was as described by the Tai Ah Divine City, taking 10,000 steps back, so what if it really was a remnant of a Great Emperor?

As people studied the sword tomb for tens of millions of years with no obvious results, how could a young junior, like Yi Yun, go in and come out with the ability to flip the heavens?

"Lin'er, this kid is just bluffing. Saying that his uncontrollable power will hurt you is just psychological warfare. If any sword move can be learned from the sword tomb, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would long since have exceeded the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. Would they then have gone around asking for help just just because of the fear of a Shepherd Boy?"

"You do not need to bother with it. Just go all out. Even if you kill

Yi Yun, it is what he deserves. With us around you can rest assured. We are on the side of reason, so the Tai Ah Divine City will not dare to do anything to you."

The white-robed Elder who had transmitted his voice was half a teacher of Feng Lin. Feng Lin's water-elemental laws were all learned from this white-robed Elder.

"Lin'er understands. No matter how good Yi Yun's sword techniques are, I will do my best to use my sword attack."

Feng Lin did not despise Yi Yun. Her powerful stance was continuously rising. It was as if she had become a Jade Maiden mountain that could not be looked at.

In the Elder stands, Cang Yan's fingers were rapping on the table. His thin palm was oozing with sweat.

What is this kid doing. Does he really want to use a move he just learned from the sword tomb to face Feng Lin?

"Cang Yan, Yi Yun was learning the ways of the sword in the sword tomb?"

At that moment, the stern voice of the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord rang in Cang Yan's ear.

Cang Yan felt bitter. It was him who had brought Yi Yun into the tomb to learn the ways of the sword.

He bit down and said, "Yes, this kid had adamantly requested to enter the sword tomb a few days ago. Old me was originally thinking of bringing him down a peg or two and set some conditions, bringing him into the sword tomb, who knew that he would..."

"A few days ago... bringing him down a peg or two..." The middle-aged scholar repeated those words a few times. It was unknown what he was thinking.

Cang Yan was helpless. Yi Yun had a bright future ahead of him with sabers, yet he wanted to learn swords. He really was someone that made one worry.

And at that moment, Cang Yan had no time to explain any further. The 18 Feng Lins as well as Feng Lin's Aspect Totem raised their swords.

The sword beams were intertwined as they filled the sky. Seen from a distance, it was like an immense ocean. This ocean was a vast expanse of misty, shimmering, rolling waters.

The ocean was filled with a vast amounts of water.

People held their breaths. From the beginning of this match, Feng Lin's moves were all too shocking.

At that moment, Feng Lin struck. 18 sword beams, together with

the Aspect Totem's sword, entered the vast ocean, giving rise to a huge wave. This wave was filled with killing intent. It was not a phantom image of Yuan Qi, but formed from sword Qi.

There was not only one wave. One wave followed another as each wave rose higher than the other. There were a total of 9 huge waves now surging right at Yi Yun like mountains.

Within the waves were terrifying sword Qi!

At that moment, the warriors below the Divine Wilderness Stage, especially those who were facing the surging wave, felt the sword Qi at their eyebrows. It made them feel frightened and distraught. Many people subconsciously moved backward.

One could tell how terrifying Feng Lin's sword attack was just from the sword Qi's prowess which was enough to force these favored children of the Heavens to retreat!

At that moment, Yi Yun, who was standing in front of the roaring ocean and huge waves, appeared small in size. He looked like a little boat in a storm, completely negligible.

Yi Yun held the Distinguished Light sword tightly. In Yi Yun's vision, time seemed to come to a stop. The huge, surging wave seemed to move extremely slow.

There he stood, silently in front of the huge wave. In his mind, the Pure Yang Sword Palace's huge sword scar became even

clearer. It was as if he had actually seen the past scene of the Sword Palace's owner creating that scar with his very own eyes.

And that world destroying battle in the strange time-space. The bronze giant who was brandishing his halberd, ripping off a corner of the world, but still nearly had his head cut off by the Sword Palace's owner!

Yi Yun could not reproduce the Pure Yang Sword Palace's attack, but in this imagery, Yi Yun had managed to capture a trace of the sword attack's concept.

This conceptual trace slowly fused with the sword moves Yi Yun learned within the sword tomb.

Immediately, Yi Yun's mind seemed to be blessed. It was as if something had been activated as the concept and sword moves fused together.

He closed his eyes, ignoring the roar of the ocean. Without any conscious thought, Yi Yun raised his sword and gently slashed downwards!

At that moment, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was pulled in. Everything began to condense into sword Qi. These sword Qi began roaring from all directions. In the sky, the phantom image of a huge divine sword began to condense!

This sword resembled the sword the Sword Palace owner once

used! However, what Yi Yun was now using was a sword move from the sword tomb.

Only... Yi Yun had added an inexplicable concept into the sword tomb's move.

This was one of the Pure Yang Sword Palace sword scar's concepts. This concept seemed to be like a god having graced the lands, showing disdain at all life!

"Weng—

In the audience stands, the swords of some cultivators began to roar with a clear sound. Some of the swords even began to violently shake. Without the control of their owners, they even unsheathed themselves!

"My sword!"

A person quickly pressed and held onto his sword. The lower the cultivator's cultivation level was, the greater the influence on their swords were!

In the air, Yi Yun slashed the huge divine sword that had been condensed downwards, right into the raging huge waves!

Strangely, this fierce impact was without sound. It was as if everything in the world had lost its voice.

The huge waves were split apart by that one sword. It was like a mountain having been split by a divine sword!

After the first huge wave was split apart, the divine sword did not lose its momentum. It was an irresistible force.

Wave after wave was split apart one after another. The divine sword slashed straight at Feng Lin's eyebrows!

"What!?"

Seeing the powerful sword Qi coming towards her, Feng Lin was in a shock. At that moment, she really felt the approach of death!

"Lin'er!"

At that moment, a white-robed Elder in the Elder stands stood up!

At the same time, Feng Lin pointed with her sword tip, and behind her, the 17 water-elemental mirror images, as well as her Aspect Totem, charged directly at the sword beam.

"Peng!"

With an fierce impact, the 17 water-elemental mirror images exploded, turning into water vapor before completely

disappearing. Even Feng Lin's Aspect Totem was split apart by the sword beam.

Feng Lin's body violently shook as a sword scar appeared from Feng Lin's shoulder, going all the way down to her thigh. Her body flew out just like that!

While flying backward, Feng Lin could feel that her body had almost been torn apart by the sword Qi!

Having her body torn apart would no doubt mean her death!

And at that moment, she suddenly felt her body become light. A white-robed old man had appeared behind her like a ghost. This white-robed old man grabbed Feng Lin with one hand, and flicked his sleeve with the other!

"Peng!"

With a loud explosion, the huge phantom sword image formed from sword Qi was shattered by the white-robed Elder!

However, the shattered huge sword still formed into tiny pieces of sword Qi as the fragments spread out wantonly as they emitted "Chi Chi Chi" sounds. These sword Qi wandered around in the air for a long time...

"This sword Qi!"

The white-robed Elder focused his eyes. These sword Qi actually had a trace of an undying property.

Clearly his strength exceeded that of Yi Yun and could easily destroy the sword Qi instantaneously, but the destroyed sword Qi still remained lethal. It made people feel apprehension.

At that moment, Feng Lin, who had been saved by the white-robed Elder, was pale in the face.

There was a shocking wound on her body. It was almost as if her body had been cut open. If not for the white-robed old man suddenly appearing, Feng Lin would really have been killed by Yi Yun's sword attack.

The entire audience turned silent upon seeing this scene.

Feng Lin's terrifying final attack, with 19 swords as one, was broken by Yi Yun? And it was broken in such an easy fashion?

Even Feng Lin herself nearly got killed by Yi Yun!

What attack was this? Wasn't it too terrifying?

Some Tai Ah Divine City Elders could tell that this attack was indeed a sword move from the sword tomb, but how did this sword tomb move gain such a powerful force to it?

"This attack... how could it be?"

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord found it fascinating. He could faintly feel that this attack was somehow different from the sword tomb's move.

He could not explain what this tiny difference was. Could it be something that Yi Yun had added?

As for Cang Yan, being the person who brought Yi Yun into the sword tomb, his expression was as if he had seen a ghost after seeing Yi Yun's final sword attack.

He still did not understand what had just happened.

"This kid... he..."

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun with his eyelids twitching.

At that moment, Yi Yun's right hand, which wielded his sword, was completely covered in blood.

On his arm, one blood vessel after the other burst open and blood flowed out of them without stopping. It looked as if he had been fished out of a blood pool. It was shocking!

The hand which Yi Yun used to hold the sword was trembling. It

looked as if he found it difficult to even hold the sword.

This sword attack had actually burst all the blood vessels in Yi Yun's right hand!

Chapter 333: Severely Injured

"Yi Yun's hand..."

Everyone's focus was originally on Feng Lin, only now realized that the sword-wielding hand of Yi Yun was bleeding profusely. All the blood vessels in it had ruptured, and even the tendons and meridians had suffered a great deal of damage.

Just using a sword attack caused such an injury to his hand.

This sword move is too terrifying...

"To think that Yi Yun's hand would suffer such an injury. That sword move's power far exceeds that which Yi Yun can control. His cultivation level is limited, so injecting that much energy into his meridians caused them to tear immediately..."

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were looking at Yi Yun with extreme worry.

With the price of one sword attack being so high, could Yi Yun still use his hand?

"Yi Yun!"

At that moment, the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord stood up. He was far in the seats of honor, but the look he gave Yi Yun was that

of generous appreciation.

"You have already done very well. If you cannot continue, do not force yourself."

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord had no expectations of Yi Yun actually winning the overall group championship because it was just too difficult.

Now, the City Lord knew that it was unlikely that Yi Yun would be able to use his right hand anymore. At the very least, Yi Yun could not use that terrifying sword attack again.

His arm would not be able to handle it.

Because of the sword attack, with its large Yuan Qi consumption, Yi Yun was only left with 60-70% Yuan Qi. Fighting in such a state against the Yun Long Divine Kingdom competitors would be extremely difficult. In fact, it should be said that it was impossible to win.

Looking at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side, there were 13 other people sitting on the participant benches. The pale-faced youth in black clothing had particularly stood out for the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. His strength could only be described as unfathomable for Yuan Foundation realm warriors.

In such a situation, how could Yi Yun win?

At that moment, the youth in black was no longer sitting quietly in a corner. He stood up, holding a sword as he looked at Yi Yun with dark black eyes.

Yi Yun also looked back at the youth in black. His right hand was still trembling, with blood continuously dripping from it.

"What a pity..."

At that moment, the youth in black sent a Yuan Qi voice transmission to Yi Yun. His voice was cold and heartless, causing one to worry. "If I knew you had such strength, I would have personally fought you in the previous round. And now, with your hand in such a state... you can no longer fight me."

The youth in black glanced at Yi Yun's hand and showed a sense of regret.

Although in this overall group match participants were allowed to take pills, elixirs, and relics to treat themselves, due to the short period of time, they had limited effects.

Discerning people could tell that the injury on Yi Yun's hand had reached to the root of his bones and the meridians. Even if it was immediately treated, only a small portion could be healed in the short period of time. If Yi Yun were to use that sword attack again, his hand might be completely destroyed!

This youth in black felt that it was a great pity.

He was a fanatic for martial arts and he trumped all of his peers. As a lonely expert, he was thirsty for an elite that could compete with him in a delightful battle. If Yi Yun could use that sword move, then Yi Yun would be qualified.

Yi Yun looked at the youth in black silently. He had already expected that this battle would be very tough, now it was indeed so. It had even exceeded his predictions, just the second battle had injured his arm thoroughly.

However, Feng Lin was just too strong and forced Yi Yun to do so.

The sword attack that had been injected with the Pure Yang Sword Palace's concept could really not be used by Yi Yun. He could not slash out an attack with that amount of force, if he did, Yi Yun would not be able to handle the stress on his arm.

"Yi Yun, do not force yourself!" Seeing that Yi Yun was not responding, the City Lord said again.

In this alliance tournament, lives could be lost in the exchanges between experts. Even if no lives were lost, it could also end up with heavy injuries, crippling some of them. It was possible to end up bedridden for more than 6 months. And for an elite like Yi Yun, 6 months was too precious. He could not afford to lose that.

"Thank you for your concern City Lord. However, I think I can carry on fighting."

Yi Yun's voice was calm. The hearts of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors' sank when they heard him say this. It was extremely worrying seeing Yi Yun's current state.

With Yi Yun's Yuan Qi being greatly depleted and having a severely injured hand, how could he carry on?

"Since you insist, then so be it..." The middle-aged scholar looked deeply at Yi Yun before slowly sitting down.

"Haha! This Yi Yun would rather die than lose face. He clearly can't handle it, yet he insists!" On the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side, a youth in silk clothes laughed disdainfully.

The youth's silk clothes were the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's clothes of nobility. The noble's clothes were embroidered with a flying black wyrm. It was equivalent to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Viscount. To rise to the rank of a Viscount at this age proved that this youth was not weak.

"A spent force should not speak the words of the brave. Yi Yun is finished. His hand is crippled and with less than 70% of his Yuan Qi left, he is nothing to be feared!" Another Yun Long Divine Kingdom elite said.

"He could admit defeat in a decent manner, but he was not smart enough and instead, he insists on dying on stage. If so, I will go up and finish him!"

The youth wearing the flying black river dragon suit grinned slyly and jumped up the Divine Wilderness Stage with a saber.

"Let me fight this match!"

The youth pointed his long saber at Yi Yun and smiled provocatively. "Yi Yun, you are very arrogant after having won a series of battles. Unfortunately, you are destined to be defeated by me, Murong Guang. Come! Let me see what other abilities you have left, use it all!"

Murong Guang's words had no restraint, causing the surrounding Tai Ah Divine City cultivators to fume with rage.

"Who does he think he is!? Taking advantage of a person's disadvantage and pretending to be great. He is shameless!"

Some senior cultivators only wished they could rush up and chop up Murong Guang.

"If not for Senior Yi Yun's injury, he would be no match for Senior Yi Yun!" One Tai Ah Divine City rookie junior was also fuming till her undeveloped chest heaved up and down.

However, at that moment, Murong Guang only sneered, "Only the outcome of the battle matters. Why does the process matter? So what if you are a genius? You will still end up being finished by me! No matter what reason it is, being defeated by me means being

defeated. It is something you can't remove from your entire life. Even if female saints were screwed by me, they are forever screwed! Hahaha!"

As Murong Guang was laughing, he suddenly went into a daze.

He saw Yi Yun take out a container from his interspatial ring. He opened the container's lid and in it, there was a heavy and sticky liquid.

"What is it?"

Before Murong Guang could see it carefully, Yi Yun had tilted his head and finished all the red liquid in the container.

Inside the container, there was precious blood, the precious blood of the Golden Crow species!

In Fallen Star Gate, after killing the Golden Crow species, Yi Yun had kept the corpse of the Golden Crow species into his interspatial ring. He had also taken the blood of the Golden Crow species's heart and stored it in blood containers. This was where all the essence of the Golden Crow species was.

Chapter 334: Golden Crow's Precious Blood

There was extremely rich pure Yang energy in the Golden Crow species's precious blood.

It was better than any healing medicine by many times. Typical healing medicines, even very high-grade ones, were limited when used by Purple Blood realm warriors. As Purple Blood realm warriors could only absorb a tiny amount, and even after absorbing it, the medicinal essence would take a while to be digested. After all, the medicinal properties of these healing medicines were different to the warrior's energy.

However, since this was the precious blood of the Golden Crow species. The situation was completely different.

As Yi Yun had absorbed the Golden Crow species's beast mark and had condensed a Golden Crow Aspect Totem, the essence and pure Yang energy in the precious blood was highly compatible with Yi Yun considering that they came from the same source. Hence, it was very easy for him to absorb it.

After Yi Yun drank the Golden Crow's precious blood, he felt as if there was a pure Yang flame burning in his body. The wanton energy first entered his dantian, and from there, it flowed out into his limbs. This feeling was extremely comfortable!

As for Yi Yun's heavily injured arm, the muscles in it were slowly moving, giving him an itchy feeling.

This meant that the muscles in Yi Yun's arm were quickly regrowing. His wound was also healing. Although his flesh was growing rapidly, it was extremely difficult for his meridians to connect back together.

Even though the Golden Crow species's precious blood came from the same source as Yi Yun's energy, it could not recover Yi Yun's arm in such a short time span.

"Taking medicine?"

Although he did not know what Yi Yun had drunk, Murong Guang could roughly guess that it was most likely the blood of some desolate beast. How effective could it be for healing one's wounds and replenishing Yuan Qi?

"Meet your death!"

Murong Guang unsheathed his saber and his Yuan Qi exploded. Although he knew that Yi Yun could not recover greatly from drinking the rejuvenating beast blood, he did not want to give Yi Yun any time for a breather. That would only create more variables in this battle.

He wanted to defeat Yi Yun in one blow, becoming the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's hero!

Defeating the person who defeated Feng Lin, how impressive was that?

"This shameless villain!"

Off the stage, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors were fuming. Yi Yun had just consumed medicine, yet Murong Guang didn't even wait to attack.

It was really like when the tiger enters leveled land, he would be insulted by dogs! Yi Yun may be strong, but fighting against more than 10 Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors turn by turn in such a condition fated him to be defeated. He might not even be able to beat Murong Guang.

Just thinking of Yi Yun losing to this nameless and shameless scum made the Tai Ah Divine City warriors' hearts burn.

Losing to Feng Lin was alright, but losing to such a person only made one furious.

At that moment, Murong Guang had already charged at Yi Yun. He was brandishing his saber while laughing loudly, "I'll show you my family's 'Murong Saber Technique'. This is a top class heritage saber technique of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. Today, I'll open your eyes! Letting you be defeated by this top class saber technique is me valuing you."

As he said that, his saber gave rise to numerous saber images. These saber images condensed into a tiger that charged at Yi Yun.

This was a tiger condensed from saber Qi.

Roar!

The tiger gave a tumultuous roar which echoed throughout the arena, hurting everyone's eardrums!

At that moment, Yi Yun remained ever calm against the tiger.

His brain was recalling the sword attack from before. The sword Qi condensed from the powerful Heaven Earth Yuan Qi went beyond the limitations of his meridians.

His arm had yet to recover and he could not use that attack again. However, after consuming the Golden Crow species's precious blood, Yi Yun had the ability to carry on. So what if he held back his Yuan Qi, and only used a tenth of that attack's power?

Yi Yun cleansed his soul and passed the sword to his left hand. The memories of the broken sword flashed in his mind as the scene of the Sword Palace owner cutting the bronze giant's head open once again appeared in his mind, clearer this time.

Yi Yun gently slashed with his left hand, following the Sword Palace's owner's strike.

"Cha!"

A sword beam, the thickness of a chopstick, shot out from Yi Yun's sword and it seemed to be hidden within the distortions of space-time.

This sword beam may be thin, but it did not mean that the injected energy was weak. It was because his sword Qi had reached an extreme, and it could compress the essence of the Yuan Qi greatly which resulted in this.

This sword beam was extremely sharp as it shot straight at the tiger's eyebrows!

Whew!

The sword beam did not meet any resistance as it pierced straight through the area between the tiger's eyebrows. The tiger was still charging at Yi Yun but it had been pierced by Yi Yun's sword beam!

This attack flew at Murong Guang in an unrivaled state.

"What!?"

Murong Guang was shocked. As he retreated, he brandished his saber to block!

"Ding!"

With a metallic clang, Murong Guang felt pain in his arm. The

thigh of his palm felt pain. There was a small hole, the size of a pinky, melted through his saber due to the highly compressed pure Yang sword beam!

Murong Guang watched the small hole form and next, he heard the sound of his protective Yuan Qi tear apart. At the same time, he felt pain in his heart. He felt great pain in his chest as his vision turned blurry.

He saw spurting blood. He felt his entire body lose all its energy as he knelt on the ground.

Murong Guang touched his chest and his fingers were covered with blood!

"I..."

He looked disbelieving at the wound on his chest. From the small wound, blood spurted out. However, Murong Guang knew that his body had been pierced right through by the sword beam!

"How is it possible... he was clearly... heavily injured...!"

"Peng!"

Murong Guang felt dizzy as his vision became even more blurry. With that, he fell straight to the ground.

"Peng!"

After a thud, blood flowed out of Murong Guang's chest, covering the floor with a pool of blood.

Everyone around the Divine Wilderness Stage who saw this scene was horrified!

Murong Guang's body had been pierced by Yi Yun's sword attack?

Just a few seconds ago, Yi Yun was still severely injured and it did not seem like he could make it, while Murong Guang seemed to have a forceful stance, wanting to defeat Yi Yun in one strike while he was weak.

Even to the Tai Ah Divine City warriors, it was highly likely that Murong Guang would have defeated Yi Yun.

However, in a split second, the situation was completely reversed!

After Murong Guang, who was once prominent, brandished his saber, he had been penetrated by Yi Yun's attack without actually exchanging blows with Yi Yun. It was still unknown if he was dead or alive!

Yi Yun was already so injured, yet he could be this strong!?

People looked at Yi Yun with their eyelids twitching. Especially the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors who felt a chill looking at Yi Yun.

At that moment, Yi Yun's right hand was no longer trembling. However, he was undeniably still greatly drained and his arm was still bleeding.

Although he was in a state of nearly breaking down, he had still defeated Murong Guang with one attack.

It was shocking. His vitality and combat power could be compared to that of a humanoid desolate beast...

At that moment, with a "shua" sound, a Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder had instantaneously appeared on the Divine Wilderness Stage.

He lifted Murong Guang up and fed him healing medicine.

At that moment, Murong Guang could no longer swallow, so the Elder had to use Yuan Qi to force the medicine down his throat.

After checking Murong Guang's injuries, the Elder's face turned sullen.

"His left lung was been pierced, hurting his heart, resulting in

spasms in his heart, and this prevented the heart from delivering blood. This kind of injury would be difficult to treat even with sacred medicine. Yi Yun, you sure are ruthless!"

The white-robed Elder looked angrily at Yi Yun with killing intent.

The people around the Divine Wilderness Stage gasped. Previously when Yi Yun fought with Kui Yu, he had purposely missed Kui Yu's organs.

But this time, he did not.

For Yuan Foundation realm warriors, they might not be able to recover in more than half a year when their hearts were injured. Just a bit of intense motion would cause the heart to not be able to provide blood, causing one to lose their breath.

The teenage years were the most precious period of the elites present. This was the period when warriors grew in strength rapidly. It could be said they were different every month.

After being so heavily injured, losing more than half a year's time, it would definitely affect one's accomplishments in the future!

Facing the white-robed Elder's killing gaze, Yi Yun did not cower in fear. He did not break any rules, so the other party could not do anything to him.

Sure enough, after the white-robed Elder expressed his killing intent, all the Elders on the Tai Ah Divine City stood up and locked on to the white-robed Elder. If he were to make a move, all of them would attack.

In a split second, the entire arena turned quiet as the atmosphere became tense.

Yi Yun was holding the Distinguished Light sword with both his arms bleeding. The blood flowed down the sword's blade and onto the floor, giving rise to the clear dripping sound. It filled the quiet arena.

"My physical condition isn't good so I cannot control my strength very well. For the upcoming battles, I will go all out. Every attack I use will be aimed at a vital part and I will not hold back. For anyone who comes up, I cannot guarantee that you can live going down!"

Yi Yun's words almost made the air freeze!

"This Yi Yun is courting death!" A Yun Long Divine Kingdom warrior said angrily.

"He is too arrogant!" a person echoed.

However, those who were angry quickly understood why Yi Yun was doing so.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom participants for the overall group championship exceeded the teenager group in strength. All of them were strong and their numbers were great.

Yi Yun would not be able to handle the challenges of more than ten people from beginning to the end.

Now, he had to save his Yuan Qi and stamina for every battle.

Just like in the previous battle, Yi Yun may seem to defeat Murong Guang easily, but how easy was it really?

The fact was that it wasn't. If it was that simple, Yi Yun could have defeated Murong Guang like he did with Kui Yu with the saber techniques from the saber tomb. That would reduce his energy consumption to the minimum.

However, he had used the sword intent from the Pure Yang Sword Palace. Although it was a small amount of energy, it was still an immense stress on Yi Yun's meridians and stamina.

If this went on, in a few battles, Yi Yun's Yuan Qi would be depleted. The meridians on both his hands would not be able to bear it and rupture. When that happened, Yi Yun would not be able to fight anymore.

When forced into this situation, would Yi Yun hold back?

Of course not!

Whoever wanted to challenge him had to pay the price!

They might be severely injured, crippled or even die!

As such, the people who wanted to challenge Yi Yun had to weigh the benefits to decide if it was worth it.

Going up was to be cannon fodder. They would consume Yi Yun's energy, but they had to give up the degrading of their future achievements. They might even pay the price of death. As such, no one was willing to come up.

This was Yi Yun's battle strategy. It was a bloody and simple, yet effective.

Indeed, after Yi Yun said those words, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom overall group participants frowned. When their gaze clashed with Yi Yun's cold gaze, they felt their confidence drop.

Chapter 335: Two Hours

Everyone knew that with more than ten people fighting him one after another, Yi Yun would definitely not be able to last more than a few rounds. However, everyone wanted to be the last person to end the situation. As prominent figures of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, no one wanted to be the second Murong Guang, sustaining serious injuries that would affect their own future.

At that moment, Yi Yun's left hand trembled gently. One blood vessel after another began to bulge. Although they did not rupture, they still looked like they were under immense stress. It seemed like Yi Yun was still greatly depleted from using that sword attack.

He took out another container of beast blood and tossed his head back to drink it down.

Many people turned speechless seeing this scene. They felt that Yi Yun should suffer a calamity from the skies and be struck by lightning. He always misled people. His hands were already trembling, the meridians and blood vessels on his arm had ruptured and his Yuan Qi had been greatly depleted. From the looks of it, he should not have lasted long, yet he nearly killed Murong Guang with his sword attack. With him doing this again, he made them lose confidence.

And that beast blood, what was it?

It seemed like the effects were very noticeable after drinking it. If it was ordinary desolate beast blood, then the effects should be

very typical.

If it was the blood of a primordial strain, ignoring the preciousness of it, it was not easy to absorb the primordial strain's blood with his Purple Blood realm cultivation level.

The blood of a primordial strain was no different than poison for many warriors.

Without knowing the full details, many of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom elites were in a dilemma.

They were as concerned about their future prospects as they treasured their lives. When they believed they could not beat Yi Yun, all of them hesitated as none of them took the initiative to stand forward.

At that moment, Bai quietly stood up. Without a word, he walked up the Divine Wilderness Stage.

When Yi Yun saw Bai appear, his pupils constricted. He gripped his sword's hilt tightly and breathed slowly. At that moment, Yi Yun was a like a desolate beast that was poised to attack.

Finally, he was going to fight this youth in black!

Yi Yun could guess the difficulty of this battle. If he was still at his peak condition, he would definitely look forward to the battle with Bai and would be filled with confidence.

However...now, Yi Yun was lacking in confidence. He did not know how strong Bai really was, nor did he know what moves he had.

The entire arena immediately turned silent.

Everyone was watching the Divine Wilderness Stage quietly, awaiting the final battle.

In the participant benches, Wen Yu, Chu Xiaoran, and other Tai Ah Divine City warriors were worried for Yi Yun. Unless a miracle happened, Yi Yun was unlikely to be able to use the strong sword attack he used to defeat Feng Lin.

Without that attack, could Yi Yun win against the unfathomable youth in black, Bai?

Amongst those people included the people in the Elder stands. There, the expressions of Cang Yan and company were solemn. They did not know what the outcome of the battle would be. Now, Cang Yan no longer cared if Yi Yun won the overall group championship, he was only worried about Yi Yun suffering any mishaps. If that happened, it would not have been worth it.

In the corner of the arena was a girl in red clothes. She was watching all of this quietly.

She was Luo Huo'er.

Luo Huo'er gave the reason of her being bad at actual combat to not participate in the alliance tournament. However, she had quietly come to the arena to watch the final match.

Since she was just there to watch, she was not worried about having any abnormalities discovered, as long as she didn't reveal the special energy within her body.

"Miss, that black-clothed guy looks very strong..."

Standing beside Luo Huo'er was the short-legged Dong'er.

"Tsk, are you worried about that rascal, Yi Yun?"

Dong'er immediately shut up. She slipped a glance at Luo Huo'er. She was unsure what Luo Huo'er was thinking, so at that moment, she felt that it was best she kept quiet.

Up on the Divine Wilderness Stage, the black-clothed youth was hugging his sword and did not attack Yi Yun.

"Are the two of you ready?" A Tai Ah Divine City referee asked.

At that moment, Bai extended a finger and looked at Yi Yun, "One two-hour period! I will only wait one two-hour period!"

When he said this, the entire audience became slightly stunned.

Two hours? This black-clothed youth was giving Yi Yun time to recuperate?

In the seats of honor, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner frowned.

Although he was extremely confident in Bai, that even if Bai were to fight against Yi Yun in his optimal state, he would have 80-90% chances of winning, he did not wish for Bai to give the other party time to recuperate his physical strength.

After all, this match was of grave importance. If a 100% guarantee could be accomplished, then it should not be any less. Now, having lost the teenager division championship, if the overall group championship had any mishaps, then he would be ridiculed by countless numbers of people when he returned to the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

"Bai! You are being too arrogant!" The Seven Star Pagoda Owner said with a stern voice that rang in Bai's ear. "You do not have the right to underestimate the enemy at that moment!"

"I'm not being arrogant, nor am I underestimating my enemy. I just want to have a proper and real duel. If the Lord Pagoda Owner isn't agreeable, you can always find someone else to replace me."

"You..." The Seven Star Pagoda Owner glanced at others as he frowned even more. Without Bai fighting Yi Yun, it was useless hoping for the others to win.

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner knew Bai's personality. No matter what others said, once Bai made a decision, he would not waver. His personality gave people headaches.

The Seven Star Pagoda Owner had no choice but to accept it. He knew that punishing Bai was also pointless.

"Two hours?" Yi Yun looked at Bai with surprised. He never expected the other party to have such a request. He looked at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's authority, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner who did not have any objections.

As such, Yi Yun sat down cross-legged, "Even if you are giving me time, I will not go easy!"

"That suits me!" Bai's voice was clear. "Resting for two hours will also not restore your arm, this actually...isn't a battle I want."

Bai looked at Yi Yun's hand and felt a sense of regret. He wanted to experience the power of that sword attack.

"You will have the chance in the future."

Yi Yun hurriedly began conditioning his breathing. He was just in need of time to absorb the two containers of Golden Crow species heart blood he had drunk.

Two hours of rest was extremely important for Yi Yun.

His opponent was not only Bai but the rest too.

He expected the fight with Bai to be even harder than the battle with Feng Lin. After finishing the battle, even if he won, he would be left with even less Yuan Qi.

There was still a bit of Golden Crow precious blood left. Using that precious blood and the remaining Yuan Qi he had to deal with the remaining 11 Yun Long Divine Kingdom members would be extremely difficult.

Time slowly passed as everyone watched the stage with bated breaths. No one spoke a word, nor did anyone leave.

People were waiting for the two hours to pass.

Yi Yun's hand no longer bled, and his meridians were slowly joining up. As long as he did not use the complete sword intent from the Pure Yang Sword Palace, Yi Yun's hands would be completely fine.

Yi Yun, who was meditating, slowly felt the Golden Crow species blood in his body burning. This energy made Yi Yun's body fill with fighting spirit.

Bai watched Yi Yun from a distance of a hundred feet away. Bit by bit, he wrapped a white cloth around his hand. When he finish

winding the cloth, Bai stood up and said calmly, "The time is up."

Chapter 336: Son Of Lightning

As Bai stood up and drew his sword, the arena, which was originally very quiet, became so silent that one could hear a pin drop.

Bai was finally fighting. Due to the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's side being so strong in the alliance tournament, Bai had never needed to fight until now.

This was the first time he was actually fighting in any real sense of the word.

Yi Yun also stood up and, with his right hand, took out the Sonic Deathblade.

A saber in his right hand and a sword in his left.

"His saber is in his right hand while his sword is in his left hand. Is Yi Yun going to rely mostly on the saber?"

Many people began to worry upon seeing Yi Yun use his saber against Bai.

To them, Yi Yun's sword was much stronger than his saber.

"Why is he not using his sword?" Many people were curious.

Someone shook his head, "Against Bai, it is likely that Yi Yun cannot continuously use his sword, or maybe it is that he will not be able to handle the energy drain."

Yi Yun's sword attacks were only stronger than his saber attacks when the Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword intent was used. And once the pure Yang sword intent was used, even just a tenth of it would be beyond that which Yi Yun's body could handle.

Nonetheless, if Yi Yun was going to rely mostly on his saber, how was he to defeat Bai?

"Thank you for giving me two hours to recuperate! Are you not afraid that by giving me two hours to recover, it might led to your defeat?"

Yi Yun casually shook the Sonic Deathblade as he injected Yuan Qi into it.

"Weng—"

The saber blade emitted a clear hum that sounded like the roar of a dragon. The Sonic Deathblade's sound waves alone could kill.

Bai however, was not affected by the Sonic Deathblade's hum. When the sound wave was 3 feet away from him, it was destroyed by his protective sword Qi.

"If you want to thank me, just go all out! It has been a long time

since last I looked forward to a fight. I can only wish for you having the ability to defeat me. It is a pity that, in the past two years, I have never suffered defeat against the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's younger generation."

"One victorious battle after another, not only does it not make me feel delighted, it also makes me feel perplexed. The Yun Long Divine Kingdom is just a tiny stage, I do not want to be blinded by the halo titles of being 'Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Number One' or 'Invincible amongst the Younger Generation'. If I do, I might not know how strong I am when I leave the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and enter a stronger faction. Maybe I would be as ridiculous as a frog in a well?"

"I do not want to end up in that situation. Therefore, your appearance has made me excited. If I were to be defeated by you, I will feel glad. I am not afraid of others surpassing me, I am only afraid that I do not know how far a real elite has progressed. If humans do not have a goal, they will be lost! Only with a goal will I be excited!"

The usually silent Bai suddenly spoke a lot.

Yi Yun was slightly stunned upon hearing this. He never expected Bai to have such thoughts and vision.

Indeed, be it the Yun Long Divine Kingdom or the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, they were just a drop in the ocean of this vast world.

Bai could not see how vast the world was, but he could foresee it.

As for Yi Yun, he really had seen a corner of that magnificent world. In the Pure Yang Sword Palace, that bronze giant who could destroy worlds and the Pure Yang Sword Palace owner left Yi Yun shocked.

The mushroom knows not the alternation of day and night, while the short-lived cicada does not know the seasons. If one were to see the vast world yet not explore it, turning to dust hundreds or thousands of years later, then what difference was there between them and the mushrooms and cicadas?

Such a life was too insignificant for people not resigning to fate. Yi Yun wished that he could be an equal of the world, becoming a main character of the current generation.

With the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun was already standing higher than others. As such, did he have any reason to slack off?

"Words are needless, let us fight!" Bai said and with a light "Chi" sound, lightning emerged from his sword's blade.

The purple lightning were like small snakes surging wantonly.

The law Bai cultivated was Lightning!

Yuan Foundation realm elites all cultivated a certain law. Thunder-elemental laws belonged to one of the nature-based elemental laws of Wind, Snow, Thunder and Lightning. They were

ranked equal to the five elements, but exceeded them in power.

"This sword's name is Black Light." Bai stretched out his index and middle finger as he gently stroked the sword's blade. The sword blade was black and did not reflect a single beam of light. It was only three feet long and the sword's pommel was unsophisticated while the sword's hilt was covered in old snake skin. Under the illumination of the lightning, the snake skin's scales had a luster sheen.

"I am going to attack!"

Just as Bai finished speaking, a purple beam suddenly flashed. The Black Light sword had stabbed straight through Yi Yun!

Bai's sword was so fast that it exceeded the limits of human recognition.

People only saw a purple flash and then Bai's sword had pierced through Yi Yun's chest!

"What?"

Some people gasped, but in a blink of an eye, Yi Yun's figure slowly blurred before completely disappearing.

Yi Yun's body had already appeared more than a hundred feet away.

It was an after-image that was stabbed.

Seeing Yi Yun look completely fine, many Tai Ah Divine City warriors let out a sigh of relief. This attack was too soul-wrenching. Before they could even react, the sword had already hit its mark. Thankfully Yi Yun's speed was very fast, if it was switched to them being on stage, they would have died.

"Your movement technique is not bad. Large success stage of Minute Subtlety!" Bai praised, "However... Minute Subtlety is just a form of controlling one's body. By perfectly doing so, one can dodge the attacks from enemies, but..."

Once Bai said that, his words took a sudden turn, "There is a limit to how well you can control your body. The potential of Minute Subtlety is only that much. It is only able to work wonders at a low level. When one's level slowly increases, especially when one begins to learn laws, the power of laws will far exceed that of Minute Subtlety and will completely replace it! As for Thunder and Lightning, it is the law that is best for speed."

"If what you just did was the limit to your speed, then I am afraid you have already lost!"

As Bai said that, purple lightning flashed all over his body. Just a simple movement of his formed multiple layers of after-images around his body.

"Extreme speed!"

Bai shook his Black Light sword and after-images began to appear. It was impossible to tell Bai's position. This time, Bai's speed was even faster than before!

Soon, the stage was completely filled with Bai's after-images. There were tens of after-images!

Many people focused their minds, trying with great difficulty to see through Bai's after-images, but it was to no avail. It was as if Bai had completely transformed into a lightning bolt. His figure was surging around on the stage freely, leaving behind traces of lightning.

There were streaks of lightning and after-images of Bai everywhere!

"Such a fast speed! This black-clothed youth can trump many just with his speed. Besides, speed should just be a small aspect of his strengths." Even a Tai Ah Divine City Elder's expression changed upon seeing this!

All the martial arts in the world could not be defeated if one was fast enough. If the speed reached an extreme limit, one could pierce through an opponent's throat before they could even react. This was the split moment that decided victory.

People looked with bated breaths as the after-images surrounded Yi Yun.

Yi Yun tightly clenched his Sonic Deathblade and became extremely wary. Bai's speed was indeed very terrifying.

"Cha!"

A purple beam flashed and like a lightning bolt, appeared before Yi Yun and sent out a hundred stabs in an instance!

These dense sword beams formed a lightning web that covered Yi Yun.

Minute Subtlety!

Yi Yun's pupils constricted as he hurriedly retreated backward. However, Bai's attack was too fast, so fast that it far exceeded Yi Yun's dodging speed.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

Along with the sound of lightning, Yi Yun's protective Yuan Qi was torn apart. The lightning current surged into Yi Yun's meridians and made him feel paralyzed.

Yi Yun's clothes were cut apart by the sword Qi, blood appearing on his arms and shoulders!

Tai Ah Sacred Technique!

Yi Yun circulated his body's Yuan Qi. With the pure Yang Qi, he annihilated the lightning powers within his meridians. His body flashed and he was now 200 feet away!

It was too fast!

Yi Yun felt awed. He had just used a perfect Minute Subtlety movement technique, yet he was still unable to completely dodge Bai's sword beams.

No matter what law it was, once it was understood well enough, it would be so powerful that it was shocking. And Bai was no doubt a youth that had reached an extreme level in the Thunder and Lightning elemental laws.

"I have not met my match amongst the Yun Long Divine Kingdom younger generation because none of them are able to keep up with my speed! I can easily attack anyone who is slower than me. It's even to the point where I even have many methods that I have never tried before. It is a huge regret of mine! Yi Yun, is this as far as you can go? If that is the case, then I am too disappointed. Originally, I was looking forward to going all out when fighting against you!"

As Bai said this, there were many lightning after-images around his body. Above the Divine Wilderness Stage, there were surging purple bolts everywhere. Clearly, it was very easy for Bai to maintain this speed; hence, he could speak this calmly.

Upon seeing this scene and hearing Bai's words, the Tai Ah Divine City's warriors were shocked. They finally understood how strong Bai was. If their speed was inferior to his, then they would be defeated by him. However, with such speed, who could match him?

Yi Yun's speed was already very fast, but it was still inferior to Bai's!

And taking 10,000 steps back, even if he could catch up to Bai's speed, Bai still had other tricks up his sleeve.

Extreme speed was just a small portion of Bai's Lightning laws.

Completely opposite from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors' astonishment, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors were burning with excitement. Bai was their Yun Long Divine Kingdom's god of war, and was also known as the Son of Lightning.

Most of them had only heard of Bai, but had never seen him fight.

Today however, seeing Bai's prominence, they felt extremely excited and were greatly looking forward to it!

"As long as one's speed is inferior to yours, they will be defeated by you?"

Yi Yun gently wiped off the blood from his body. Yi Yun had always been confident when it came to his speed. Back when Yi Yun's strength had not greatly increased, he had relied on his speed when fighting against Liu Yuxing and Qiuniu. Yi Yun had previously amazed everyone, but now however, he could only admit that he was slower than Bai.

With slow speed, one was at a greatly disadvantaged, whether it was offensive or defensive!

If he could not block Bai's stabs or touch Bai's sleeves when attacking, then there was no doubt that the results of this battle would end with his loss.

This was why Bai said that if Yi Yun's speed was inferior to his, then Yi Yun would be easily defeated.

At that moment, Bai's speed increased again. There were more and more after-images appearing on the stage, and each after-image was surging with lightning, completely surrounding Yi Yun!

Chapter 337: Lightning Force Field

No matter who faced Bai, that person would end up experiencing extreme pressure!

Other than his extreme speed he also had unfathomable strength.

Yi Yun's speed clearly could not keep up with Bai's. This worried many of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors.

At that moment, Yi Yun closed both his eyes. A human's eye would have the after-image of a person left behind in it if the opponent was faster than a tenth of a second. As Bai's speed was too fast, one would only see numerous after-images due to his blazing speed. As a result, it was very difficult to lock onto Bai's location.

Yi Yun opened up the Purple Crystal's energy vision. Within the energy vision, all the after-images disappeared, only leaving behind a energy beam that moved at high speeds!

The energy vision could see through to the most fundamental energy flow, leaving no after-images behind.

In his energy vision, Yi Yun was able to clearly see Bai's location.

"Yi Yun closed his eyes!?"

"Is he only relying on his perception?"

Seeing Yi Yun close his eyes, people were alarmed. To Purple Blood realm and Yuan Foundation realm warriors, their Yuan Qi perception was relatively weak so it was inferior to using their own eyes.

In this split second, people had no time to think over it carefully as they saw a purple beam flash past!

"Cha!"

The Black Light sword's trajectory left an energy ripple in the air.

Yi Yun felt as if he was standing on a lake. Bai's sword was like a swimming fish, and as it swam, it agitated the lake's water, forming ripples that reached Yi Yun's heart.

At that moment, Yi Yun made his move. With a saber and sword, Saber and Sword Combined!

Yi Yun did not use the Pure Yang Sword Palace sword intent. Having entered the saber tomb as well as the sword tomb, he had gained insight into both sword and saber intents from this heritage ground of sword and saber.

Although the saber and sword tombs were greatly inferior to the Pure Yang Sword Palace, they still far exceeded the realms of many Tai Ah Divine Kingdom sages!

"Ka-cha!"

Yi Yun's sword and saber clashed against the Black Light sword!

The energy collision set off a fierce explosion as purple light swept across the area, as if many purple snakes were dancing in the air. And within this surging wave of purple, there was also burning pure Yang energy!

Yi Yun's saber and sword Qi were burning like the Sun. He had blocked Bai's attack head on!

Bai's attack speed was fast, faster than Yi Yun by a lot, but Yi Yun's sword and saber moves had characteristics that Bai lacked. They were steady, as Yi Yun's domineering stance was like a towering mountain. His energy was like the roar of the ocean!

In a blink of an eye, Bai and Yi Yun had exchanged hundreds of blows!

During this period, the number of attacks Bai did were at least twice those of Yi Yun's as their speed differed by a level.

If this was any other person, an opponent whose speed was inferior to Bai, that person would have been defeated by Bai's fast attacks.

However, this time it was against Yi Yun, as such, the situation was completely different.

Although Bai's attack speed was faster, he was not able to break through Yi Yun's defenses.

That sword and saber were like a dragon and a tiger. They defended Yi Yun's body flawlessly. It was impossible to break through them.

Bai would attack twice, but Yi Yun would use a single move to block them both.

The exchange of blows became more intense. People could only see the numerous after-images in the middle of the stage. It was like a crazy storm. Bai's speed was obvious, and although Yi Yun's speed was a bit slower, that was only relative to Bai. To others, it was still an unattainable speed!

Sword beams! Saber beams!

Pure Yang energy! Lightning energy!

Marks began to appear on the purple tungsten tiles of the Divine Wilderness Stage due to the unrestrained surging energies.

"This is too terrifying. Is this the battle scene of the number one people from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?"

Quite a number of people in the audience came from the ten Southern countries or other smaller factions. Their tournament was separate from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Seeing Yi Yun exchange blows with Bai, no matter how much the ten Southern countries and the factions did not want to admit, they definitely had no temper left.

"This speed... This strength. Our country's number one person may be pretty wild, but compared to them, he will probably lose in just a few seconds..."

"Our country is about the same. There is always someone stronger..."

A few warriors from the smaller countries said as they swallowed their saliva. They had never thought that it would be possible for the younger generation to fight at such a high level, let alone see one.

At that moment a "Peng" sound rang out as some Yuan Qi exploded, sending out a shock wave. Yi Yun and Bai separated from each other.

The exchange of blows before was like a storm. It was unknown how many blows they had exchanged.

Yi Yun and Bai stood about 200 feet apart. The remnant Yuan Qi still lingering between them.

"I have to admit that even with my speed being faster than your's, I still cannot beat you by using speed!"

Bai's voice was solemn. Before this, he had always won just by using his speed. However, today, against Yi Yun, he had to change that view.

One could still break through fast speeds.

Previously, the opponents he faced were all lacking. Now, against an expert, such unexpected scenarios could happen.

Yi Yun said, "When you are obsessed with speed, your attack power naturally weakens!"

"You are right. Fighting with you has not disappointed me. You and I have to battle to mature. Only by facing more experts will we learn. Only then will we no longer become flustered when we face unforeseen circumstances in a life and death battle."

Bai said as he stabbed his sword into the purple tungsten tiles.

"Zi Zi Zi!"

With the sound of electric currents being released, Yi Yun felt a

current from from the tiles. It made him feel numb!

Yi Yun immediately circulated his pure Yang Qi to withstand the attack.

"Oh? Bai transmitted lightning into the purple tungsten tiles, using the ground to attack Yi Yun?" Many people were stunned. The ground seemed to be adverse against Yi Yun.

Soon however, they shut up. They realized that a purple light curtain had appeared above the Divine Wilderness Stage. Like a huge bowl, it engulfed the Divine Wilderness Stage.

"This is?"

Many people were confused.

"It's a force field!" Amongst the crowd, a person at the Human Lord level alarmedly said, "Force fields are also known as a domain. Only a very limited number of people are able to have such supernatural affinity with certain laws . Only then can they gain such insight. Unexpectedly, this youth in black can have his own force field at such a young age..."

Anyone could learn laws when they reached a high realm of cultivation. The only difference was one's level of understanding of the laws.

Force fields however, were different.

Force fields were extremely profound. Non-geniuses amongst geniuses would not be able to gain such insight.

If one's affinity with the laws were insufficient, then one would not be able to gain insight into force fields throughout their entire lives. And this affinity with laws was decided congenitally. The results from subsequent hard work was extremely limited.

Not even Yuan Foundation realm warriors, peak-Human Lords, or even sages, they could all fail at gaining insight into nomological force fields. This was because sages could be strong in other areas and still not necessarily have a high affinity with certain laws.

For example, Jian Ge focused on swords and was matchless in swordsmanship.

For laws, Jian Ge cultivated the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', and although he had reached a very high realm, he was still lacking affinity with pure Yang energy, so up to this day, he was still unable to create his own pure Yang force field.

When Bai used his lightning force field, even the Elders in the Elder stands were shocked, let alone the audience.

This black-clothed youth was no doubt a darling of lightning. He was a natural Son of Lightning.

His understanding and affinity with the lightning laws were

shocking!

Chapter 338: Terrible

Being trapped in the lightning force field, Yi Yun felt the current passing through his skin, which made his whole body feel numb.

"Since I can't defeat you just with speed alone, let me fight you directly!"

Bai's body was encased by purple lightning in a spasmodic manner. His clothes and hair moved along with the purple lightning.

By setting aside his speed, Bai's energy soared. At that moment, he was like a god that controlled thunder and lightning.

"Roar——!"

It was as if a behemoth roared from Bai's body as he made his move. This was the first time he was using all of his strength.

The Black Light sword, which gathered the divine lightning within the lightning force field, slashed towards Yi Yun as it emitted a tumultuous whizzing sound. The purple lightning gathered in the air as it reached an extremum, turning black in color. This black lightning eventually condensed into the shape of a lightning beast that was tens of feet long!

This lightning beast looked life-like and its appearance was that of a black tiger. It charged at Yi Yun.

"Lightning Kill!"

When the black lightning beast flew at Yi Yun, the purple tungsten ground beneath it melted into a molten metal.

This sort of power made the audience hold their breaths.

Seeing the black lightning beast attacking him, Yi Yun's body surged with Radiant Sun Qi, as a Tang Valley phantom image appeared behind him.

Yi Yun knew that this attack from Bai was extraordinary. Due to the difference in their cultivation levels, it was impossible for him to withstand it just with the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

Phew—

Within Yi Yun's body, the pure Yang spirit's energy surged as he pushed the Purple Crystal to an extreme. The pure Yang spirit rapidly absorbed the pure Yang energy from the surroundings. The pure Yang spirit, which was originally burning quietly, transformed into a blazing brilliant Sun.

The pure Yang spirit nearly charged out of the Purple Crystal. Its searing power was like a tidal wave that filled Yi Yun's limbs. Yi Yun felt as if his body was burning up.

Saber Truth's 32 Words – One With the Saber!

Yi Yun slashed his saber. His body and the Sonic Deathblade combined into one, and shot out like a meteor.

Boom!

The strong impact resulted in an aftershock that cut the purple tungsten ground up like sharp sabers.

"Careful!"

The warriors closest to the Divine Wilderness Stage could clearly feel the terrifying sword and saber Qi. Even with the protective shield separating them, they still felt the immense pressure.

The first direct clash resulted in Yi Yun's body shuddering as his hand numbed from it.

He felt the lightning entering his body as it wantonly surged through his meridians. Bai's lightning seemed to have an endless flow of power that even the pure Yang energy could not easily dissipate.

Similarly, Bai did not feel any better. Yi Yun's saber Qi was too sharp. Besides, after gaining an insight into the Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword intent, Yi Yun's Yuan Qi had an additional trace of an undying property to it. This undying power would appear even when Yi Yun did not use the Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword

intent on purpose.

As such, Yi Yun's pure Yang energy was like an inextinguishable flame that burned in Bai's body. It was ineradicable so Bai's entire body felt the pain.

Both of them retreated more than a hundred feet from each other. Their faces were pale as their blood was in turmoil.

"Yi Yun!" Seeing Yi Yun's pale face with a deep frown, Wen Yu, Chu Xiaoran and company started to worry for him.

Bai was too strong!

From the strength Yi Yun had displayed up till now, it was already very difficult for him to win this battle. Even if he had won, it would have been a Pyrrhic victory!

Just from that clash of blows, both of them sustained severe internal injuries.

Bai being injured was no big deal, but with Yi Yun injured, the situation turned sour.

After all, after Bai, there were still 10 more Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors left!

These people may be far inferior to Bai and Feng Lin, but they

were also strong. Relatively speaking, Murong Guang, who Yi Yun defeated in one sword attack, was just average amongst the group.

Yi Yun had expended a lot of Yuan Qi when handling Murong Guang, even though it appeared as if it was easy.

If he were to fight against these people after fighting Bai, how much Yuan Qi would he have left?

At that time, it was unlikely Yi Yun could use that sword move again.

"Good saber attack! Such strong pure Yang energy!" As Bai said, an unnatural flush appeared on his face. He wiped the corner of his mouth, and a tiny stream of blood flowed out.

In the direct clash with Yi Yun before, his meridians had been damaged.

"However, you can't be feeling too good now. My lightning isn't that easily annihilated!"

Bai looked at Yi Yun as the corners of his mouth turned into a smile. This was a smile that arose from the excitement of meeting someone his equal. Fighting against Yi Yun made him more and more excited.

Opposite from Bai, Yi Yun looked straight into Bai's eyes as he clenched his Sonic Deathblade tighter.

It was indeed extremely difficult fighting Bai. In the end, it was too demanding for him to face fifteen elites from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom alone!

If he were to conjure his Golden Crow Aspect Totem, Yi Yun believed that his energy would be emptied out in a short period of time!

But if he did not use his Golden Crow Aspect Totem, how was he going to beat Bai?

"Again!"

Bai roared loudly and attacked once again.

"Roar——!"

Again with another roar, the black lightning beast appeared behind Bai once again.

The lightning beast was infused in Bai's Black Light sword, resulting in radiant black beams being emitted by the entire sword!

Bai leaped up high in the air, with countless number of lightning current flowing around him. It was as if numerous thick purple snakes were surging towards Bai. Within the lightning force field, he could use his full power!

Bai came attacking from the top as he charged downwards at Yi Yun.

Yi Yun constricted his pupils. With the Sonic Deathblade in his hand, a Tang Valley phantom image appeared behind him. However, this time, a mountain of corpses and sea of blood that resembled Ashura Hell appeared as well!

"Hum Hum Hum..."

Wailing sounds accompanied the burning pure Yang flames. The two powers, which were nearly exact opposites in terms of properties, were injected into the Sonic Deathblade as Yi Yun attacked from bottom to top and slashed at Bai!

"Saber Truth's 32 Words – Killing At Its Core!"

Ka-cha!

A fierce impact with the high temperatures made the purple tungsten ground below Yi Yun's feet crack and a crater formed. Yi Yun's entire body was nearly piled deep into the Divine Wilderness Stage!

However, Bai's body was sent flying tens of meters back from the impact, while he spit a mouthful of blood out in the air.

Boom!

Bai slammed heavily into the purple tungsten wall outside the Divine Wilderness Stage, deforming it. He slipped to the ground before using his Black Light sword as a crutch to stand up. His eyes sparkled with fighting spirit that exuded excitement.

Yi Yun also leaped out from the purple tungsten hole. The Sonic Deathblade formed an angle with the ground as its tip trembled slightly.

At that moment, Yi Yun's shirt was torn. One could see the contours of his chest muscles, but there were blood stains and numerous spots that had been burnt black from the lightning on them.

Bai's attack this time was even stronger than before. It was as if he had compressed all the lightning force field's energy into that sword attack, causing Yi Yun's blood to go into chaos!

The audience were quiet. From the speed battle in the beginning to the direct head-on clashes now, the battle was intensifying. Furthermore, Yi Yun and Bai's injuries were getting more severe!

What would be the outcome of this battle?

"This really feels great!"

Bai was extremely excited. It was as if he became more excited

the more injured he was. "Amongst the younger generation, it has been a long time since someone has managed to fight me to my heart's content."

As Bai said this, his aura did not decrease but increased!

It was as if the injuries he had sustained were nothing to him.

"Oh!? Bai's aura is increasing?" People were alarmed. They had originally thought that the battle between Yi Yun and Bai would slowly become less intense as their energies were depleted, but now, looking at Bai, it looked like the battle would become even more intense!

"Bai still has a lot of strength he has not revealed. Or maybe it should be said that due to the excitement from fighting Yi Yun, he was able to release his body's hidden potential power."

"Bai still hasn't conjured his Aspect Totem!"

People from the Yun Long Divine Kingdom turned excited.

To them, although the overall group championship was filled with ups and downs, and even though Yi Yun was extraordinary, the eventual outcome still wouldn't change.

Bai was their Yun Long Divine Kingdom's god of war. Other than Bai, there was no lack in strong experts amongst the other ten people. Many of them were stronger than Jun Yue because they

had the advantage of age!

"This mad man..."

In the Elder stands, Cang Yan looked at Bai as he swore.

Even he had to admit that this battle was getting harder. Bai was the type that grew stronger the more he fought. Fighting such a war junkie was the trickiest!

"Cang Yan!" At that moment, a Yuan Qi transmission rang in Cang Yan's ear. Cang Yan turned his head and saw that it was the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord.

"The outcome of this battle is still up in the air. If Yi Yun is defeated, you have to make a move and save Yi Yun. Do not allow him to have any mishaps in his battle with Bai."

"Similarly, if Yi Yun were to defeat Bai, then we shall call it quits for the overall group championship. There is no need to fight the battles after this as there is no way we can win. Instead, I fear that someone will deliberately hurt Yi Yun severely, and gain fame within the Yun Long Divine Kingdom from this battle. I do not want to see Yi Yun severely injured under the hands of these weak juniors."

Hearing the City Lord's words, Cang Yan felt heart-warmed.

Cang Yan had already treated Yi Yun as if he was half a disciple of

his. Seeing the City Lord not pursue victory for this overall group championship, and prioritizing Yi Yun's safety first, Cang Yan could only feel grateful.

"I know, with me around, I will not let Yi Yun get into an accident."

...

On the Divine Wilderness Stage, Yi Yun and Bai were standing about a hundred feet from each other.

Both of them could feel the other's powerful strength.

"Yi Yun! I know you are worried about the battles after this, but... I think your worries are unnecessary. That is because you will not have a single chance defeating me if you do not go all out!"

"Even if you were to go all out, the chances of you winning is slim. Without being able to use that sword move, it is nearly impossible for you to defeat me!"

Bai felt regret as he really wanted to encounter Yi Yun's sword attack. He wanted to battle a Yi Yun that was at his peak!

As Bai was speaking, a black lightning beast phantom image appeared behind him for the third time, "I wish that our battle was able to decide the champion of the overall group match between the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom.

However, it is a pity that I do not have the power to make this decision. Letting you rest for two hours was the limit!"

Bai said frankly as Yi Yun nodded, "I understand!"

Bai could at most make decisions in his own battle, but he could not arrange the battles of the other people in the overall group championship.

Bai flicked his sword blade and a glimmer flashed in his eyes, "Being able to fight with you to such an extent has left me greatly satisfied. To show you my respect, I will use my strongest move to defeat you next!"

Chapter 339: Lightning Snake Against Golden Crow

Just as Bai finished speaking, the presence of the phantom image of the lightning beast grew stronger. The lightning force field around Bai also began to create thunder, as if it was going to spit out all of its energy.

Crackle!

The force field formed a lightning barrier around Bai, placing him under its protection.

"Roar——"

The lightning beast issued a roar that shook the heavens and earth, piercing through people's eardrums. Even from behind the array barrier, the audience could still feel the powerful energy that resided within the sound. This sort of energy seemed like a bolt, hitting their insides, causing their blood to go into disarray. It was extremely uncomfortable.

"So terrifying!"

People were alarmed. Just the lightning beast's roar alone was something they could not handle. If they were to stand where Yi Yun was, how would it be like to experience the frontal impact from the lightning beast?

At that moment, Bai extended his hand out and grabbed the lightning beast's neck.

"Roar! Roar! Roar!"

The lightning beast began to roar crazily as its body began to intensely convulse. While convulsing, it was actually reducing in size.

As its size reduced, the lightning beast's lightning energy grew even stronger. The lightning's color turned from a purplish black to pure black!

Just as people thought Bai would conjure the lightning beast to attack Yi Yun, a shocking scene happened. Bai actually pressed the lightning beast into his own chest.

Whew! The lightning beast entered Bai's body and with a "Chi La" explosive sound, the clothes Bai was wearing exploded after the lightning beast entered his body. A strong wind blew the remnant cloth and Bai's hair around until they stood up vertically.

What!?

People were alarmed. They could not help but stand up.

At that moment, the lightning beast's phantom image appeared on Bai's chest, it was like a tattoo on his skin.

Many of them were completely speechless upon seeing this scene.

Bai had actually devoured the lightning beast!

The lightning beast tattoo spread across Bai's body. Wisp after wisp of tiger stripes slowly encroached Bai's neck and face like Lichtenberg figures. Bai seemed to have completely transformed into another person. With this look, Bai made everyone tremble with fear.

At that moment, the lightning barrier around Bai contracted once more. Finally, all the energy condensed together, forming into the phantom image of a long, thick snake.

The snake became more and more realistic and increased in presence. It was 70-80 feet long and completely black. It had six heads and its body stripes looked like lightning.

"Six-headed Lightning Snake!?"

Someone exclaimed in the audience stands. This was Bai's Aspect Totem!

Bai's Aspect Totem turned out to be a Six-headed Lightning Snake. It was a terrifying existence amongst lightning-elemental desolate beasts. In the Divine Wilderness, even late-stage Human Lords might not be able to handle Six-headed Lightning Snakes.

And Bai had actually obtained a Six-headed Lightning Snake as an Aspect Totem.

Typically, the Aspect Totems that were in the forms of beast, corresponded to the desolate beast a warrior killed.

The desolate beast killed would form the corresponding Aspect Totem.

To condensed an Aspect Totem, one had to personally kill the desolate beast. It did not work if it was killed by someone else. This was a law that even the Purple Crystal could not violate.

And Bai had actually condensed a Six-headed Lightning Snake Aspect Totem.

This proved that he might have personally killed a Six-headed Lightning Snake!

It was also possible that Bai had killed a lot of Three-headed Lightning Snakes, causing his original Three-headed Lightning Snake Aspect Totem to evolve into a Six-headed Lightning Snake. If a Six-headed Lightning Snake were to evolve once more, it would become a primordial strain-grade Nine-headed Lightning Snake.

However, even Three-headed Lightning Snakes were strong desolate beasts that even early stage Human Lords would not be able to handle.

How did Bai manage to kill Three-headed Lightning Snakes?

With the appearance of the Six-headed Lightning Snake, black clouds started to gather together as lightning started to cover the sky.

Boom!

As the lightning flashed, the dark clouds grew bigger. From the open dome of the arena, the spectators could see the dark clouds gather, as water vapor began to appear.

Not a second later, it started to rain in the arena!

"Thunderstorm?"

People felt the cool raindrops pattering on their face as they felt appalled.

Lightning resulted in rain. So when Bai conjured his Six-headed Lightning Snake Aspect Totem, due to the powerful lightning he released, it affected the weather, causing it to pour down.

It was simply inconceivable for a Yuan Foundation realm warrior to influence the weather.

"Is this Bai in his strongest state?"

People looked at Bai with alarm.

"Hahaha! It has been a while since I have felt this good!" Bai loudly laughed. Currently, he was naked from the waist up, revealing his taut muscles. His body was covered in tiger stripes and lightning tattoos, and on his chest, there was a roaring black tiger lightning beast, while a Six-headed Lightning Snake was rising up from behind him. The Black Light sword in his hand also manifested a large amount of black lightning. All of this made Bai look like a statuesque thunder god!

Yi Yun took a deep breath upon seeing Bai's state, his expression turning solemn.

After devouring the black lightning beast, inserting its energy into his own body and then conjure up a Six-headed Lightning Snake Aspect Totem. The present Bai, who was at his peak, was too strong.

He had to go all out against Bai. However, by using all of his strength, that would mean that he would not be able to fight in the subsequent matches.

"Yi Yun, make your move! In my current state, what I look most forward to is the sword attack that you used to defeat Feng Lin! I really want to know how much damage it will cause me to take on that attack."

Bai did not say whether the attack would defeat him or not, he

only questioned how much damage it would cause him. Clearly, he believed that he could withstand that attack completely! He would only be injured and not defeated!

Bai had complete confidence in himself, that he could handle the sword attack that nearly killed Feng Lin, this showed how presumptuous he was!

However, no one said anything about how presumptuous Bai was, this was because his strength gave him the right to say such words!

"Unfortunately, you can no longer use that attack. I feel regret, but I will still use my strongest state to defeat you. Make your move, maybe... you will surprise me and not disappoint me!"

Bai pointed the Black Light sword at Yi Yun!

Yi Yun sighed as he touched the Distinguished Light sword and smiled helplessly.

"Indeed, I can no longer use that sword attack... I was still having that tinge of hope about winning this overall group championship. After all, I am grateful towards the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, so I have been reserving my strength and not use certain moves if I could help it. The energy consumption of using them will be too great, resulting in me not being able to fight the battles after. However..."

Yi Yun paused upon saying this and gently swiped his hand across the Distinguished Light sword, opening up a gash on his palm, resulting in blood flowing onto the sword.

Yi Yun's blood seemed to be like hot lava. It started burning the moment it flowed onto the Distinguished Light sword.

"However, against you, I indeed have no other choice. So be it! I will not care so much anymore and fight a magnificent battle with you!"

Yi Yun's eyes were burning with fighting spirit as he said those words.

Yi Yun was staring right at Bai, with Bai staring back at him.

"Oh? Do you still think that you have the capital to fight against me? In my upcoming attack, I will be going all out!" Bai loudly said.

Yi Yun laughed, "I will also be going all out. I believe that my full-powered attack will at least 'not make you disappointed'!"

Yi Yun used Bai's words back at him.

Bai laughed loudly, "Great! I look forward to it! Let me remind you that you might die from this attack!"

As Bai spoke, killing Qi surged from his body.

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors, especially Wen Yu, Chu Xiaoran and company who knew Yi Yun, held their breaths. Bai, in his peak state, was indeed too terrifying. He was so strong that he made people not have the courage to resist him.

In the Elder stands, Cang Yan was even more concentrated. He was afraid that Yi Yun would suffer a mishap. In his opinion, even sages in their youths did not match up the current Bai!

The rain became heavier.

Water vapor permeated the visions of people.

Bai and Yi Yun, two contemporary proud sons of Heaven, were less than 200 feet away from each other. They were looking at each other, separated by a curtain of rain.

At that moment, Bai made his move!

He brandished the black sword in his hand, and like a black bolt of lightning within the rain, he cut through the thick curtain of rain!

The power of that one sword attack was enough to shake the heaven and earth!

The entire Divine Wilderness Stage, as well as the thick purple tungsten ground, was slashed open by the sword, resulting in a huge sword scar!

Bai's sharp sword beam, along with his Six-headed Lightning Snake, rushed at Yi Yun!

Yi Yun constricted his pupils. At that moment, he too made his move. It was still the move from the sword tomb, but within it, there was now a trace of the pure Yang sword intent. This was also the strongest sword intent Yi Yun could handle at the moment.

However, just this sword intent alone was far from enough.

At that moment, a clear cry rang from within Yi Yun's body!

This clear cry seemed to be the cry of a phoenix that transcended the heavens. No matter how loud the falling rain and the rumbling thunder was, they were drowned by that clear cry.

"What was that!?"

The spectators became alarmed as the sound was too loud. It was as if it was ringing within their own ears, straight into their hearts. Yet, it was not harsh on the ears, it instead had the power to refresh their minds!

Boom!

The pure Yang flames burned, and like a Radiant Sun that exploded behind Yi Yun, the phantom image of a Tang Valley appeared behind Yi Yun. Before people could react, they saw a divine light rise up into the sky. Like a divine sword, it charged into the clouds, splitting them apart!

"Xiao!"

They once again heard that clear and loud cry. The audience helplessly watched on as a Golden Crow, covered in pure Yang flames, rushed out from Yi Yun's body, following the divine light's path all the way up!

This Golden Crow had a wingspan of tens of meters and nearly covered the entire Divine Wilderness Stage.

Under the burning of the pure Yang flames, the raindrops and water mist around it immediately evaporated!

"Heavens! What is that?"

People were extremely shocked. The divine bird that rushed out had the eyes of a crow, the beak of an eagle and the feathers of a phoenix. It had three legs and all of its feathers were burning with golden, pure Yang flames!

"Golden Crow!? Three-legged Golden Crow!?"

Some people incredulously shouted out the name. This Golden Crow had rushed out from Yi Yun's body. Could it be Yi Yun's Aspect Totem!?

"How is that possible!?"

A typical warrior, whose Aspect Totem was in the form of a king-grade desolate beast, was already extremely stunning!

Bai was such an example.

If it were a primordial strain. it would be even more fascinating. However, only Sages would have these types of aspect totems.

After all, the Aspect Totems warriors gained were obtained from the process of their hunting. Typically, those who could hunt primordial strains were only Sages.

Even Human Lords, who might have the fortuitous luck of killing a primordial strain, might not have the ability to absorb it!

A Three-legged Golden Crow!

It was a level higher than a primordial strain.

How could it appear on a Purple Blood realm warrior!?

The audience did not have time to think about it carefully. All they saw was the Three-legged Golden Crow rush at the Six-headed Lightning Snake and with a fierce cry, stretch out the sharp claws of its three legs to grab the Six-headed Lightning Snake.

Crackle!

The purple lightning roared as the pure Yang flames engulfed it. The lightning snake and Golden Crow fought a fierce battle in the sky!

Snakes, were by nature, not the match of eagles, so how could a Six-headed Lightning Snake be the match of a divine beast like the Golden Crow?

In just a few seconds, the three legs managed to hit its mark and the Golden Crow tore the Six-headed Lightning Snake open!

The Six-headed Lightning Snake began to bleed like it was a real desolate beast, made up of flesh and blood!

Yi Yun's sword followed right after the Three-legged Golden Crow killed the Six-headed Lightning Snake, sending a slash down along with the Three-legged Golden Crow!

At that moment, it was as if Heaven and Earth had lost their sound. A golden sword beam was all that was left in the sights of people. The beam illuminated the world and even the dark clouds in the sky were split apart!

Boom!

The lightning broke apart as the pure Yang flames engulfed it, burning everything to cinders.

Yi Yun's sword heavily smashed into Bai's lightning force field, and the force field shattered like it was made out of paper!

Bai was greatly alarmed and raised his sword to face the incoming attack. However, under the pressure of the terrifying pure Yang flames, as well as the Three-legged Golden Crow divine beast, he felt it was impossible to compete with them with his power alone.

Peng!

The sword beam exploded and Bai felt a strong surge rushing towards him. He was like the leaf of a tree, helpless in a stormy hurricane!

"Bai!"

Beside the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner constricted his pupils and rushed out straight away. The chair beneath him was instantly smashed to smithereens!

At the same time, Bai spat out a mouthful of blood. His protective

Yuan Qi had shattered, and his sternum had completely collapsed. He was sent flying like a piece of paper. As for the deadly pure Yang sword Qi, it was still locked onto his body, wanting to take his life!

However, at that moment, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner seemed to instantaneously appear beside Bai and grabbed him.

"Peng!"

With a flick of the Seven Star Pagoda Owner's sleeves, that terrifying pure Yang sword Qi completely shattered, before even coming close to him.

Seeing the Seven Star Pagoda Owner grab the heavily injured Bai, no one spoke a single word.

The outcome of this battle was completely different to what was expected. Bai had been defeated by Yi Yun!?

In the end, Bai actually needed the strongest person of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's entourage, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner, to personally come and save him!

The audience felt like they were in a dream, especially the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors who could not accept this.

Bai was their Yun Long Divine Kingdom's god of war, yet he was defeated by a youth who was younger than him and of a lower

cultivation level than him. How was this possible?!

People looked up at the sky. The rain had actually stopped. Yi Yun's attack had slashed apart the dark clouds, dispersing the rain clouds that resulted from Bai's lightning!

One could cause rain, while the other had the ability to disperse clouds!

It was difficult to imagine that this battle actually reached such an extent. It was difficult to imagine that they were both only warriors from the younger generation!

However, what was most shocking of all was the Three-legged Golden Crow that flashed past in the final moments of that battle.

The mysterious phantom image that burned with golden pure Yang flames was still lodged in the iris of everyone in the audience, unable to be removed.

That was no doubt a Three-legged Golden Crow, but how could it have appeared? Was it Yi Yun's Aspect Totem?

People looked at Yi Yun and felt incredulous.

How could a Purple Blood realm warrior have a Three-legged Golden Crow as an Aspect Totem!?

Chapter 340: A Tiger Leaving His Hill And Descending To The Plains

A warrior's Aspect Totem was usually condensed after continuously hunting desolate beasts. The beast marks condensed after killing a desolate beast might not be perfect, so for those warriors that lacked talent in condensing an Aspect Totem, they might have to attempt it hundreds of times before they would be barely able to condense an Aspect Totem.

Furthermore, for Aspect Totems that were in the shape of a beast, they became harder and harder to condense the higher ranked the desolate beasts were. It was not only the difficulty in killing a high-ranked desolate beast, even the condensing of the beast mark after killing the high-ranking desolate beast was not simple.

For example, even if a Purple Blood realm warrior were to actually kill a primordial strain he might not be able to condense a primordial strain Aspect Totem, let alone a Three-legged Golden Crow which was much more powerful than a primordial strain.

The vast arena was in complete silence. Be it the Tai Ah Divine City warriors or the Yun Long 72 Pagodas warriors, the Southern 10 countries or the other small factions, everyone found it incredulous.

"How does Yi Yun have a Golden Crow totem?" A Tai Ah Divine City Elder asked Cang Yan. Although Yi Yun's quasi-master was Grandmaster Yuehua, Cang Yan was the one who knew more regarding his cultivation.

Cang Yan froze for a while before he stuttered, "I do not know either... In fact, I was the one who took him to choose a totem mystic technique, and later on... Hai, he chose the 'Myriad Beast Totem'..."

"Myriad Beast Totem!?"

As an Elder of the Tai Ah Divine City, he naturally knew what that totem mystic technique meant.

Not only was it a remnant copy, it was also extremely difficult to cultivate. Since ancient times, no one from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had been able to master it.

Yi Yun mastered the 'Myriad Beast Totem'!?

Many of the present Elders from the Tai Ah Divine City had previously seen the 'Myriad Beast Totem'. Upon careful thinking, the Aspect Totem which Yi Yun conjured did greatly resemble the 'Myriad Beast Totem'.

Is... that possible?

Yi Yun actually managed to master a totem mystic technique they did not?

Many Elders were looking at Cang Yan with a questioning look,

Cang Yan could only stare back as he had been rendered completely speechless.

He had tried every means to stop Yi Yun from choosing the 'Myriad Beast Totem', but in the end, this kid actually mastered it!?

This really toppled Cang Yan's perception of the world.

"Really a monster... After the tournament, I will make sure to ask him how he managed to master it."

As Cang Yan was thinking, the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord's voice transmission resounded in his ear.

"For our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom to produce such a person is of the greatest blessings. If the Shepherd Boy really is to bring a beast horde that will bring a calamity to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, then maybe this will be the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's chance to rise up from the ashes. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom has existed for too long, causing the country to become a bit lethargic. Death might not be a bad thing, and Yi Yun might give way to the opportunity that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom has to rise back up from the ashes..."

"In the future, he might even have the chance of becoming a Great Emperor..."

The City Lord's said it in a solemn voice.

It was not only limited to Cang Yan, many of the Elders present were greatly alarmed upon hearing the City Lord's voice transmission.

Great Emperor!

In the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's history of tens of millions of years, there had never been a single Great Emperor. The strongest person was just a peak-Sage.

The distance between Sages and Great Emperors was separated by a huge gap. It was a gap that made people lament upon seeing it.

Yi Yun had the possibility of becoming a Great Emperor?

If that was the case, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would very likely undergo a quantum leap!

A Great Emperor not only guaranteed the prosperity of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, if a Great Emperor's bloodline was to be mixed with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal bloodline, then it would cause the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal bloodline to become even more powerful.

Other than that, a Great Emperor would create many sorts of martial arts, leaving behind heritages that were obviously priceless!

After all, the sword and saber tombs were left behind by a person suspected of being a Great Emperor. Unfortunately, the sword and saber tomb was not the complete heritage of a Great Emperor.

They had been opened before, losing a lot of the valuable heritage within. Only the marks were left within the sword and saber tomb, and even they looked as if they had been casually drawn by the owner, so it was not considered a heritage. However, the sword and saber tombs, along with the array within them allowed the Tai Ah Divine City to be opened up in the Divine Wilderness in conjunction with a peerless expert from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!

Just an incomplete heritage had so much value to it, so the value for a complete Great Emperor's heritage was obvious!

If there was a Great Emperor within the country, it would raise the overall strength of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. With a Great Emperor, the number of Sages within the country would also increase.

And a second Great Emperor might even appear not long after!

"Great Emperor, is that really possible? Yi Yun might become a Great Emperor?"

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun and felt incredulous. To him, Great Emperors were a legend that eluded him.

Was he going to witness the rise of a Great Emperor and become one of the masters of this Great Emperor?

Just thinking of this made Cang Yan feel like he was dreaming.

If he became a Great Emperor's master, then even if he was one of the least outstanding ones amongst Yi Yun's future masters, Cang Yan would still feel extremely satisfied. It was impossible for him to become a Great Emperor in his life, but if he had a student that became a Great Emperor, he could really die without any regrets.

At that moment, the City Lord carried on, "I am afraid that Yi Yun can no longer fight. Let us admit defeat for this battle. To fight to such a level, he is already an elite amongst elites. He has obtained enough glory for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and he has won us precious seats. I will personally reward Yi Yun for his meritorious achievements after this battle."

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun. At that moment, Yi Yun's face was pale after having used his Golden Crow Aspect Totem. There was not a tinge of pink left on his face and his hands, which held the sword and saber, were trembling. Although he did not sever any meridians this time, Cang Yan could feel that Yi Yun's Yuan Qi had been nearly completely expended.

Using the Golden Crow Aspect Totem for less than the time it took to take a breath completely drained Yi Yun of his Yuan Qi.

Yi Yun was now severely exhausted. It was very likely that he

would not even be able to use the Saber Truth's 32 Words' moves. There was no meaning in fighting any further.

Yi Yun used the Sonic Deathblade to support himself as he breathed heavily. He barely managed to regulate his chaotic blood flow.

Although he had the Golden Crow's blood as healing medicine, he had already drunk a lot of it, and whatever he could absorb had already been absorbed.

It would still be effective if he were to drink some more, but it definitely was not enough to replenish his energy to the point of winning this alliance tournament.

"He looks like... he can't make it..."

Not only Cang Yan, others also started to discover Yi Yun's situation.

"It looked like he couldn't make it the last time too, but he still managed to finish off Murong Guang with one sword attack."

Some of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's warriors on the participant benches were quietly discussing.

Previously, Murong Guang thought that he could easily take out Yi Yun but ended up being easily taken out by Yi Yun. That scene was still fresh in their minds.

In a once bitten, twice shy situation, and especially with Yi Yun nearly crippling Murong Guang, it made these elites feel fear. They lacked the courage to go against Yi Yun. No one wanted to follow in Murong Guang's footsteps.

"Hmph! He has definitely expended even more this time! His Aspect Totem is even more terrifying than that sword attack. With his peak-Purple Blood cultivation level, to be able to stand after using it is already not bad! Yi Yun is already a spent force, not someone to be fearful of!"

A purple-dressed youth said arrogantly as he looked at Yi Yun.

At that moment, on the Divine Wilderness Stage, Yi Yun's body suddenly convulsed as he placed his entire body's weight onto the Sonic Deathblade, finally spitting out a mouthful of blood.

The blood stained the cold purple tungsten ground.

"Yi Yun!"

Chu Xiaoran and company were extremely worried upon seeing this.

"He's vomiting blood! Haha!" The purple-dressed youth, who spoke earlier, laughed loudly upon seeing this scene. His eyes were shining with excitement. He looked back at his peers and gave a very pleased look.

"As I said, he can't make it anymore, yet all of you don't believe me!"

The others looked at each other before someone nodded, "Indeed, Yi Yun should not be able to make it. This is our chance."

"Hmph! The Seven Star Pagoda Owner had transmitted his voice, saying that Yi Yun has a tiny possibility of becoming a Great Emperor. Although I do not believe he will become a Great Emperor, so what if he becomes one the future? Wasn't he still defeated by us in his youth?"

"You're right. Just thinking of defeating a young Great Emperor makes me excited. In the future, we can all say that we were people who could defeat a young Great Emperor, hahaha!"

Under the instigation of the purple-dressed youth, many of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom youths laughed excitedly. They were eager to defeat Yi Yun.

"Yi Yun, I'll challenge you!"

The purple-dressed youth swaggered up to the Divine Wilderness Stage and looked at Yi Yun with a haughty look.

At that moment, Cang Yan's Yuan Qi voice transmission rang in Yi Yun's ears, "Yi Yun, do not eat into his provocation. This person may look like a retard, but he is still very strong. Of the ten people

the Yun Long Divine Kingdom have left, he is probably ranked third or fourth. The current you is no longer his match. You just need to admit defeat. If you do not want to say it, I will represent you in admitting defeat."

Cang Yan was afraid that Yi Yun would be foolhardy due to his young age. Recklessly fighting against this shameless person and only end up falling into his ploy. Once they started fighting, the other party would definitely use various sorts of methods to severely injure Yi Yun.

Although Yi Yun's life was not in peril with Cang Yan around, Cang Yan would still feel extremely pissed if the number one person of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was being brutally beaten by such a person.

Yi Yun remained silent and did not respond.

This purple-dressed youth was probably stronger than Jun Yue due to his age!

Currently, it was too demanding for Yi Yun to fight someone stronger than Jun Yue.

"I am Murong Fei. Remember my name because you will be defeated by me. In the future, even if you are to accomplish great things, it will not change the fact that you are like a woman I f**ked. No matter how distinguished she will be in the future, she would still be someone that I f**ked, hahaha!"

The purple-dressed youth roared with laughter.

He had already guessed that Yi Yun might surrender, but how could he allow that?

If Yi Yun were to surrender, then he could not brutally beat up Yi Yun and he could not be the person who defeated a young Great Emperor.

He did not care if Yi Yun was currently completely exhausted, as long as he defeated Yi Yun, it would still become a fact. Be it within his family clan or in his circle, he would have the rights to flaunt himself.

Just thinking of defeating a figure known as a young Great Emperor felt great!

Chapter 341: Voice Transmission

"So what about it, kid? Do you dare fight me?" Murong Fei unsheathed his sword and pointed it at Yi Yun's eyebrows. His face was full of contempt and provocation. "Does the person known as the number one person amongst the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's younger generation have guts? If you think you can't make it, quickly beg for mercy."

Murong Fei became more and more arrogant. He guessed that Yi Yun was going to surrender.

Not being able to fight Yi Yun would leave him with regrets as he would lose the right to brag.

But even so, he still wanted to carry on provoking as Yi Yun might turn hot-headed and accept his challenge.

Even if Yi Yun did not accept the challenge, saying all of that made Murong Fei feel good. In the future, he could boast in his circles and family clan saying how the number one person of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, Yi Yun, known as a person who would one day become a Great Emperor was humiliated by him and did not retaliate, and eventually, he surrendered with his tail between his legs.

This effect was barely acceptable.

Seeing Murong Fei's provocation, all of the Tai Ah Divine City warriors were fuming.

Many of them could not accept it any longer!

"*****, I've never seen such a shameless person!" A person stood up and pointed at Murong Fei and cursed.

"Murong Fei is no different to s**t! And that Murong Guang! They must be from the same family. One is more shameless than the other!"

"F**k! Still jumping out to talk a bunch of crap, appearing as if he's all awesome and what not. Why didn't he fight earlier? He's no different to a straw bag. If Yi Yun had 30% of his strength left, he could finish this kind of person in 1 move. To think he dares be arrogant. Even a dog's bark sounds better than your shouting!"

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors were quite good at cursing.

However, Murong Fei's skin was thicker than the city walls. He remained unmoved.

So what if you cursed me?

"Miss, this person is too shameless." Beside Luo Huo'er, the maidservant Dong'er clenched her pink and tender tiny fists and her small circular face looked like an apple as it had turned redder due to anger. As she said that, her undeveloped chest moved up and down like a small balloon.

Luo Huo'er looked at Murong Fei with a disgusted and irritated look. This was the first time she had seen such a toad that was so shameless. Comparatively, that unpleasant fellow Yi Yun was like an angel.

Seeing Murong Fei being so arrogant and then looking back at Yi Yun, Luo Huo'er's black eyes seemed to roll around, as if she thought of something. Luo Huo'er seemed to be in a dilemma.

She rubbed her smooth forehead with her tiny fingers as if she was still struggling to decide before she said quietly to herself, "Just this once. It shouldn't be a problem..."

...

At that moment on the Divine Wilderness Stage, the referee looked at Yi Yun.

"Yi Yun, do you want to accept this challenge?"

Seeing that Yi Yun was still silent, the referee had no choice but to ask.

"Yi Yun, don't fall for their trap! You are admitting defeat after a huge battle, it is not shameful. On the other hand, that Murong Fei is so shameless that it made people despise him. You just need to admit defeat. If you were to fight him, you would end up being even more humiliated."

Chu Xiaoran was afraid Yi Yun would fall for the trap.

Cang Yan noticed that Yi Yun did not intend to surrender, so he stood up, "I'll represent Yi Yun, and give up..."

Just as Cang Yan said this, Yi Yun, who had been silent, suddenly raised his hand, "Hold on! I'll accept this battle!"

What!?

Everyone was stunned when Yi Yun said this. Anyone could tell that Yi Yun was at the limits of his limits. He could not beat Murong Fei, yet he accepted the challenge? Was this any different than self-mutilating himself?

"Hahahaha!" Murong Fei laughed loudly, "Great, I originally thought that you were a coward, but I now take that back. You are not a coward, but a complete idiot. Very well, let's fight! I will beat you up like you are a dog!"

Murong Fei clenched his fists with extreme excitement on his face.

"Don't be in such a hurry. I am the leader of the Tai Ah Divine City's overall group match. I can let Chu Xiaoran take over for me." As Yi Yun said, he looked down the stage at Chu Xiaoran.

Chu Xiaoran was stunned hearing this.

Was he letting her fight in his stead?

She didn't lose in the teenager division matches, so according to the tournament's rules, anyone who had not been defeated had the right to fight. This included Wen Yu and a few other first year cultivators.

However... She was not Murong Fei's match!

Murong Fei was a Yuan Foundation realm warrior, and due to the age gap, Chu Xiaoran would only be abused trying to fight Murong Fei. Besides, Murong Fei seemed like a shameless type of person who would not hold back.

Yi Yun wanted her to fight?

Chu Xiaoran was completely in a daze. At that moment, Yi Yun's Yuan Qi transmission rang in her ear, "Drag it out, let Wen Yu and the rest also go up too. Try to delay as much time as possible before going up on stage. Try to delay for the time it takes 1-2 joss sticks to burn. The longer it is, the better. When you start fighting, just surrender quickly!"

Chu Xiaoran was shocked when she heard what Yi Yun said. Delay for the time it takes for 1-2 joss sticks to burn?

In this alternate world, one joss stick was the time it took for someone to take a hundred breaths*. The time to take 100-200

breaths was completely inadequate for Yi Yun even if it was delayed.

In Yi Yun's situation where he had been depleted of all his energy, he needed about four or five days to recover. And this was only under the condition of using all sorts of treasured materials to recuperate.

"Yi Yun, what are you doing?" Chu Xiaoran asked worriedly, "Do not fall for his trick! That Murong Fei is purposely antagonizing you so he can shine!"

Yi Yun shook his head, "No matter how Murong Fei provokes me, it is meaningless to me. He is just a retard in my eyes. If I minded a retard, then wouldn't I have the same intelligence as a retard?"

Yi Yun words immediately rendered Chu Xiaoran speechless, "Then you..."

"I only want to win! I want to win this overall group championship. That's why I accepted the challenge. You, Wen Yu and the other juniors, help me drag it out!"

In accordance with the tournament's rules, when one side sent out a person to fight on stage, the other side could indeed send another person to accept the challenge. It was only because Yi Yun was the only power on the Tai Ah Divine City's side that resulted in Yi Yun fighting all the way.

"You want to win? We can win under such circumstances?" Chu Xiaoran was stunned. Yi Yun's words were simply unbelievable.

"I'll give it a try. I do not have much confidence as well, and I do not know what will happen." With that said, Yi Yun walked off the Divine Wilderness Stage.

Chu Xiaoran was completely confused.

"Hahaha! You actually used a woman as your shield, you sure came out well!" Murong Fei laughed loudly the moment Yi Yun walked off the Divine Wilderness Stage. His laughter was without restraint and in it, there was a tinge of perverseness in it, "Little beauty, come on up and play with this elder brother! Gee, you're such a beauty. Don't worry, I'll be gentle."

Against social norms, Murong Fei's gaze wandered over Chu Xiaoran's body and it landed on her thighs, then on her chest.

This made Chu Xiaoran fume. She really wanted to charge up and fight it out with Murong Fei; however, she remembered Yi Yun's words and endured.

I'll let you be arrogant for a while!

Although she did not know what Yi Yun was doing, and while Yi Yun said he did not have much confidence, Chu Xiaoran still had unfounded confidence in Yi Yun. She believed that he might be able to create a miracle.

With that in mind, Chu Xiaoran said to the referee, "Sorry, I did not expect myself to engage in battle so suddenly. I want to prepare for a while."

The referee was slightly stunned, prepare?

Although he did not know what Chu Xiaoran needed to prepare, the referee nodded.

"Alright!"

...

At that moment, Yi Yun had already left the arena. With a blur of his figure, he disappeared.

Although he was greatly drained of his energy, he could still maintain a speed that exceeded mortals by a hundred times.

In the time it took to take a few breaths, he arrived in front of a stone hut a few hundred meters away. In the Tai Ah Divine City, there were plenty of these simple stone huts along the streets. They were built for people to take a breather.

At that moment, within the stone hut, there was a girl dressed in red. She sat on the railings of the courtyard casually, leaning on a tree beside the railing. Both her tiny legs were dangling in the air.

Her dangling her feet looked like a girl touching the surface of the water with the tip of her feet.

"Luo Huo'er!"

Yi Yun came out because of Luo Huo'er's Yuan Qi voice transmission!

"Miss Luo, you have a desolate bone relic that can recover stamina quickly?"

"Relic? Uh...I guess so..." Luo Huo'er responded whilst being preoccupied with another matter, in a way of affirming Yi Yun's query.

"There is such a relic?" Yi Yun found it unbelievable. A relic that could quickly restore a large portion or even all the stamina of a completely exhausted person was something that even the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord lacked!

There was a process for warriors to absorb relics. Relics could recover one's stamina, but their effects were slow. In fact, they had very limited effects. Even the Golden Crow species's blood he used did not have such a heaven-defying effect.

Although it sounded incredulous, Luo Huo'er had no reason to lie to him. She couldn't be up to her mischievous antics in this situation.

"You really have a relic like that, wouldn't it be very valuable? To use it on me..." Yi Yun stopped his words. Luo Huo'er's background was mysterious and the relic would have an abnormally high value according to her description as it confounded common sense.

Hearing Yi Yun's words, Luo Huo'er was rendered a bit speechless. How could she have such an amazing relic? She could recover Yi Yun's stamina only because of a special ability of hers.

However, her ability was not to be flaunted as it was related to her family clan and race. She could not let others know.

Luo Huo'er was also mischievous, but she was not good at lying. She wanted to sweep it under the rug in a hand-wavy fashion, but seeing that Yi Yun wanted to ask again, Luo Huo'er felt anger and stared at him. She snapped, "Where are you getting all that nonsense from!? Just stay there!"

"Uh..." Yi Yun choked. He never expected that Luo Huo'er, who was still mumbling a few moments ago suddenly, would take an 180° turn in attitude.

"Lie down!" Luo Huo'er said with a repulsive look and pointed to a stone table.

The table's length was about a foot long, and this rendered Yi Yun a bit speechless. It was so small, just barely enough to sit down on, how could he lie on it?

"There's no time, hurry!" Luo Huo'er urged him. Yi Yun had no choice but to lie down on the stone table.

Now, Yi Yun had the height of an adult, so for him, lying down on such a small stone table was an acrobatic art. If he was not careful, he could fall down.

When Luo Huo'er saw Yi Yun's comical state, the corners of her mouth arced upwards. She really wanted to take this opportunity to tease Yi Yun, but due to the lack of time, she gave up on the thought.

She was about to use her race's mystic technique, but then she thought of the matter regarding relics. So she took out a desolate bone relic from her interspatial ring and threw it at Yi Yun, "This is special medicine, eat it."

"Special medicine? It's this?" Yi Yun stared at the relic that looked like a sugar pill in his hand. He was speechless.

You think this bro is a child!?

He was now a Desolate Heaven Master, and he was not so easily fooled. Wasn't this an ordinary relic that could be bought anywhere on the streets?

Could this thing rapidly recover his stamina? Wasn't this a joke!?

Chapter 342: Clear Water Fountain

"Isn't this a normal desolate bone relic refined from the White Spirit Divine Snake and Heavenly Star Worm Teeth?"

Yi Yun held the sparkling bone relic in his hand and examined it while asking Luo Huo'er to clear his doubts.

Luo Huo'er was stunned for a moment. What the heck!? Can you recognize it just like that?

Although Luo Huo'er knew Yi Yun had extremely high talent in the Desolate Heaven technique, his talent had always been in the extraction of energy. She had never seen his talent in identifying energy.

Energy identification was not easy as it required tremendous amounts of experience.

Many outstanding Desolate Heaven Masters, who had studied for decades up to a century, might not be able to completely identify the materials used in every relic. In contrast, how long had Yi Yun studied the Desolate Heaven technique? And he had spent a long period of time in the Divine Wilderness, so how could he practice his Desolate Heaven Technique?

The desolate bone relic in Luo Huo'er's hands was made of a mixture of materials, yet Yi Yun had managed to accurately identify them.

Luo Huo'er could not longer lie anymore after Yi Yun identified the original raw materials. Seeing that Yi Yun was still having his doubts and hesitations, Luo Huo'er went from embarrassment to anger, "Why do you have so many nonsensical questions!? Do you want to eat it or not?"

Yi Yun was speechless. This was a grave matter. He had accepted Murong Fei's challenge, and if something went wrong, the outcome would be tragic.

However, the common desolate bone relic in his hand could recover stamina? Even ghosts wouldn't believe it!

But at that moment, Yi Yun could only try it as a last resort. He could only pray that Luo Huo'er was not pulling a prank on him. If she were to pull a prank like that at that moment, then she would be too evil.

Yi Yun swallowed the relic in his hand.

Seeing that Yi Yun still had the expression of "stop kidding me" even after swallowing the relic, Luo Huo'er had no way of justifying herself.

The situation was too sudden, so she had not thought of a good way to conceal it. However, upon further thinking, it seemed like it was impossible to conceal it.

As such, Luo Huo'er's expression turned serious and she said with a threatening tone "Kid, this lady warns you! Whatever happens next, you are not to tell anyone. If anyone asks you how you recovered your strength, just saying that this lady gave you a special medicine will do!"

Luo Huo'er came from a special background. It was expected that no one would have doubts if it was explained in such a manner.

Back then, her family clan had placed an individual near the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and then sent her to the Tai Ah Divine City. She didn't know what sort of standing the person had in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. To Luo Huo'er, he was some low ranking person, or else why would he have placed her here?

However, it seemed like that fellow had some standing in this region. He was not only able to send Luo Huo'er to the Tai Ah Divine City, but he also got the maidservant Dong'er entry into the city. Bringing a servant into the Tai Ah Divine City was a treatment many of the young masters did not have.

Under such circumstances, Luo Huo'er's status in the Tai Ah Divine City had always been mysterious. People guessed that her background was extraordinary, but it was weird because if she came from a prominent birthplace, why did she have to come to the Tai Ah Divine City for training, and not stay in her faction for training?

It was something that many people could not figure out.

Hearing Luo Huo'er's words, Yi Yun was slightly stunned. He vaguely guessed that Luo Huo'er most likely had a shocking secret that she did not want others to know. And clearly, the ability to heal his injuries had nothing to do with that relic.

"Not tell anyone, right..."

"Right! If not, you will... Eh?" Luo Huo'er stressed the "Eh" part of her speech in a strong tone. At the same time, she waved her tiny pink fist in front of Yi Yun's face. She used what she thought was a vicious look to express how terrible the consequences would be if Yi Yun revealed the secret.

"Do not think that just because this lady looks weak and pretty that her strength is lacking. Hehe, if you do, then you are really naive!" Luo Huo'er said fairly confidently. People who usually said these kinds of words were weak trash, somewhat like Murong Guang,

When Luo Huo'er said those words, for some unknown reason, Yi Yun felt that this girl was really someone to be feared.

"Alright, there is no time! Close your eyes. You are not to peek. If you peek once, I'll dig your eyes out!" Luo Huo'er said fiercely, so Yi Yun had no choice but to close his eyes.

Following that, Yi Yun felt his body suddenly being covered by a layer of light. This mysterious membrane of light completely cut off Yi Yun's perception.

"Oh?"

Yi Yun found it strange when he suddenly felt a cool energy envelope him.

It was as if he was submerged in the purest water, with his body left hanging in the void. Water flowed around him wave after wave and cleansed his body. It was a young girl's lovely touch. It was extremely comfortable.

This is...

Yi Yun was shocked. He really wanted to open his eyes to see what Luo Huo'er was doing.

However, upon recalling Luo Huo'er's words, Yi Yun held back the thought.

Without a doubt, Luo Huo'er was risking exposing her secret by helping him. As such, Yi Yun did not take the initiative to peek.

The clear water flow that seemed to contain wonderful amounts of energy seemed like a pure water fountain. It slowly meandered through Yi Yun's pores, orifices and into his meridians. It nourished his dantian, organs and even his bone marrow.

In a subtle fashion, Yi Yun felt his own energy gradually recovering. He even felt that the severed meridians in his right hand, sustained from using the Pure Yang Sword Palace's sword

intent, were slowly recovering.

Even that was possible!?

Yi Yun was really shocked in awe.

With his body gradually recovering and as he felt that clear water flow, Yi Yun seemed to feel a joy in life that he had never felt before. It was something he had never even thought of before.

It was like Man and Woman, who had never tasted the forbidden fruit, would never know the joy of love. Currently, Yi Yun also never thought that there was such a wondrous joy in the world.

Yi Yun felt like a fish, that had been separated from the ocean for a long time, and now it had finally returned to the water. He swam freely as he stretched his limbs out comfortably. He relaxed his body as every inch of his muscles and skin felt completely relaxed.

The pure water that gushed into his body was constantly accumulating energy within his body. Yi Yun felt as his body seem to go through very subtle changes. Even if he probed it carefully, he could still not figure out the changes. Yet inadvertently, it seemed to really exist...

At that moment, Yi Yun felt a pair of soft, cool and smooth arms hug him. When he received the embrace, that joy reached an extreme. And at that split second, Yi Yun felt as if the clear energy within his body had evolved. It really merged with his flesh and

blood, no longer separating.

This feeling was too beautiful.

Unfortunately, it was just a fleeting instance that seemed like a dream. It even made Yi Yun suspect if that was really the arms of a young girl hugging him.

Checking his own body, Yi Yun realized that he had recovered to his optimum condition. His injuries had recovered by more than 90%. Including his Yuan Qi and stamina, they had nearly recovered to their peaks.

Now, Yi Yun even felt that it was no problem conjuring the Golden Crow totem or even using the full Pure Yang Sword Palace sword intent!

It is so magical!?

Yi Yun really found it unbelievable.

"It's done!" At that moment, Luo Huo'er's voice rang in Yi Yun's ear.

"Can I open my eyes?" Yi Yun asked.

"You can keep them closed, I won't stop you." Luo Huo'er answered stiffly.

Yi Yun was speechless as he opened his eyes. He saw Luo Huo'er wearing an exquisite dress standing there. Her eyebrows were like willows, and her small face was red. Only her cute lips had a paleness to them that made one feel a sense of pity.

It seems... using that mysterious technique was quite exhausting on her.

Yi Yun suddenly felt a surge of pity and gratitude. He suddenly felt that this Luo Huo'er, who was usually up to no good and had a bad temper, seemed pretty cute.

Just as Yi Yun wanted to say thank you, Luo Huo'er suddenly said, "Why do you keep staring at me for?"

Luo Huo'er's eyes seemed to dodge his. She was like a little rabbit who would retreat 4-5 meters away at the slightest commotion. It was as if she wanted to draw a line between herself and Yi Yun.

Yi Yun's word of thanks was suddenly taken back. "Just now..."

Just after he said two words, Luo Huo'er suddenly cut him off, "What are you dazing around here for?! If you don't go, your tournament will be lost!"

Hearing Luo Huo'er's words, Yi Yun knew that she did not want to mention any of this, so he did not say anything else.

He did not say thank you and just nodded solemnly. With a flash, he rushed out of the small courtyard.

At the instance of him rushing out of the courtyard, Yi Yun inadvertently saw that on the corner of the wall in the courtyard was the short-legged Dong'er. With her two pigtails, she had found two bricks from somewhere to step on. She was lying on top of the wall as she tip-toed to peek into the courtyard!

The maidservant seemed to be slow to respond. She did not realize that Yi Yun was rushing out so suddenly. Only when Yi Yun rushed out of the courtyard did she realize that Yi Yun had disappeared. With her slow reaction, she hurriedly turned her head.

This resulted in her staring at Yi Yun. The atmosphere turned awkward.

"Uh..." Dong'er's tiny face was red as she pointed into the courtyard, saying hesitantly, "I was... just watching..."

Seeing Dong'er's look, Yi Yun found it amusing, "Then keep watching."

While saying that, Yi Yun's body flashed again and completely disappeared.

"Dong'er!"

At that moment, a cold voice rang. About halfway through, while Luo Huo'er was using her mystic technique, Dong'er had appeared. Luo Huo'er was concentrated on using her mystic technique and she did not realize that. However, later on, she naturally found out.

Dong'er jumped up with fright as she hurriedly climbed down the bricks and obediently walked into the courtyard.

"Miss... Dong'er was actually following you. When I saw the courtyard light up, I raised my neck to catch a glimpse..."

Dong'er shrunk back her neck like a child that had done something wrong.

Luo Huo'er's face turned cold. Actually, it was alright even if Dong'er saw it. Treating Yi Yun was different from fighting in front of the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. Just from this, even if she had revealed a few her secrets, people would only think that she had some fortuitous event and fascinating cultivation technique, and not suspect that she wasn't human.

And with her background, no one would touch her because of this.

However, if people could recognize her race, then it would be problematic. Although she could inform her family clan and ask for protection, then no one would do anything to her. However, it would bring a great deal of trouble to her family. At that moment, she would definitely be punished by her father.

Just thinking of the father who always abided to her wishes, and would suddenly become a stern father at the critical moment, Luo Huo'er felt helpless.

"That..." As Luo Huo'er's mind was wandering, Dong'er, who had originally made a mistake, sneakily glanced at Luo Huo'er and asked softly, "Miss, why did you hug elder brother Yi Yun at the end?"

Hearing Dong'er's words, Luo Huo'er's small face sank. She glanced at Dong'er and said coldly, "That never happened!"

"Uh?" Dong'er was surprised for a moment and shook her head in confusion. She still said in a matter-of-fact manner, "That did happen..."

Luo Huo'er remained silent. Her pretty face seemed to almost drip water.

Dong'er, who was slow to react, still did not realize it. She continued to ask her question stubbornly. However, just as she opened her mouth to ask again, her chubby little face was suddenly pinched by two small hands!

Luo Huo'er pinched Dong'er's chubby cheeks and pulled from both sides.

"Aiyah, pain! Pain!" Dong'er shouted. Her face was molded into a

funny face as her small mouth was pulled wide apart.

However, Luo Huo'er did not let go, nor did she speak. She kept on pulling for about thirty seconds. Dong'er's tears came out. From her experience, whenever this happened, it was because she had made a mistake or had said something wrong.

Dong'er finally understood and as she rubbed her face, she said dejectedly, "I think, I saw wrongly..."

"Alright..."

Luo Huo'er gave a nod of satisfaction before releasing her hands.

However... She still felt unhappy.

In fact, she thought with her powers, she could easily treat Yi Yun. Unexpectedly, healing Yi Yun's injuries required too much energy. It far exceeded her expectations.

90% of the healing power within Luo Huo'er's body had been transferred into Yi Yun's body, but it was still insufficient.

As a last resort, at the last moment of using her mystic technique, Luo Huo'er used her "Fusing Technique", perfectly infusing the healing powers into Yi Yun's blood, flesh, and meridians.

If the healing power used by Luo Huo'er at the beginning was a

boost in volume for Yi Yun, the last instant was a qualitative leap.

However, the "Fusing Technique" needed physical contact and it could not be transferred over a vacuum.

When Luo Huo'er was greatly drained, she could only use this method, in order to prevent it failing at the last moment.

"That toad has really lucked out. This lady's first hug was given to him." When Luo Huo'er was using her mystic technique, the situation was too urgent for her to think carefully. Now thinking about it, she felt she had got the bad side of the bargain. "It's all Mother. Teaching me such a mystic technique. Isn't this something only used for my husband or children? Forget it, I'll not practice it in the future!"

As Luo Huo'er was thinking this, she kicked a stone on the ground up into the air. "Well, I'll treat it as if I was hugging a pet dog. I hugged the family dog when I was young, so there is no difference!"

Luo Huo'er comforted herself as she slowly soothed her emotions.

Chapter 343: Fighting Again

At that moment in the arena, the alliance tournament between the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and Yun Long Divine Kingdom was in its final stages. Yun Long Divine Kingdom was likely to clinch victory.

"I admit defeat!"

A few seconds after the referee declared the beginning of the current match, a youth representing the Tai Ah Divine City timidly raised his hand.

"Admit defeat? Admitting defeat again?"

The Tai Ah Divine City audience were dumbfounded.

A few cultivators from their Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had consecutively done lots of preparation before going on stage. They then hung around the stage for a while, and a few seconds after the match began, they would admit defeat!

What are they doing?

Actually, the Tai Ah Divine City warriors knew that those who came up on stage last were not Murong Fei's match at all. Since they were not his match, there was no point forcing it. Why go up and not fight, only bringing shame to yourself?

"Hahaha, I've never seen a group of extreme quality tortoises!"

"I'm dying of laughter. They don't even dare to fight. Are you coming up on stage en masse to sing!?"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors quipped sarcastically as they laughed.

Previously they had suppressed their anger, as Yi Yun was too strong. They had not been able to relieve their anger. Now in a rare turn of events, Yi Yun was seriously injured and could no longer fight, resulting in the others going up on stage. They immediately began to relieve their anger by sarcastically ridiculing the Tai Ah Divine City warriors.

"Your Tai Ah Divine Kingdom has only one strong person. As for our Yun Long Divine Kingdom, we have a group of strong people! Feng Lin, Bai, Murong Fei. Anyone is good!"

Another Yun Long Divine Kingdom warrior in the audience stands shouted loudly.

When Murong Fei heard this, he felt extremely elated. This person's words had specially mentioned his name, and he was ranked together with Feng Lin and Bai.

Murong Fei was planning to brutally fight and torture in his one-man show but was unable to do so because of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors surrendering. However, he still felt extremely

good being able to stand on stage alone, triumphant over the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors and looking down on the masses!

"Wen Yu, you are last. Delay it as much as you can! The second joss stick should only be burned halfway. Yi Yun should be back soon!"

Chu Xiaoran was confident in Yi Yun. She believed that even if Yi Yun could not recover from his injuries, he would still return by the appointed time.

"Yes." Wen Yu nodded.

"Ah, little beauty. Are you prepared to fight me, or will you be like the rest, admitting defeat once the match begins?" Murong Fei's mouth curled up in a mocking smile, "If I fight you, I will be gentle. Don't worry."

Murong Fei's words were filled with mockery.

Wen Yu's face sank and did not speak a word. As she adjusted her weapon, she prepared to go on stage.

"Adjust it a bit more. Don't think I do not know what you are doing. You are all coming up one after another to mess around. Are you trying to stall for time? Hahaha! Yi Yun, that gutless fellow is using women as shields. Such a pity, how long can the lot of you delay? So what if you drag it out for another 15-20 minutes? The outcome would not change!"

Murong Fei's smile turned cold as he waited to see Wen Yu perform.

Having Murong Fei see through their ploy, Wen Yu's hand trembled as her sword nearly dropped to the ground. Previously, she was a proud daughter of heaven in her family clan. When had she ever lost her confidence because of going on stage to battle?

But now, faced with this scenario, Wen Yu was feeling intense pressure.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom audience's depression, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience's ridicule and the perverse gaze from Murong Fei were all sources of Wen Yu's pressure.

Just as Wen Yu had finished adjusting everything and was about to go on stage, she suddenly heard a voice transmission, "That will do. Just leave it to me from here on out."

Wen Yu halted in her steps and turned her head forcefully. She did not know when Yi Yun had walked up behind her.

Yi Yun's clothes were still stained with blood and no one knew what he had done in the time it took two joss sticks to burn.

Wen Yu used her perception to probe but failed to discover any gains in Yuan Qi for Yi Yun.

"Senior Yi..." Wen Yu was just about to say something when Yi Yun walked up to the center of the Divine Wilderness Stage, standing in front of Murong Fei.

"Yi Yun is here!" Chu Xiaoran exhaled deeply. Yi Yun had indeed arrived back at the appointed time. If not, she would not have known what to do next.

Chu Xiaoran did not know what Yi Yun did. Although her rationale told her that it was impossible to recover from such serious injuries in a short time, she still looked forward to Yi Yun bringing about a miracle.

"Yi Yun, you have finally come out? I thought you wouldn't dare." Murong Fei looked at Yi Yun with a grin on his lips.

Yi Yun had finally appeared and it was time for Murong Fei to show off. He was looking forward to this fight. All these years, he had been overshadowed by Feng Lin and Bai's halo. He was not famous, but in fact, he was very confident in his strength!

He needed an opportunity to prove himself.

And the greatly drained yet prominent Yi Yun was the best stepping stone!

Although he knew Yi Yun could not recover in such a short period of time, Murong Fei still checked Yi Yun's Yuan Qi to be safe. He wanted to know how much he had recovered.

However, he did not detect any.

Realizing Murong Fei's intentions, the ends of Yi Yun's mouth curled up. He had long converged his body's Yuan Qi. With the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun's control of Yuan Qi was too good. When he converged his Yuan Qi, Murong Fei naturally could not detect anything.

If this was seen through, how was he to fight in a while?

Yi Yun was not some magnanimous person. Against enemies, there was no lack of him stabbing them in the back.

"Hehe." Murong Fei felt slightly relieved having not detected Yi Yun's Yuan Qi. He smiled insidiously and mocked, "Yi Yun, you delayed all this time to secretly eat some medicine? How effective is it?"

Yi Yun lightly replied, "Not bad. It wouldn't do against experts, but against some cats and dogs, especially those shameless people without any ability, it is not a problem."

Hearing Yi Yun's words, Murong Fei's face sank. How could he not be aware of Yi Yun scolding him with his words, "Courting death!"

Murong Fei said the two words and his Yuan Qi exploded. Behind him, an Aspect Totem in the shape of a leopard appeared.

Murong Fei did have some ability. The Aspect Totem was known as a Golden Leopard. Its defense was extremely strong and was not easy to deal with. To be able to have a Golden Leopard as an Aspect Totem proved that Murong Fei had trained a lot in the Divine Wilderness, by killing a large number of desolate beasts with his own strength.

"Young Master Murong! Kill the kid!"

In the audience stands, a vassal family of the Murong family clan began cheering for Murong Fei.

The Murong family clan was one of the top super families in the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, so it had many supporters in the audience.

Murong Fei's energy rose to an extreme level and he shouted loudly. Just as he was about to use his skill, Yi Yun suddenly attacked!

Three sword attacks were slashed out in an instant!

Within these three sword attacks were about 10% of the Pure Yang Sword Palace sword intent.

"Cha! Cha! Cha!"

The three beams cut through the air and shot straight at Murong Fei!

It was so fast that it left people no time to react. The Aspect Totem Murong Fei had just conjured up was slashed apart by the three sword attacks!

"Whew!"

After the three sword attacks tore apart the Aspect Totem, they did not lose their momentum and carried on flying straight at Murong Fei!

The three sword beams brought with them a terrifying killing intent!

"What!?"

Murong Fei was greatly alarmed. He had some ability and in a hundredth of a blink of an eye, he managed to respond in a timely manner. His body flew back and wielded his sword to block the three sword beams.

However, how could he block Yi Yun's sword attack?

When Murong Fei's sword clashed with Yi Yun's sword beam, a "Ding!" metallic cracking sound was heard. Murong Fei's sword snapped from clashing with the three sword beams!

Murong Fei's palm tore apart as he felt his arm go numb. His face was filled with inexplicable horror.

How could there be such a terrifying sword beam? It managed to snap the sword in his hand instantaneously!?

Murong Fei's sword was no ordinary item.

However, even if it was a sword made by a master, it needed a warrior to inject within it Yuan Qi and sword intent to remain intact. When two swordsmen differed greatly in their sword intent and strength, then a clash between them would usually lead to the breaking of one party's sword!

Once the sword was broken, Murong Fei no longer had the ability to resist.

The three sword beams pierced through his protective Yuan Qi, right into his flesh without further thought.

"Puah!"

Blood splattered and Murong Fei's chest and abdomen were pierced open by the sword beam. What was even worse was the third sword beam stabbing into his shoulder, chopping off his right arm!

Murong Fei bellowed out a heart-wrenching cry as he slammed heavily to the ground. He saw his arm flying with his own eyes. That experience was unforgettable.

"My arm..."

Murong Fei's face was pale. To warriors, even if an arm was chopped off, as long as it wasn't destroyed, it could be reconnected with medicine.

However, even a rejoined arm would need more than half a year to fully recover.

Furthermore, his chest and abdomen had been pierced through. It would probably take Murong Fei more than a year to recover his Yuan Qi. His injuries were much worse than Murong Guang's!

"Murong Fei!"

Seeing the tables turn, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom participants were completely shocked. What was this situation? Yi Yun was clearly drained of all his Yuan Qi previously and looked like he couldn't last any further. Yet, in a blink of an eye, he was able to produce such a terrifying sword beam?

In less than a few seconds, Yi Yun had severely injured Murong Fei to the point of death with his slashes!

"Yi Yun, he!"

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom participants looked at Yi Yun with horror. They saw Yi Yun breathing deeply and quietly. He had a sword and saber in each of his hands. His body was straight like a javelin, erected on the Divine Wilderness Stage.

No Yuan Qi fluctuation was found in Yi Yun's body. But for an unknown reason, seeing Yi Yun was like seeing a dormant primordial strain. It caused great apprehension!

This fellow had really fought with Bai for several hundred rounds and had been seriously injured!?

How was it possible to be this strong even when seriously injured!?

Could it be...

People looked at each other and seemed to figure out of the only possibility.

That was...Yi Yun had recovered from his injuries!

With that thought in mind, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors held their breaths. Heavens! What happened in the few minutes when Yi Yun was away!?

Chapter 344: The Dust Settles

"This kid! Has he made a full recovery!?"

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun with open eyes. He too could not figure out what Yi Yun had done. Yi Yun had returned brimming with energy in about 8 minutes. It went against common logic.

He looked at the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord questioningly, and he noticed the City Lord looking at Yi Yun thoughtfully. Cang Yan had no idea what he was thinking.

...

Yi Yun stood on the Divine Wilderness Stage with a sword and saber in each hand, looking down at the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors off-stage.

At that moment, Yi Yun's body was covered with blood. The blood was both his and his enemies. Although his clothes were torn and tattered, the aura he gave off was like that of the triumphant return of a king, looking down upon all men!

"Who else is there?" Yi Yun asked.

He did not mean to shout, but his voice contained a lot of energy. This caused his words to echo throughout the arena.

"Who else is there?" "Who else is there?" "Who else is there?"...

Hearing Yi Yun's question, the audience held their breaths.

Terrifying!

A person with one saber and one sword managed to battle the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's 15 proud children of heaven!

And this generation of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom was a generation filled with talent, a talent that was not seen in the past century!

Otherwise, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Seven Star Pagoda Owner would not have proposed for the younger generation to fight it out to decide on the number of seats.

However, under these circumstances, none of the proud children of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom dared to accept Yi Yun's challenge to fight!

Now, all the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors were in complete silence.

This overall group match was like facing a humanoid primordial strain when they faced Yi Yun!

Yi Yun's strength, endurance and ability to endure pain was

incredulous.

Not only did he easily defeat Qianshui, and then defeat Feng Lin and Bai in two intense battles, he had even defeated the two Murong brothers in a split second when they took the opportunity to challenge Yi Yun when he was at his limits!

A terrifying opponent like Yi Yun made them struggle to muster the courage.

He seemed to have an endless amount of power. It made people feel a sense of despair. It was impossible beating him.

At that moment, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors were looking at each other, yet none of them dared to go on stage. What a joke! Wasn't one courting death to fight against this humanoid primordial strain? The Murong brothers were the perfect example!

Especially Murong Fei. His injuries were worse than Murong Guang's. He had two holes left in his body and he lost an arm. His life was nearly on doorsteps of death.

Although he still had a breath of life left, he was crippled. It was clear that he would be left behind by the elites at his level. His talent would drop down a level.

With such a heavy price, who was willing to fight Yi Yun?

"Yun Long Divine Kingdom, is there no one willing to fight?" The

referee asked again.

The audience all looked at the remaining 9 Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors.

These nine people were suddenly the focus of attention. However, it did not feel good being the focus of attention at that moment.

Being defeated by others was originally embarrassing, but now, they were the type that did not even fight. It was even more embarrassing.

Against all the stares of everyone, the nine of them seemed to be sitting on pins and needles. They simply wished that they could turn into a pile of s**t. At least, in that case, no one would focus on them.

They really regretted participating in this alliance tournament. Many of them had not even fought once.

In the young adult division matches, they had no chance to fight because they were too strong.

In the overall group match, they still had no chance to fight because they were too weak!

The nine of them evaded the gazes of Yi Yun and the audience. It was clear that they were abandoning the battle.

Seeing that the nine of them were abandoning the battle, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elders felt a sense of anger and pity. However, they knew that with Yi Yun completely recovered, having the nine people go up would only result in them being battered.

"Ah!"

A Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder slapped his thigh. Having all the country's elites defeated by a single person felt frustrating!

As for the Yun Long Divine Kingdom audience, they were numbed as every one of them remained silent. Back when Yi Yun had defeated Feng Lin and Bai consecutively, they were still suppressing their fiery anger, but now, that fiery anger had been extinguished by a basin of water.

Originally, they had wanted to say that the top geniuses of their Yun Long Divine Kingdom were just weaker than Yi Yun by a bit, and that they were superior in number.

However, now that those geniuses had been defeated by a single Yi Yun even with their numbers, what else could be said?

"Since that is the case, I shall announce that the overall group champion belongs to the... Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!" On the Divine Wilderness Stage, the referee announced excitedly. As a Tai Ah Divine City law-enforcer, he too felt extremely excited.

With the referee's announcement, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors began to scream wildly.

"Yi Yun! Yi Yun!"

If not for the law-enforcers maintained order, they would have rushed up the stage to lift Yi Yun up.

This victory was definitely not easy!

The battle process was intense and difficult. It was nearly all fought by Yi Yun alone. He had used all his energy to the point of overextending himself!

"We won!"

Chu Xiaoran exhaled. She looked at Yi Yun with eyes full of admiration and curiosity. Originally, when Yi Yun asked her to draw out the time, she did not believe that Yi Yun could recover to near peak conditions in such a short period of time.

What did he do?

"Senior Brother Yi, you're awesome!"

When Yi Yun walked off the Divine Wilderness Stage, the Tai Ah Divine City competitors, the juniors, and Wen Yu all gathered to

congratulate him.

They had overjoyed expressions and they were extremely excited.

Although they were only there to make up the numbers for this tournament, they had at least gone on stage. And it was not meaningless, they had collectively managed to gain some time for Yi Yun.

Seeing these juniors reveal smiles that came right from the heart, Yi Yun finally relaxed his high-strung nerves.

He smiled, "It wasn't just me alone."

Yi Yun had meant to refer to someone else, but these group of juniors naturally did not realize that. They thought that Yi Yun was referring to them.

Even though they liked to brag occasionally, they did not feel comfortable stealing the credit at that moment. They scratched their heads and said sheepishly, "Senior Yi, you are too modest. What we did was nearly nothing..."

Yi Yun smiled and did not explain. He knew Luo Huo'er did not want to proclaim this.

He casually looked towards the audience stands and saw a red figure hiding in the corner. Her elbow was propped onto a railing with her hand cupping her chin.

This young girl was naturally Luo Huo'er, and beside her was her maidservant Dong'er.

"Hmph! This fellow sure is cocky. Without me, he wouldn't be able to be so spirited!" Luo Huo'er said in a pissed off manner. She was the type that liked to show off, but due to her family's secret, she had no choice but to stay low-key, otherwise, her father would scold her.

This feeling of being a hero behind the scenes did not feel good!

"Indeed, indeed! Miss is the best!" Dong'er nodded to praise Luo Huo'er hurriedly. She was afraid that if she were any slower, Luo Huo'er would pinch her face again.

Chapter 345: Meeting The City Lord

Although the alliance tournament had ended, the audience still cheered, with each wave louder than the other.

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were too excited and they could not stop at all.

The glory belonged to the Tai Ah Divine City today, and it belonged to Yi Yun even more.

Yi Yun stood on the Divine Wilderness Stage with his eyes closed as the waves of cheers roared.

Although this cheering was intoxicating, Yi Yun was not enjoying the cheers. He was trying to gain some insights.

In the battle with Feng Lin, Yi Yun had gathered new insight on the sword intent when he used the Pure Yang Sword Palace sword intent, and that brought some changes to Yi Yun's dantian.

Following that, Yi Yun drank the Golden Crow species's blood. In the intense battle, the Golden Crow species's blood slowly merged with Yi Yun's blood, forming a harmony in his body.

And in the battle with Bai, this harmony reached an extreme. Yi Yun's understanding was continuously being accumulated and increased.

Finally, when Luo Huo'er healed him, the cool energy that entered Yi Yun made his meridians harmonize and clear. It was as if he was going to break through soon.

He could vaguely feel his body's Yuan Qi slowly gathering towards his dantian, and slowly binding together.

Yi Yun knew that once the Yuan Qi bound and condensed together, he would be entering the Yuan Foundation realm.

Yuan Foundation was the foundation for a warrior to climb to the peak of martial arts!

"Yi Yun!" Cang Yan jumped down from the Elder stands. "You little kid, you grew that much by being out for less than a year."

Cang Yan looked at Yi Yun, but he felt the more he looked at him, the more he didn't understand. It was amazing how Yi Yun had come this far.

"Senior Cang Yan." Yi Yun bowed.

"The City Lord wants to meet you!" Cang Yan suddenly said.

Yi Yun was slightly stunned. Meet the City Lord?

Yi Yun nodded and said, "I got it. I had gained several insights in the battles before. In two hours time, I'll meet the City Lord."

It was rare for warriors to gain insight. The insights gained from a close fight were especially valuable. If one did not strike while the iron was hot to convert the insights into one's strength, then these insights would fade away after a period of time.

"Alright. Feel at ease while digesting them. There's no need to rush to meet the City Lord."

Cang Yan didn't seem to mind. Now, the more he looked at Yi Yun, the more he liked him. Yi Yun not only had gained seats for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, but he had gained glory for the Tai Ah Divine City. It also gave Cang Yan a life goal.

At Cang Yan's stage, his position and status was pretty much at the peak of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, however, it was all meaningless to Cang Yan.

He was on the path of pursuing martial arts, but due to his age, his potential had been expended, so he could not go further anymore.

Even with his martial arts at its end, Cang Yan still wished to pursue other things.

Cang Yan also wanted to leave a name in history.

For so many years in the history of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, there had been so many Sages since ancient times. In that long

river of history, Cang Yan was not outstanding. However, if he were to groom Yi Yun well, then it would be different.

He could make history from achieving this feat.

...

The news of Yi Yun defeated all the Yun Long Divine Kingdom warriors, and winning first place in the overall group match for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was immediately spread like the wind through various channels the moment the tournament was over!

All sorts of long distance arrays, jade scrolls and letters were used.

Soon, Yi Yun was the most dazzling person in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Numerous factions paid attention to Yi Yun. And countless numbers of young warriors treated Yi Yun as an idol. His achievements were really amazing. Besides, he was still young, so his future was limitless!

At that moment, Yi Yun was in his residence, having just finished two hours of meditation.

Bit by bit, he clarified his understandings as he consolidated his foundations and cultivation level.

Yi Yun felt that he had reached a critical point. He was close to breaking through to the Yuan Foundation realm.

"It's time to meet the City Lord!"

Yi Yun stood up and calmed his mind. Against the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, Yi Yun did not feel at ease. He knew that in a while, he would be questioned a lot.

Outside the door, three law-enforcers had been waiting all that time.

"Are you ready?" A peak-Human Lord cultivation level law-enforcer, who was usually cold, now turned respectful when he met Yi Yun.

"Yes!" Yi Yun nodded. He followed the three law-enforcers all the way to the top of the central divine tower.

In the middle of the central divine tower, there was a vertical tunnel. And in the tunnel, there was a spirit boat powered by relics. Yi Yun rode the spirit boat together with the three law-enforcers, flying to the top of the tower.

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord residence was located at the 99th floor of the central divine tower!

This level had only three other heaven-graded rooms other than the City Lord's residence. These three rooms were provided to guests. For example, people from neighboring countries of equal level to the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord or the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Emperor would use these rooms.

The City Lord residence was situated in the middle of the three heaven-graded rooms. There was a large plaque on the door, and on it there were two large carved words, "Tai Ah"!

This plaque was written by the first Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord himself. It had experienced the test of time.

When Yi Yun walked over, the door to the City Lord residence opened automatically.

Yi Yun adjusted his breathing before he walked in.

He entered a brightly lit hall after walking through the doors. Yi Yun saw a middle-aged scholar standing between some columns. His hands were held behind his back as he was admiring a picture.

This picture looked very strange. It had some abstract red lines that stretched endlessly. It looked like smeared out blood.

Just looking at this picture gave one an extremely unpleasant feeling.

Although Yi Yun vaguely knew what the picture was, he did not

ask. He stood silently behind the City Lord.

This was the first time he met the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. It was not convenient for him to ask too much.

The middle-aged scholar looked for a long while before he turned around to look at Yi Yun.

"City Lord!" Yi Yun bowed.

The middle-aged scholar smiled, "Yi Yun, can you tell me how you mastered the 'Myriad Beast Totem'?"

Yi Yun had already expected that the middle-aged scholar would ask him that. He thought through his words before explaining how he met the pure Yang spirit and being unable to do anything to it, he met the Golden Crow species. He then witnessed the fight between the two pure Yang beings.

Later on, he mentioned how he used the protective charm Su Jie gave him. He managed to use the protective charm to resolve his crisis, and then, how he finally killed the Golden Crow species.

Everything Yi Yun said was the truth, without any lies. There were only some things that he did not reveal.

The City Lord nodded, "I see. In the way you describe it, it's indeed a very good opportunity... However, I guess, that isn't all the opportunities you have encountered, right..."

The middle-aged scholar was hinting at something, causing Yi Yun's heart to beat fast.

"Yi Yun, you don't have to be nervous!"

The middle-aged scholar laughed, "No matter what you encountered in Fallen Star Gate, all of them belong to you. As a junior, you risked your life to obtain them. If I were to vie with you for it, then with my outlook and aspirations, I am not worthy of being a City Lord."

The Tai Ah Divine City had stood for tens of millions of years. All these years, the Tai Ah Divine City had Sages residing it. Elites often went out into the Divine Wilderness for training, so it was not uncommon for them to have a fortuitous event.

If the Divine City's Sage level Elders fought for the fortuitous events every genius encountered, then it would be chaos. If this went on, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would have been destroyed in a short period of time.

The middle-aged man carried on, "At my stage, the chances of me breaking through to the Great Emperor realm is infinitely tiny. No matter how big a fortuitous opportunity it is, it would be very difficult. As I have expended a large amount of my potential, the gap from the peak of the Sage realm to the Great Emperor realm is like a divine moat. It is impossible for me to cross it, so you do not worry about me coveting your possessions."

"And even if it were you, with a large fortuitous opportunity, it would be extremely difficult to break through to the Great Emperor realm. If you were managed to do so, it will be a huge blessing for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and me!"

When the middle-aged scholar said this, he suddenly felt an endless amount of emotions.

"Yi Yun, many of your accomplishments now are unprecedented in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. However, when placed in some factions which you can't even imagine, it is probably nothing."

"Now, you have gained insights on the saber tomb and the sword tomb, you managed to master the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' in tens of days, and you mastered the 'Myriad Beast Totem'. All this achievements have surprised me. However... it is just a surprise. This is because I know that in your current state, you have a chance of becoming a Great Emperor in the future. But when placed in that vast world, so what?"

"This world is too big. You are not the only young person who I have not been able to see through. For example, the Luo Huo'er who healed you of your injuries may have achievements in the future that far exceed you."

When the middled-aged scholar suddenly said this, Yi Yun felt alarmed.

The middle-aged scholar knew that Luo Huo'er had healed his injuries!

Indeed, although Luo Huo'er had chosen a concealed area to heal him, with the middle-aged scholar's means, he probably had methods to track him and Luo Huo'er with his perception, seeing the process of Luo Huo'er healing him.

"You don't have to worry. Regarding that young lady, I have no intentions in investigating her. She comes from a very huge faction. I also do not think that faction has any machinations on the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, so I am not too concerned."

The middle aged scholar turned away slightly as he spoke. Again, he looked at the blood picture behind him.

"The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is like a tiny leaf in this world. It is extremely rare for it to stand for so long. In the future, it has every possibility to capsize...for example this crisis we are facing now!"

Yi Yun quietly listened to the City Lord's words. He could feel the temperament of a leader from the middle-aged man. What concerned the middle-aged scholar the most was the future of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"City Lord, are you referring to the Shepherd Boy?" Yi Yun asked cautiously.

"Maybe..." The middle-aged scholar sighed. "This picture you see in front of you was drawn by a Sage from the imperial city. He expended a few hundred years of his life span to use the Tai Ah Compass to draw a... Divination Picture!"

Chapter 346: Great Expectations

Tai Ah Compass?

Yi Yun knew about this item. It was one of the most important items of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Back when the phenomenon of the Purple Clouds' Birth happened, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had used the Tai Ah Compass to search for treasures. In fact, the Tai Ah Compass was used to search for treasures most of the time. As a result, citizens usually called it a treasure compass.

"What were the results of the divination?" Yi Yun asked.

"The result was... Extreme calamity!"

The expression of the middle-aged scholar turned serious, "Actually, before the divination was made, I had an ominous feeling. I too am not able to predict the future."

The middle-aged scholar shook his head. The future was filled with mysteries. It was too difficult to catch a glimpse of the future with the cultivation level of a Sage. He was only able to get a vague premonition.

"Shepherd Boy..."

Yi Yun did not know what to feel. Originally, when the Shepherd Boy appeared, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom only became alarmed. They had contacted the alliance countries to prepare for battle, as to whether there really would be a real beast horde or not, it was still an unknown.

People hoped that they were alarmed for no reason. However, from the words of the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, one could tell that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was likely to soon face a crisis.

Yi Yun recalled the time when he met the Shepherd Boy. He found it hard to believe that such a peaceful looking and delicate youth, who looked like a regular country farm boy, was actually a demonic person that had killed countless people. His appearance was accompanied by a blood storm.

What sort of person was he?

"Yi Yun, the future of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is unknown. This Divine Kingdom has existed for too long and I can feel a trace of apathy... I cannot see the future of the Divine Kingdom, but I can guess that this crisis might be a chance for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom to break and recreate itself. If it can survive this crisis, the Divine Kingdom will be reborn. If it cannot..."

The middle-aged scholar stopped in his words.

Yi Yun was alarmed upon hearing this. The situation was a lot more serious than he thought. Could such a big country be destroyed?

"Alright, let us not talk about this anymore. Yi Yun, you have contributed the most this time. I will reward you. You are about to break through to the Yuan Foundation. Here, I have a elixir, something that you can use right now."

As the City Lord spoke, he took out a small porcelain vase and handed it over to Yi Yun.

Yi Yun received the vase and removed the cap. A elixir in the color of dark red blood rolled out.

Just holding the elixir made Yi Yun's hands feel hot. It was like he was holding a flame.

"Many years ago, I obtained a primordial herb. Its name is the Dragon Blood Lucidum. This primordial herb looks no different from normal lucidums. However, when you cut its roots or pileus, juice the color of blood will flow out, hence its name.

The Dragon Blood Lucidum is extremely difficult to catch, much harder than the Heaven Purple Yang Ginseng you obtained. I used it as the main drug to refine a Blood Yang Elixir. Blood Yang Elixirs are extreme Yang herbal items. You are cultivating the pure Yang laws and with your fortuitous opportunities, you have now a partial pure Yang body. If you were to eat this Blood Yang Elixir before you break through to the Yuan Foundation realm, it will benefit you greatly!"

"To break through to the Yuan Foundation realm and using this

Blood Yang Elixir, a normal person might end up dying from his body exploding, ignoring the fact that it would be a waste. However, I believe that giving it to you will make the Blood Yang Elixir be put to good use.

"At that time, I will give you a heaven-grade room in the central divine tower's 99 floor to allow you to go into reclusive training to break through. The Blood Yang Elixir will allow your Yuan Foundation realm to become even sturdier!"

"Remember, the Yuan Foundation realm is extremely important. Yuan Foundation, Yuan Foundation. Yuan means "first", while foundation means the "base foundation". Yuan Foundation realm is the base of your martial arts. You have to create a solid and sturdy Yuan Foundation. It will greatly affect your future success!"

Yi Yun felt heartfelt gratitude when he heard the middle-aged scholar say all this. All these great conditions were probably the highest possible treatment a young warrior in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom could enjoy while breaking through to the Yuan Foundation realm.

He had sincerely worked hard for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom while the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom reciprocated likewise. This relationship was very rare.

"This is also for you."

As the middle-aged scholar said this, he handed over a wooden box to Yi Yun.

The wooden box had an ancient make to it. When Yi Yun held it in both hands, he felt his hands sink. The wood was surprisingly several times heavier than metal.

It was Divine Ebony.

Yi Yun recognized this wood. Divine Ebony was harder than metal. It would not decay, even when buried in the ground for 100,000 years. However, the Divine Ebony box in Yi Yun's hands were lined with the marks of time. It was mottled with age. It was unknown about how much time this wooden box had experienced.

Yi Yun opened the wooden box, and within it was a yellow silk fabric. Above the silk fabric were nine jade scrolls.

All the jade scrolls were lined up, with one piece larger than the other. Yi Yun could feel the jade scroll's heat when he picked up one of them and placed it in his hand. It felt like flesh and blood.

"This is... the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'!" Yi Yun's eyes lit up.

"That it is. This is the complete jade scroll set of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'. These nine jade scrolls correspond to the nine levels of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'. The higher you go, the fewer the jade scrolls. Especially the ninth jade scroll, it only has one copy!"

"Attempts to replicate the ninth jade scroll have been made since

ancient times by the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Emperor, the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord and anyone else who have had great accomplishments in the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'. However, all attempts have failed. The only few copies that exist are too different from the original copy!"

The replication of cultivation techniques is extremely difficult. There was the requirement of the replicator completely mastering the cultivation technique before one even had the ability to replicate. And to completely master the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', this was just too difficult.

"Now, I am passing the nine jade scrolls to you. They are the foundations of our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom! There are rumors amongst the citizens that the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was created by the founding Emperor of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, but in fact, this is not true... This Sacred Technique was found within an ancient ruin by the founding Emperor. The nine jade scrolls in your hands are the original copies the founding Emperor took out from the ruin!"

"From now on, the jade scrolls will be left with you. However, if the crisis really comes, then I will take them away from you. You... still do not have the ability to protect them."

"These nine jade scrolls are invulnerable and impermeable to water and fire. They have been handed down without problems for over tens of millions of years in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. I do not wish for them to be lost by my hands!"

The middle-aged scholar looked seriously at Yi Yun as he spoke.

With that, he placed a hand on Yi Yun's shoulder.

Yi Yun found the hand very heavy.

These nine jade scrolls were actually the original jade scrolls the founding Divine Emperor left behind. Their value was obvious.

It was unexpected that the City Lord would give the original jade scrolls to him for cultivation.

This amount of debt could not be said to be light.

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord had placed very high expectations on Yi Yun. He was also hoping that, in the event that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom encountered anything terrible, Yi Yun would become the remnant seed of the Divine Kingdom.

When this seed germinated, it could one day grow into a towering tree...

Chapter 347: Attempt To Break Through To The Yuan Foundation Realm

Yi Yun looked at the residence in front of him, it was several hundred square meters in area. There was an alchemy lab, a library, a guest hall, a bedroom and a cultivation room. All sorts of facilities were present.

In the middle of the room, there was an expensive array that could gather Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. It allowed a warrior to cultivate here for double the results with half the effort.

This was the central divine tower's 99th floor's heaven-grade room!

The central divine tower's 99th floor was only several thousands square meters in area. There were a total of 4 rooms on this floor. This room was not opened to cultivators, but now, Yi Yun was allowed to stay here for an extended period of time.

Just thinking back about a year when Yi Yun first entered the Tai Ah Divine City, Yi Yun would not even dream of entering the rooms in the central divine tower's 99th floor.

As Yi Yun was feeling mixed emotions, he suddenly heard a child-like feminine voice coming from behind him, "Miss, Miss, wait for me!"

The voice sounded extremely familiar. After pausing for a while,

Yi Yun turned his head and saw Luo Huo'er, dressed in a red gown with tall leather boots. She was surveying her surroundings, as if she was apartment-hunting.

And behind her was maidservant Dong'er.

Poor Dong'er was born with two short legs, yet bags of all sizes were hung on her body. She gathered her breath every few steps, "Miss, slow down."

Dong'er climbed the stairs, puffing and blowing.

Usually, items like luggage could be placed in interspatial rings, but there were always things that weren't suitable to be placed within interspatial rings. For example, the potted plant that Dong'er was currently hugging. Living objects could not be placed in interspatial rings. Yi Yun even saw a cat hanging around Dong'er's neck. This cat looked like it was sleeping, comfortably shrinking in Dong'er's collar.

"This room is a little better than the place we were staying. Dong'er, put the things down." Luo Huo'er said in a satisfied manner.

Dong'er seemed to be released of her burden. Without a second thought, she placed all the items on her body down. The cat also jumped down reluctantly. Only then did Yi Yun realize that this was not a normal cat, but a spirit beast of sorts.

"Uh...You have moved up here as well?"

It was only then did Luo Huo'er see Yi Yun, who had walked into the middle of the room. She was somewhat surprised.

Luo Huo'er had previously been summoned by the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. She had received many benefits for no reason and she was given permission to stay on the central divine tower's 99th floor. Luo Huo'er was still feeling happy regarding this. However, she never expected that the moment she moved up here, she would see Yi Yun hanging around here.

Now, Luo Huo'er no longer hated Yi Yun, but she was absolutely not fond of him. Just seeing this fellow inevitably reminded Luo Huo'er of some unpleasant experiences, including her healing Yi Yun not too long ago. As Luo Huo'er had no choice but to hug him, she felt somewhat pissed.

"Right...It's such a coincidence..." Yi Yun said those words reluctantly. Thinking over it carefully, he felt that it was not strange that the City Lord arranged for Luo Huo'er to move up to the central divine tower's 99th floor.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was going to face a major catastrophe, and Luo Huo'er's status was special. The City Lord was not having any hopes that the faction behind Luo Huo'er would save the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, but it was definitely not wrong to establish good relations with Luo Huo'er.

Taking a step back, it was clear that having good relations with

her was meaningless. However, as long as Luo Huo'er stayed on the central divine tower's 99th floor, in the event that the beast horde invaded the city, Luo Huo'er's family clan would naturally not sit idle. They would definitely send someone to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's central divine tower.

At that moment, to Yi Yun, it could be life-saving.

When Yi Yun thought of this, he gradually understood that the City Lord was using Luo Huo'er's status as a shield.

"Why? You seem quite reluctant to be my neighbor?" Luo Huo'er's small mouth puckered.

Yi Yun hurriedly shook his head, "How could that be? I still need to thank you for healing me."

"That's more like it!" The corners of Luo Huo'er's mouth curled up slightly. She sat down on a chair casually and indulged in the comfort of the chair as she said, "This place is still acceptable, although, it's worse than the home I used to live in."

Hearing Luo Huo'er's words, Yi Yun rolled his eyes. Although Luo Huo'er liked to brag, Yi Yun did not doubt her when she said that this place was worse than her home. He never figured out what Luo Huo'er was doing in the Tai Ah Divine City.

If one considered that she was here to engage in a mission, ignoring the fact that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom wasn't some high

grade place, it was difficult to have something that could attract those super factions. And even if there really was such an object, it was illogical for them to send Luo Huo'er, a precious daughter who had not fully matured, to carry out the mission.

"I'll be staying here!" Luo Huo'er had finished appraising the room.

Yi Yun was rendered speechless. He initially meant to say that he had chosen this room, but he decided to let it pass, especially after seeing little Dong'er carrying items of all sorts of sizes. She was puffing and blowing as she placed items everywhere, so there was no such need.

There was no difference changing to another room.

Yi Yun bade farewell and chose the heaven-grade room next door. He needed to seize every opportunity to break through to the Yuan Foundation realm.

Besides not knowing when the calamity would befall, Yi Yun knew that with his strength, it was like an insignificant wave in a storm if the calamity was anything as terrifying as what the City Lord had foretold.

If he could increase his strength, even by just a tiny bit, it would allow him to have a bit more control over his destiny.

Yi Yun entered the room's cultivation area and closed the stone

door.

This cultivation area was one of the cores of the large Yuan Qi array in the Tai Ah Divine City. The Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was so dense in here that it nearly condensed into liquid droplets.

Yi Yun touched his interspatial ring and a red elixir appeared in his palm.

It was the Blood Yang Elixir.

With the Blood Yang Elixir in his hands, Yi Yun felt like he was holding a flame.

The Blood Yang Elixir was refined from a primordial herb. It contained stunning amounts of pure Yang herbal essence in it. Usually, normal Purple Blood realm cultivators could not absorb it.

Even Yuan Foundation realm warriors would not dare to directly consume the Blood Yang Elixir. They would usually immerse the Blood Yang Elixir in water, and drink the elixir water several times, like they were drinking tea.

However, by doing so, the elixir would begin to lose its essence the first time it was immersed in water. It would result in a tremendous waste.

Yi Yun did not need to consider all of that. He had the Purple Crystal and an incomplete pure Yang body. Hence, swallowing the

Blood Yang Elixir wholly was not a difficult task.

However to completely digest it, he needed several months.

These several months would be the several months Yi Yun needed to attempt to break through into the Yuan Foundation realm.

Yi Yun adjusted his breathing, allowing his heart and mind to calm down completely. He sat there silently for four hours, allowing his mind to be as still as water.

Following that, Yi Yun swallowed the Blood Yang Elixir.

The Blood Yang Elixir was a medicinal item with extreme Yang essence. It was like a flame in his hands, so when he swallowed it, it felt like swallowing a piece of iron. Yi Yun immediately felt a fire burn within his body.

This heat burned the insides of Yi Yun's body.

Yi Yun was prepared for it as he pressed his both hands on his dantian and endured the pain. With his spiritual energy interfaced with the Purple Crystal, he slowly began guiding all the Blood Yang Elixir's energy out of the Elixir.

A large portion of energy was stored in the Purple Crystal, while a small portion of the energy was infused into Yi Yun's meridians and blood vessels as it spread throughout his body.

All this energy that flowed in his meridians brought a burning sensation to every end of Yi Yun's body.

The energy fused into his bone marrow as Yi Yun felt his blood begin to boil.

His body was completely drenched in sweat as his skin turned as red as blood. He looked as if he was completely cooked.

Water vapor, strands of blood and sticky gray impurities started to discharge from his pores. Yi Yun felt like his body was a burning furnace as all the key points of his body spat fire out. It was an indescribable pain.

Back then, Yi Yun had experience absorbing the Golden Crow species's beast mark, and now although it was extremely painful absorbing the Blood Yang Elixir, it did not hurt his meridians that much.

Or else to cultivate while healing his wounds would be troublesome.

Seconds changed to minutes until the pain slowly reduced after two hours.

Yi Yun's body was completely covered in blood strands and sticky impurities. Having suffered pain for a long time, Yi Yun's face was pale and both his hands trembled.

However, Yi Yun did not mind any of this. He could feel that all of his Yuan Qi had been injected into his dantian. His dantian was accumulating more and more Yuan Qi as it gradually settled down.

This was the beginning stages of the Yuan Foundation!

This change made Yi Yun overjoyed. He could feel his power rising as his strength increased.

Yi Yun was currently in a state known as being in the half-step Yuan Foundation realm. He could be considered as a person who had one step through the Yuan Foundation realm's door. Half-step Yuan Foundation was not considered as an actual realm, and it was just a transitional zone. People at the peak of Purple Blood realm might never be able to break through to the Yuan Foundation realm all their lives, but for those who reached half-step Yuan Foundation, they would break through to the Yuan Foundation realm in a short period of time.

At that moment, there was still a lot of the Blood Yang Elixir's medicinal essence left. Yi Yun still felt his body burning and it felt as if he would be burnt to death if he did not vent it out.

Yi Yun decided to accomplish with one effort as he carried on absorbing the Blood Yang Elixir energy in the Purple Crystal as he compressed it into his dantian.

For the second time, the burning pain had significantly decreased. Yi Yun was ready as he went through it step by step. It

was a long, arduous and painful process.

Day after day passed by as the clothes on Yi Yun's body had been completely drenched thoroughly by his sweat, blood strands and impurities. It could no longer be worn, so he took off his clothes and cultivated completely naked.

With each energy cycle, the pain reduced in intensity while Yi Yun felt the energy in his Yuan Foundation grow stronger.

In the end, Yi Yun felt as if his dantian was about to explode.

This feeling made Yi Yun feel a bit flustered. The amount of energy his dantian could endure seemed to reach a critical value.

At that moment, if he carried on extracting the Blood Yang Elixir's energy from the Purple Crystal, he might encounter danger. The main reason was that the Blood Yang Elixir was after all an elixir that exceeded what Purple Blood realm warriors could withstand. The amount of energy Yi Yun used to break through to the Yuan Foundation realm far exceeded other warriors'.

After some consideration, Yi Yun felt that breaking through in one go was the best option, or else, by lacking that tiny bit, his breakthrough would not be perfect.

Gritting his teeth, Yi Yun extracted large amounts of Blood Yang Elixir energy from the Purple Crystal.

When this energy entered his dantian, Yi Yun felt his body become a volcano. Due to all the energy he had compressed in it, everything exploded.

A blast of heat flowed through Yi Yun's body. His meridians seemed to burst open.

Yi Yun's blood vessels seemed to bulge like worms. After trying his best, he managed to compress all the energy back into his dantian.

"Boom!"

His dantian quaked, causing him to feel a wave of heat flood into his mind. The flood caused his mind and body to separate, and with a quake in his mind, he passed out...

Chapter 348: Alerting Bell

After an unknown period of time, Yi Yun woke up in a groggy state. He opened his eyes and found that his body was covered in a sticky substance.

The Blood Yang Elixir's energy was too violent for a Purple Blood realm warrior. Back when the City Lord gave him the Blood Yang Elixir, he did it with the intention of letting Yi Yun use water to dissolve it and slowly drink it.

However, Yi Yun had swallowed it all in one mouthful.

"I actually fainted. Looks like that really exceeded the limits my dantian could take..." Yi Yun took a few deep breaths and slowly calmed his mind. He then checked his dantian and was stunned on probing it.

He was surprised to find that the Yuan Qi had condensed together in his dantian. It had completely solidified.

This was the mark of the Yuan Foundation realm!

He had finally broken through to the Yuan Foundation realm.

Yi Yun was delighted. It had been nearly two years since he began practicing martial arts.

Mortal Blood realm warriors were not considered martial artists.

The Purple Blood realm was the beginning steps of a martial artist. It was the transitional zone between mortal and warrior.

And now, with the Yuan Foundation realm, he was at the actual beginning. He had laid the foundation for his future martial path.

As he slowly clenched his fists, Yi Yun realized that his body was filled with energy.

This was the strength that came from having a deep cultivation level. With this, he would not be drained of all his strength, unable to fight after conjuring the Golden Crow species totem once.

Even after breaking through to the Yuan Foundation, Yi Yun found that there was still an intermittent burning sensation within his body. There were still remnants of the Blood Yang Elixir's energy surging through his veins and meridians. It could very well make a resurgence.

Yi Yun gave it some thought and decided to carry on cultivating by using this energy for his cultivation technique.

And now, Yi Yun had the complete set of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' jade scrolls.

This was the perfect opportunity for him to cultivate the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

Yi Yun took out the Divine Ebony box and from it, laid out the nine jade scrolls. These nine scrolls were the dreams of many elites in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Even amongst the members of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal family, only those who had extraordinary talent and the qualifications to become a Prince or even a Divine Emperor, had the right to cultivate with the complete set of the nine original jade scrolls.

Yi Yun took the first scroll up. This was the first volume of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

Actually, Yi Yun had already mastered the first level of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', but back then Yi Yun did not cultivate using the original version, instead he cultivated using a copy which was made by a Tai Ah Divine Kingdom Sage who had great accomplishments in the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

A copy would naturally have some tiny differences from the original. Usually, these tiny differences would not affect anything, but Yi Yun still wanted to look at the original version. He wanted to see these tiny differences in the original cultivation technique so that he could correct any unknown errors he might have. He could also look for greater inspiration from it.

After taking the jade scroll in hand, Yi Yun sank his sensed within it and what he saw shocked him.

Yi Yun had the Purple Crystal in his body, so he was very sensitive to the control of energy. He was surprised to find that, in

his energy vision, every word and stroke in the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' jade scroll contained a trace of energy.

It was as if, after all this time, the energy traces had greatly weakened. However, they still existed. In contrast, in the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' copy, there were no traces of energy.

"It looks like the person who created the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' was far beyond the Sage realm. Indeed, if it was a cultivation technique created by a Sage, how could it become the foundation pillar of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?"

Ever since the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was established, tens of millions of years ago, there had been countless numbers of Sages. Top Sages were not lacking in numbers. Besides, there were even peerless Sages such as the Tai Ah Divine City's founding City Lord, but he had never heard of any of them creating a cultivation technique that could match the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'.

The Sages of every Tai Ah Divine Kingdom generation would attempt to add some improvements to the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique'; however, these additions might not really be beneficial. At least, at a higher martial Dao realm, these additions might be meaningless.

Yi Yun read through the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique' and subconsciously became engrossed in it. He knew that the cultivation technique was only temporarily lent to him for studying. So if he did not take this opportunity to memorize more of it, he did not know when he would have the chance to read it again.

So even though he could not completely understand the contents of the last few volumes of the 'Tai Ah Sacred Technique', he still managed to store all of their contents in his mind.

Month after month, time silently passed. Yi Yun did not know for how long he had been in this chamber.

This day, he suddenly heard "Dang! Dang! Dang!", the sound of metallic percussions. They were resounding like thunder across the Tai Ah Divine City.

Yi Yun's chamber was soundproof and would be nearly completely isolated with the chamber door closed.

Under normal circumstances, there would be absolute silence inside the chamber. However, there was one sound in the Tai Ah Divine City that could transmit directly into the chamber.

That was the sound of the Divine Wilderness Bell!

This Divine Wilderness Bell was a magical treasure. It could only be rung by a person with a peak-Human Lord cultivation level. Its sound could be delivered thousands of kilometers away and even sound isolating arrays could not ward it off.

"The Divine Wilderness Bell has rung!?"

Yi Yun was alarmed. The main purpose of the Divine Wilderness Bell in the Tai Ah Divine City was to warn. It was only rung when an enemy was invading, meaning that the safety of the Tai Ah Divine City was being threatened.

And the things that could threaten the Tai Ah Divine City was few and far between. A typical small-sized beast horde would not even be able to come within 100,000 feet of the Tai Ah Divine City, so there was no need to ring the Divine Wilderness Bell.

In fact, it was said that the Divine Wilderness Bell had not been rung in the past millennium.

Could it be...?

A dark cloud shrouded Yi Yun's heart. He rushed out of his own residence and immediately met Luo Huo'er who also came running out of her residence.

"Miss, what has happened?" Dong'er was plugging her tiny ears as she nervously asked.

Outside of the residences, the chimes of the Divine Wilderness Bell were even more ear-shattering. If one's cultivation level was lacking, it would cause one's organs to resonate with the bell chimes, making it quite unpleasant.

"This should be the Divine Wilderness Bell..." Luo Huo'er, in contrast, was not worried. She found it novel to hear the bell for

the first time.

"Yi Yun! Come to the city gates!"

At that moment, a solemn voice rang in Yi Yun's ear. This voice belonged to the City Lord!

Yi Yun glanced at Luo Huo'er, from her expression he could tell that she had received a similar message.

"Let's go!"

Yi Yun pushed open the central divine tower's outer door and followed the tower's sloping emergency passage staircase, running down the tower.

...

When Yi Yun came out of the central divine tower, he realized that in the past months of his reclusive training, the Tai Ah Divine City had changed and was no longer the same.

The Divine City's four walls were shimmering with several defense arrays. Piles of bone relics were stored in large metal boxes, as the source of energy for the arrays.

These were the strategic reserves of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. They were all taken out in times of need.

There were several catapults installed all along the city's four corners. Amongst these catapults was the legendary Primal Divine Crossbow.

The Primal Divine Crossbow was driven by a huge array. More than ten Human Lords had to combine their forces in order to control one Primal Divine Crossbow. The crossbow used the Primal Arrows that Yi Yun had seen the first time he entered the Tai Ah Divine City.

They were four meters long and every arrow was made out of a special metal. The cost of their construction was high and they weighed 500,000 kilograms.

Back then, Yi Yun and the other recruits had all failed to pierce into the purple tungsten wall using the Primal Arrows. Even Yi Yun failed the first time he tried. Although he could lift the Primal Arrow, he was still not able to steadily pierce it. Releasing his hand made the arrow fall to the ground.

Because of these experiences, this terrifying weapon was still fresh in Yi Yun's mind.

This was a weapon that could even threaten primordial strains. With so many Human Lords and sages in the city, and with the support from other factions, the Tai Ah Divine City's combat strength was rather terrifying.

Yi Yun walked straight ahead and found that there were a lot

more warriors in the Tai Ah Divine City compared to before. The cultivation levels of these warriors were mostly at Human Lord. They came from all sorts of factions and were the backbones of several large factions.

These Human Lords were all dressed in armor, with their weapons in hand.

All of them looked solemn. No one could rest easy when pit against the legendary Shepherd Boy who had nearly annihilated the Shentu family clan.

Yi Yun could feel a thick war-like atmosphere coming from those people.

This time, it was no longer a battle on a stage, but a real life and death battle.

Winning allowed you to stay alive while losing most likely meant complete annihilation!

When Yi Yun reached the city gates, a lot of people had already gathered there. They were Sages of factions from all over. They were all standing above the city gate.

Yi Yun saw Cang Yan, Jian Ge and his quasi-master Grandmaster Yuehua.

They slightly nodded at Yi Yun and did not say a word. They

were all focusing on something far into the distance.

Yi Yun even saw the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, who was now standing with the Seven Star Pagoda Owner. They were discussing something.

Yi Yun did not bother the City Lord and instead walked over to Cang Yan who looked relatively free, "Is it the Shepherd Boy?"

Cang Yan did not look back as he carried on looking at the distant horizon.

This old man that was usually laughing now had a serious face. He nodded, "It should be. We have outposts deployed in a radius of 1500 kilometers from the Divine City. Just now, a scout from one of the outposts transmitted the news of a large-scale beast horde emerging. Later on, nothing came from him. It's most likely that he has already given his life for his country..."

Cang Yan's tone sounded bleak when he said that.

Died for his country?

Yi Yun's heart sank. Everyone knew that being a scout was extremely dangerous. The first person to die was the scout when a beast horde happened. However, a person had to go. This was war. There was no choice in the matter.

Cang Yan said, "Now, the City Lord has ordered all scouts from

the outposts to retreat to the Tai Ah Divine City. With the beast horde's speed, they would probably appear within two hours..."

Two hours...?

Yi Yun looked at the sky. Everyone in the Tai Ah Divine City had been activated. Clearly, while he was in reclusive training, these warriors protecting the divine city had experienced numerous exercises.

Now, although everyone was somewhat worried, no one panicked.

Catapults after catapults were raised. The large arrays on the city walls were activated. The airspace above the Tai Ah Divine City was enveloped by a colorful, lit up haze.

Those were the light beams of the array.

Chapter 349: Giant Turtle

Above the city walls, Yi Yun saw Bai and Feng Lin. The two of them nodded slightly at Yi Yun without a word. Yi Yun also saw many people that were the enemy during the alliance tournament. At that moment, they were all standing shoulder to shoulder in arms.

To these factions, situating the battlefield to the Tai Ah Divine City was better than spreading the flames of war to their own land.

The air seemed to freeze as the atmosphere become graver than ever before!

A huge hourglass was placed above the city walls as a way of keeping time.

There was a distance of 1500 kilometers from the outpost where the scout was located to the Tai Ah Divine City. It was a human estimation that it would take the beast horde two hours to arrive, it was not necessarily exact. However, it was not too far off. With an hourglass keeping track of time, it allowed people to mentally prepare.

Yi Yun stood on the city walls as he watched the sand quietly flow. He felt that what was seeping downwards was not sand but fresh lives.

Once the beast horde came, it was unknown how many lives would disappear like the sand...

Shepherd Boy, what sort of person are you? Why did you conjure the beast horde that could wipe out life?

...

After an unknown period of time, the sky started to darken. It was as if a dark cloud obscured the Sun.

Yi Yun's gazed far into the distance and suddenly noticed a gray blur in the far horizon. It was like a layer of haze.

"Sandstorm!"

Someone suddenly said. The gray haze was sand that was being lifted into the air in the far horizon. There were endless amounts of sand, and concealed by the sandstorm were tiny, blurry figures. They were moving on the ground, but they were not sand... It was the beast horde!

From a lofty height, looking several hundred kilometers out, even large desolate beasts, the size of buildings, would look like specks of dust.

"Beast horde! The beast horde is here!"

People could feel the ground shaking. The beast horde's gallop transmitted the tremors from several hundreds of kilometers away

straight to the Tai Ah Divine City!

It was really like an earthquake, formed from the running of countless numbers of desolate beasts.

At that moment, people saw a large blurry figure looming in the sky. It became even clearer amongst the kicked up sandstorm.

"What is that!?" Someone said in horror. The figure was so large that it made people chatter with fear.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The terrifying sounds transmitted all over and clear tremors accompanied them to the Tai Ah Divine City. It was like huge meteors were crashing to the ground.

The phantom image slowly walked out of the sandstorm. People could finally see it clearly. It turned out to be a huge turtle.

Its head was in the shape of a dragon, while its body was covered by its turtle shell. The rumbling noises were from its footsteps!

Every step it made caused the Tai Ah Divine City feel a tremor!

"Heavens!"

The people on the city walls were appalled. With hundreds of kilometers of distance separating them, with them at an altitude of 100,000 feet, this angle made four-five storey high behemoths look like tiny specks of dust. However, this huge turtle nearly filled the entire horizon with its humongous body.

Every track in the divine turtle's shell was as big as a city. Its limbs were as thick as a mountain. With each step it took, the ground and mountains would shake, causing the Heaven and Earth to tremor!

There was such an existence in this world? What was it? A desolate beast?

Even the Sages present were shocked. They had previously killed primordial strains in the Divine Wilderness, but compared to this divine turtle, the primordial strains they had killed were like nothing!

Yi Yun, who was above the city walls, was equally shocked. There were too many unknown existences in this world. It far exceeded the limits of his imagination.

For example, the divine turtle before his eyes and the bronze giant he saw in the Pure Yang Sword Palace that could split a world apart using a halberd.

Against such existences, the current him was still too tiny.

"This giant turtle comes from the deep parts of the Divine Wilderness?" A human Sage asked in alarm. He never knew that there was such an existence in the Divine Wilderness. Even historical books had no such records. Only a few books, with all sorts of bizarre information, recorded such a giant turtle, but those books were usually categorized as myths and legends.

"I do not know...The Divine Wilderness is too big. We do not know what is within it. Primordial strains are not the peak existence of the Divine Wilderness... but, is it pointless to discuss this any further. Look at the giant turtle's head."

A Sage said and everyone looked towards the divine turtle's head.

The eyesight of warriors was extremely good. Furthermore, using all sorts of mystic techniques, people could see that on top of the mountain-like turtle's head, there was clearly a person sitting there!

He was dressed in a green shirt, wore a hairband on his head and held a piccolo in his hand. A composed smile was hanging on his face.

From his expression, it looked as if he was not standing on the head of a giant turtle whose body was situated within a beast horde that could annihilate a country. Instead, he looked as if he was having a lavish field trip.

"Shepherd Boy!"

Someone said with a trembling voice. This name was now a nightmare for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the other three large factions.

"It really is him!"

People were terrified. Previously, it was said that the appearance of the Shepherd Boy would set off a blood storm, but no one had any concept of how strong the Shepherd Boy was.

Until... they now saw the Shepherd Boy themselves!

The Shepherd Boy clearly did not emit an ounce of Yuan Qi energy, nor did he release any pressure. He looked no different from an ordinary teenager, but just by facing him, people inexplicably felt immense pressure!

And the giant turtle he was sitting on stalled one's breaths. A feeling of not being able to use force against the Shepherd Boy and the beast horde grew in the people's minds.

Could they really withstand this beast horde?

Would they... die here?

These thoughts flashed past through the minds of many people. Lately, the words "beast horde" had been thrown around a lot. When people thought about it, they only thought of a beast horde that was larger in scale, by a few times, compared to the usual

beast hordes. That there might be plenty of primordial strains which would make the battle extremely bloody.

However, they never expected that the beast horde conjured by the Shepherd Boy would be this terrifying. Just the giant turtle alone far exceeded the scope of primordial strains.

"City Lord!"

Some of the Tai Ah Divine City Sages gathered around the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord. All of them looked solemn. Beads of sweat were even oozing out of their foreheads.

The Yun Long Divine Kingdom Sages similarly gathered around the Seven Star Pagoda Owner. Against such an enemy, they were at a loss.

How would they be able to withstand this!?

"Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!"

The divine turtle's footsteps were slow, but every step it took crossed a distance of dozens of kilometers. It just needed to take tens of steps before it would have traversed the distance from the horizon to the Tai Ah Divine City.

Every footprint it left behind in the Divine Wilderness would form a large lake when it rained in the future.

With the divine turtle approaching, the tremors the Tai Ah Divine City felt became more and more obvious. At that moment, the melodious tune of a piccolo could be heard across the vast Divine Wilderness. Several hundred kilometers were not enough to hinder the piccolo's tune.

The piccolo's tune slowly emerged, flowing like water in the air as it resounded inside everyone's ears.

People held their breaths. The piccolo's tune could be heard everywhere. Even the loud trampling of the beast horde could not drown it!

"He is the Shepherd Boy... We... we were too... too naive..."

On the Yun Long Divine Kingdom side, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner bitterly smiled. An unknown feeling arose in his heart.

At that moment, the divine turtle was just tens of kilometers away from the Tai Ah Divine City. The giant turtle, with its head lifted, exceeded the Tai Ah Divine City in altitude. When people saw the large head, they felt as if there was a black mountain standing in front of the Tai Ah Divine City. And the Shepherd Boy, who was standing on this mountain's peak, was lightly blowing on his piccolo. His green clothes were fluttering in the wind, as he looked like a god.

Currently, the Shepherd Boy was like his present position. High up, above all, looking down on everything!

The Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord looked up at the Shepherd Boy as he held a saber in hand. He gently sighed, "Cang Yan, activate the backup plan..."

The City Lord's voice entered Cang Yan's ears, making Cang Yan quiver, "City Lord..."

"There is no need to say anything. There is no time."

As the City Lord said this, his body flew straight out. He flew out alone towards the Shepherd Boy!

"City Lord!"

People were greatly alarmed. Cang Yan nearly jumped out of his skin!

What was the City Lord doing? He was the backbone of the people. If the City Lord were to be lost at that moment, the consequences would be disastrous!

However, no one could stop him at that moment. The City Lord was like a wisp of smoke as he appeared before the Shepherd Boy. He was just a thousand feet away from him now.

The Shepherd Boy looked at the middle-aged scholar and a smile formed on his lips.

Chapter 350: I Cannot Dodge What Is Mine

The fierce winds howled as the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord looked at the Shepherd Boy from a distance while floating above the vast wilderness.

The City Lord was situated beside the nostrils of the divine turtle. He felt as if the nostrils were two large volcano openings, spewing out hot air.

The middle-aged scholar sighed. He had spent 90% of his life in the Divine Wilderness, yet he did not even know of the existence of such a terrifying behemoth being in the Divine Wilderness. It was quite tragic.

"Human, you seem to have something to say to me?" The Shepherd Boy stood up from the divine turtle's head, with the piccolo in hand, smiling at the middle-aged scholar. "You are pretty good. Even under the pressure of the Long Gui* True Spirit, you are still able to remain unruffled. For your cultivation level, it is extremely rare!"

At that moment, the middle-aged scholar held his saber as his clothes started fluttering violently in the turbulent winds.

"Long Gui True Spirit..." The middle-aged scholar gently shook his head, "I see. When I traversed the Divine Wilderness, I did hear of people mentioning primordial spirits."

"Primordial strains have a trace of the bloodline of an ancient

divine beast, but it is extremely dilute, as such it is only known as a species. As for primordial spirits, the bloodlines they have inherited is much thicker than those of the primordial strain. They can even manifest the shapes of the ancient sacred or divine beasts, hence they are called True Spirits."

"Long Gui True Spirit should be a descendant of Long Gui..."

The legendary Long Gui was a divine beast. It had a dragon's head and a turtle's body, and it was one of the nine sons of the True Dragon.

The body of a Long Gui was huge, and its strength was limitless. It could even carry a star!

"Not bad, although you are born in this remote land, your knowledge is not lacking." The Shepherd Boy was smiling even now.

"You... are not human?" The middle-aged scholar asked as he looked at the Shepherd Boy. He had always suspected so.

The Shepherd Boy gently shook his head. "No, I was born from the Desolate race. My appearance may look no different from a human, but the difference is our sole ability to communicate with desolate beasts."

Desolate race! Able to communicate with desolate beasts!

Many of the warriors above the city walls had never heard of such a race.

However, the middle-aged scholar knew. This world was not limited only to the human race. There were other races as well. And amongst those races, there were some whose numbers exceeded that of humans!

"The Desolate race... I see. May I ask you why you are annihilating my Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?"

"Because I have something to do..." The Shepherd Boy gently shook his head, "I do not truly want to destroy Tai Ah, but unfortunately, the few countries around the Divine Wilderness are hindering me from doing what I want to do. As such, I can only annihilate."

When the Shepherd Boy said words that played down on the matter, the hearts of the people on the Divine City's walls jumped. You want to destroy a few countries just to do something!?

One had to know that there were trillions of lives in the countries surrounding the Divine Wilderness! He wanted to kill all of them with just a few simple words!?

"You want to destroy trillions of lives just to do one thing?" The middle-aged scholar's voice sank as he tightly clenched his saber.

"So what?" The Shepherd Boy stroked his piccolo. "All sorts of

natural living things support the survival of humans, yet humans have never reciprocated that to the Heavens. Humans have accepted the gifts from nature, but what they consider is forever their own interests."

"You have extracted from nature without constraint, and with your trillions of people, you have extracted even more. To survive, are you not killing living beings every second and every moment? And the numbers you kill are far greater in number than the number of humans.

"The world is heartless, it treats everything as lowly beings. In front of a stronger power, humans are no different from pigs and dogs. You can kill other living beings because you are strong. If other living beings kill you, it is because they are stronger. You can say that this is part and parcel of the Heavenly Dao, survival of the fitness."

"Not only you, even large worlds can collapse... formation, existence and then destruction, it is all a part of the Heavenly Dao."

When the Shepherd Boy said all this so frankly, the middle-aged scholar felt a chill. Although he did not wish to admit it, he had to agree that what the Shepherd Boy said was reasonable.

With a higher Heavenly Dao in front of them, so what if it were to destroy a trillion lives? When two stars collide, it too would kill trillions of lives!

However, who would say that the stars were cruel?

"If that is the case, then there is nothing for us to negotiate on." The middle-aged scholar let out a long sigh.

"What should be destroyed will eventually be destroyed." The Shepherd Boy faintly said, "If you and your kind will leave this place, you may still survive. I appreciate you and you should not be fated to die here."

"It is impossible for me to leave... I cannot dodge what is mine." The middle-aged scholar unsheathed his saber. The cold beam of the four-foot long saber seemed to freeze even the sunlight.

On the Divine City's walls, the Seven Star Pagoda Owner also let out a long sigh as he took out a spear from his interspatial ring.

Everyone could feel the difficulty of the upcoming battle. This was a battle to the death. It was fated that many of them would die here!

"Yi Yun, I'm taking you away!"

At the moment when swords were drawn and bows were strung, Cang Yan's Yuan Qi transmission entered Yi Yun's ears.

"What?" Yi Yun was shocked. And at that moment, Cang Yan's hand had already grabbed Yi Yun's shoulder. It was not only Yi Yun. Yao Dao, Yang Qian, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom's Bai, Feng Lin, Qianshui and company all had law-enforcers and Elders

prepared to lead them away.

"We... are not fighting?"

Fatty Qianshui trembled as he spoke. His voice clearly shook. He was after all young, how could he have ever experienced a scene such as this?

Against the Shepherd Boy and the humongous Long Gui, it would be a lie if Fatty said that he was not afraid. This level of existence could easily turn him into ash with the mere flick of its hand!

Fatty was now in a dilemma.

On one hand, he did not wish to stay in the Tai Ah Divine City. If he could run away with his foot lubricated, that would be the best.

However, he just found it too shameful to run away in the face of danger. After all, there were still plenty of people left defending the city!

"You are just sending yourselves to your graves by participating in the battle. It is completely meaningless. The City Lord had previously instructed me to send all of you out of here in the event that the Tai Ah Divine City cannot be secured!"

No matter which faction it was, their younger generations were their future. They could not be sacrificed for nothing.

If their countries were to collapse, then their countries might still have a chance to reconstruct in the future when the younger generation grew up.

Yi Yun, Bai and Feng Lin were silent. Everyone was always in a balance between id and super-ego. They did not wish to escape in the face of danger, but they knew that it was meaningless to stay behind and die.

Only Fatty Qianshui seemed to be fearless. He gritted his teeth, "We are warriors! How can we leave our seniors here to fight while we leave!?"

Cang Yan rolled his eyes unhappily at Fatty Qianshui's righteousness and awe-inspiring speech. He was wise at his age, so how could he not have noticed that Fatty's face had turned white with fear previously?

"Then you can stay behind while the others leave."

Cang Yan could not be bothered to speak nonsense with the cowardly Fatty. At that moment, time was of the essence; if not, these elites would never be able to leave.

Fatty Qianshui immediately shut up. His mouth gaped but he could not utter a single word.

Yi Yun's expression turned solemn. At that moment, he was in no

mood to ridicule Qianshui. He said worriedly, "Senior Cang Yan, letting us escape, are all of you already prepared to..."

"Pui! Pui! Pui!" Cang Yan interrupted Yi Yun's speech midway. "What a foul mouth! If one can live, who the f**k would want to die?"

"In all of these years, the Tai Ah Divine City has accumulated large numbers of relics and strategic reserves. With the sword and saber tombs' large array, it can still defend for a while. We Sages and Human Lords cannot retreat. The Tai Ah Divine City is a stronghold that holds off the beast horde. If this city falls, then the beast horde will enter the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Then there will be nothing to stop the horde as it goes straight ahead."

"Although I too want to run, I have already lived a long life. So, I still want my face. The Divine Kingdom has allowed me to reach the Sage realm, so repaying them with my remaining few years of lifespan is not a loss on my part! However, all of you are different. Your survival is of the greatest value to the Divine Kingdom!"

When Cang Yan said this, he suddenly let out a hearty laugh, "****. What is yours will always be yours, what is not yours will never be yours no matter how hard you fight for it. Besides, I might not even die!"

As Cang Yan spoke, he found that the words he said sounded like a will. He slapped his mouth, "F**k, why are my words becoming more and more ridiculous. By following the City Lord's plan, we might even survive! Now, all of you, quickly leave!"

As Cang Yan said this, he and another Yun Long Divine Kingdom Elder began preparing to send the young cultivators away.

Now was really not the time to be hypocritical. Although the divine city had a large protective array, who knew if this large array could withstand the attack from the Long Gui True Spirit?

Staying behind could even cause the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord and the Seven Star Pagoda Owner to be distracted. If they had to take the time to protect them, then it would not be worth it!

"A short distance teleportation array has been prepared on the first floor of the central divine tower. After you are sent away, there will be an airship waiting for you there!"

Other than Yi Yun, Bai and the other elites, even the other Tai Ah Divine City cultivators were arranged to evacuate. More than 95% of the people like Wen Yu and other first year cultivators had already been evacuated a month ago.

Originally, Yi Yun, Bai and the other elites were left behind in the hope of them being able to behold the scene of a beast horde to gain some experience.

However, the developments had far exceeded the original expectations of the Sages from the four large factions. Training in the beast horde was now something deemed impossible.

The teleportation array was right in front of them as the cultivators that were left behind began walking towards it. Luo Huo'er sneaked into the crowd with her maidservant Dong'er, hoping to sneak through the teleportation array with her head lowered.

And at the moment she walked before the teleportation array, she suddenly heard a dry cough.

"Miss Luo, please hold on."

Eh?

Luo Huo'er jumped with fright as she turned around only to see Cang Yan smiling at her.

"Wh... What?"

Luo Huo'er felt that this old man's smile was sinister.

"Sorry, the City Lord has especially instructed that Miss Luo is not to leave."

"Why?" Luo Huo'er was rendered speechless. Everyone could leave except her?

Cang Yan was also helpless. If not as a last resort, would a group of Sages make it so difficult for a young lady?

"Miss Luo, I am also forced to do this. About this... Miss Luo, you should have a way to request help from your family clan, right...?"

Translator's Note: Long Gui is literally Dragon Turtle. Players of the Final Fantasy XIII trilogy might know it.

Chapter 351: Leaving

Cang Yan was certain that Luo Huo'er came from an impressive background. And Luo Huo'er seemed to be someone of importance in her family clan.

Under these circumstances, it was unlikely that Luo Huo'er's family clan would leave her completely unprotected by letting her go to the Tai Ah Divine City alone.

It was likely that Luo Huo'er had some method that could save her life. If this life-saving method could not rival the Shepherd Boy, then under normal circumstances, Luo Huo'er would have secretly informed her family clan several months ago to request for protection.

Now, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was like a drowning person. Any hanging blade of grass that could save it would be grabbed on.

Although the chances of relying on Luo Huo'er to save the Tai Ah Divine City were extremely minute, it was better than having no hope.

It was extremely difficult for a Tai Ah Divine City Sage, such as Jian Ge, to raise this issue with a young lady like Luo Huo'er as they could not bear ripping off their face to do so. Hence, this task fell gloriously onto Cang Yan, who had the thickest skin.

"Family clan? What family clan?" Luo Huo'er's eyes rolled her eyes, as if she was clueless about it.

Yi Yun also stopped his steps. He looked behind him at Luo Huo'er and Cang Yan. Cang Yan clearly had expected Luo Huo'er to feign ignorance. He coughed drily and rubbed his hands, saying, "Miss Luo, don't joke around with this old man in such a time of need. We are gambling the numerous lives of the Tai Ah Divine City's residents on this. If we had any other options, this old man would not have put up this old face to mention this to you..."

"Lives are precious. All of us old fellows do not have many years left to live, so it's fine if we lose our lives. However, behind us, there are trillions of citizens. Amongst them are newly-wed couples, newborn children..."

"I don't think you want to see these citizens die in the beast horde. When that happens, how great a human tragedy would that be..." Cang Yan said earnestly.

Yi Yun, who was eavesdropping, could not help but admit that Cang Yan was very good at speaking. If Luo Huo'er were to turn away and leave now, she would be a heartless person.

Besides... the Tai Ah Divine City's teleportation array needed the control of two law-enforcers to activate it. If Luo Huo'er did not make any affirmation, Cang Yan would probably not let her leave.

If Luo Huo'er was forcefully left in the Tai Ah Divine City, then her family clan would probably not turn a blind eye.

Luo Huo'er clearly also understood this. She bit her lips and said,

"Senior Cang Yan, it isn't because I don't want to help you all... but... I can't be of help. Your guesses are right, I do come from a very large faction. However, if you think that there is some expert protecting me nearby, then you are wrong..."

"Why do you think that with my large faction background, I would come to a place like the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?" Luo Huo'er answered with a question. Yi Yun was shocked as he too was curious over this point.

"Actually... I'm here as a refugee. My family clan is in the midst of a war with it being in a precarious position. As a result, for the past few years, the children of my family clan have been sent to the family clan's branches all around the world to prevent the annihilation of the family clan, and ending our bloodline."

"As for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, it happens to have a branch of our family, that's why... I was sent here. If my family clan was at its peak, I might have had experts protecting me when I went out training. However, now... How could there be any one available? As for the secret family clan branch in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, they are likely helpless against such a beast horde even if they were willing to reveal themselves..."

When Cang Yan heard all that Luo Huo'er had to say, he was completely stunned.

After more than 30 seconds, Cang Yan let out a long sigh, it looked like he had grown older.

"Is that so...? If that is the case, then the Heavens really wants my Tai Ah destroyed..." Cang Yan shook his head. Although he did not hold much hope with Luo Huo'er, Cang Yan still felt his heart sink when he truly realized that Luo Huo'er could not help at all.

If the Tai Ah Divine City was lost, Cang Yan did not dare to think what would happen to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. Would the majestic Royal Capital and the bustling state cities be void of all life, eventually becoming a part of the Divine Wilderness?

Cang Yan's heart sank even more when he thought of this.

"Leave." Cang Yan waved his hand, as he stopped making it difficult for Luo Huo'er to leave.

Luo Huo'er bit her lips and strangely felt sorry. Although this matter had nothing to do with her, she still felt responsible for it.

After some thought, Luo Huo'er seemed to make up her mind. She took a jade scroll out from her interspatial ring and placed it into Cang Yan's hands.

"Senior Cang Yan, this was given to me by my father. It is an embodiment used to protect my life in times of danger, you might be able to make use of it. I'm leaving and now with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in danger, my family clan's branch would most likely take me away..."

Luo Huo'er's family clan was originally a passing guest in the Tai

Ah Divine Kingdom. It was a migratory bird that landed on a tree.

Now with the tree toppling, it was impossible for the migratory bird to support the tree, it would now just fly away.

As the teleportation array flashed, Yi Yun's heart felt heavy as he was leaving.

He did not know what would happen to the Tai Ah Divine City. Cang Yan, Jian Ge and the City Lord, what did their fates entail with them staying behind?

As for Yi Yun himself, although he was returning to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, where would it be safe when the Tai Ah Divine City falls?

Yi Yun knew clearly that his present strength was like a tiny bubble in a large tidal wave that was the super beast horde which was sweeping through several countries. He was not only helpless, but he could be destroyed anytime.

It seemed like... he was out of options...

Yi Yun and Luo Huo'er walked through the teleportation array together. There was already an airship docked at the other end. Many of the young elites had long boarded the airship, waiting to retreat back into the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Yi Yun saw Yang Qian, Yao Dao and company.

No one spoke a word. The atmosphere was very solemn.

In a corner, Luo Huo'er sat in a daze. She seemed to be lost in thought.

Yi Yun sighed lightly as he sat beside Luo Huo'er.

The airship was started up and as it flew, it trembled in the turbulent air. Luo Huo'er's body was swaying with every tremble of the airship.

"Yi Yun... why do you think... war exists?" During the flight, Luo Huo'er suddenly asked faintly. She was looking out the window at the Divine Wilderness with a dazed expression.

If it was not for war, she would not have left her family clan. And if it was not for war, lives would not be lost.

Yi Yun stayed silent for a while before saying, "The fighting between humans is the same as animals hunting each other for food. It will always be this tragic. Maybe real peace will never exist. This is because for Life to exist in this world, it has to continually hunt for food. Only through non-stop killing can Life carry on. Those are the Heavenly laws."

"Either we become the hunter or we will become the prey. There is no way to escape this cycle. Even in death, our corpses might become food or nutrients, continuing on this cycle... This is

probably the hallmark of Life..." Yi Yun sighed, but when Luo Huo'er heard this, she was slightly shocked. She had just said it in passing, as if she was speaking to herself, but she had never expected Yi Yun to give her such an answer.

She never expected that a fourteen-year-old youth like Yi Yun could say such things.

"It wasn't serious." Yi Yun shrugged as he carried on, "Instead, we should now think about how we are going to carry on living."

"Carry on living?" Luo Huo'er pursed her lips, "I should... be leaving... Actually... I can put in a word with my family clan, to bring you along..."

Luo Huo'er did not have any friends in the Tai Ah Divine City, other than the dim-witted Dong'er.

Yi Yun was originally a person that Luo Huo'er found very irritating, but now with life and death on the line, Luo Huo'er no longer found him irritating.

"Leave?" Yi Yun was shocked. At that moment, he felt somewhat tempted.

If he could leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom with Luo Huo'er, then he would naturally be safe.

However... once he left the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, he would not

know when he would ever return.

Just thinking of Cang Yan and the words that the City Lord had said to him, Yi Yun felt that it was impossible for him to do such a thing no matter what.

He was able to accomplish everything he had done because of the resources the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom provided.

He had already accepted the fact that he had no other choice but to retreat back into the Divine Kingdom. However, if he escaped by himself, while people risked their lives by staying behind, then he would be an ungrateful brat.

Furthermore, Yi Yun still had his elder sister, Jiang Xiaorou, still in the Divine Capital City. There was also Zhou Xiaoke, Aunt Wang and all those people he had close relations with. It was impossible for Yi Yun to abandon them, leaving them to die in the beast horde.

Returning to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom meant that there was a chance to reverse the tide. After all, with so many people working hard at it, how could he choose to escape?

"No, I'll be staying behind." Yi Yun eventually rejected the tempting offer. Luo Huo'er pursed her lips and did not say anything else.

She knew that the people in her family clan branch were

definitely aware that the beast horde conjured by the Shepherd Boy was much more horrifying than they had previously estimated.

Under these circumstances, her family clan branch would most likely to send someone to get her.

The airship traversed through Divine Wilderness with the atmosphere in it of complete silence. It flew towards the territories of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

While it flew, it continuously went through many large scale teleportation arrays. One bustling city after another was left behind by the airship.

Yi Yun knew that once the beast horde came, these cities would all turn to ruins.

And the residents of these cities had basically no hope of retreating. Sending away tens of millions of citizens through the city teleportation arrays needed energy that they could not afford.

"Where are we going?" A person could not help but ask when a law-enforcer walked past.

"The Divine Capital City!" The law-enforcer answered.

"Divine Capital? Why are we going to the Divine Capital?" People had originally assumed that they would head to the Imperial City.

The Imperial City was the city that had the greatest defense in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, other than the Tai Ah Divine City.

The law-enforcer said, "The Divine Capital is the largest city closest to the Cloud Wilderness. If the Tai Ah Divine City falls, the Imperial City will naturally fall too. At that moment, we can only send all of you into the Cloud Wilderness, to hide in some barren lands. Compared to the Divine Wilderness, the Cloud Wilderness is much safer."

Escape into the Cloud Wilderness?

Yi Yun was shocked. This was probably the last resort.

However, with beast hordes erupting everywhere, and the Cloud Wilderness being one of the gathering spots of desolate beasts, was it really much safer?

Regardless of this, he could at least see his elder sister, Jiang Xiaorou, once again if he were to return to the Divine Capital.

His fiefdom was after all located in the Divine Capital City.

To be able to meet Jiang Xiaorou once again in this time of chaos was a blessing.

Chapter 352: Divine Capital

The Divine Capital City was the largest city in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Jing state.

It was situated close to the Cloud Wilderness. Back when Yi Yun first came out of the Cloud Wilderness, his first stop was the Divine Capital.

When the airship floated above the Divine Capital's airspace, Yi Yun stood by a window, looking down at the bustling city.

When he left the Cloud Wilderness he never expected that he would go to the Tai Ah Divine City, using the Divine Capital as a stopover. Now, one and a half year later, he was returning to the Divine Capital to use it as a stopover to return to the Cloud Wilderness.

This really was returning back to the starting point.

The only difference now was that Yi Yun's strength was completely incomparable to last time.

However, it was a pity that Yi Yun was powerless against the vast beast horde that could destroy several Divine Kingdoms.

The airship landed on a platform in the Divine Capital City. Such a large airship was not often seen even in the bustling Divine Capital. People stopped to look as they found the sight of the huge

airship fascinating.

The Divine Capital looked like it was still thriving. It was early in the morning, so Yi Yun could see the morning bird merchants shuttling through the streets. He saw store owners preparing to begin their businesses. He saw bearded, old men sitting under a tree to avoid the sun.

More and more citizens of the Divine Capital walked onto the streets. Some were walking leisurely while others were in a hurry. They all began their day's life.

They still had not heard the news of the impending beast horde.

Not to mention the Divine Capital, even the Imperial City had not been informed of this.

Those that knew that there was a beast horde outbreak which the divine city was incapable of resisting were limited to the royal family, the imperial capital's family clans and several reclusive family clans.

This information could not be made public, or there would be utter chaos.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had a trillion citizens, so it was impossible to evacuate them all. In desperation, they might even attack the army, mobbing the administrative offices and the teleportation arrays between the larger cities.

If that were to happen, not to mention that the citizens would not be able to escape, this would also cause the Divine Kingdom to become paralyzed.

Currently, the only thing the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom could do was to defend against the beast horde at all costs. If they could not defend against it, they could only send the Divine Kingdom's future hope, the Divine City's elites, into the Cloud Wilderness.

As for the Divine Kingdom's citizens, they could only be left behind.

"Yi Yun, I am leaving..."

Luo Huo'er said to Yi Yun after the airship landed. She had received news from her family clan's branch. She was to leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"Take care." Yi Yun nodded.

"Let us meet if we are fated." Luo Huo'er looked at Yi Yun while contemplating if she should say something. In the end, she only said those words. Beside her was her maidservant Dong'er. Dong'er stared at Yi Yun with her pair of dark eyes.

"Elder brother Yi Yun, you must survive."

Little Dong'er said.

"Yes, I will." Yi Yun revealed a smile.

The present situation was really quite depressing for him.

With old friends departing, the country being on the brink of disaster, and the fates of his masters and seniors unknown...

...

After Luo Huo'er left, Yi Yun wandered the Divine Capital's streets alone. He stepped on the thick granite-paved streets. The morning dew was still on the granite. Between the slabs' crevices, there was green moss that made it look like lush greenery.

These granite slabs had witnessed all sorts of people. They had witnessed prosperity and hardship, joys and sorrows. Every stone was like a thick history book that encompassed the long history of the Divine Capital City, ever since its creation.

However... this history might shortly cease to exist.

There would no longer be laughter and talking in these streets. The flowers and greenery would no longer exist.

Just thinking about it made Yi Yun sigh.

There were more and more pedestrians out on the streets. Yi Yun saw an old woman pushing a pancake cart as she sold pancakes. He saw a young girl tip-toeing to choose candy.

It was hard to believe that all of these honest people would turn into a pile of bones in just a few months...

They were pitiful. They still did not know that a disaster was looming. It was definitely a tragedy, a sorrow of the masses.

"I want to take a trip home. My home is here."

Yi Yun said to a law-enforcer not far behind him.

"Oh?" The law-enforcer hesitated for a while. He never expected that the Divine Capital City would be Yi Yun's home. There was military discipline in the military, and at that moment, they had received orders to be on standby. Waiting to stay behind and defend, or evacuate to the Cloud Wilderness.

If the army was dispersed, there might be incidents or even leaked news.

Initially, the law-enforcer did not want to agree. However, Yi Yun's status was special. After some thought, he said, "Return as soon as possible. Remember, you are not to leak the news of the beast horde! This is a military order!"

"I know." Yi Yun nodded. Although he could not bear to see these

common citizens die from ignorance, telling them would not help. The divine city had not abandoned them. Many Sages and Human Lords were fighting for them, sacrificing themselves. Unfortunately, there were plenty of times when human power lacked the ability to defy Heaven!

"Lord law-enforcer..." Yi Yun hesitated for a while before saying, "If we are to evacuate to the Cloud Wilderness, can I bring a few people...?"

Yi Yun could not abandon Jiang Xiaorou. There was also Zhou Xiaoke. He could not bear to let such a cute young girl die in the belly of a desolate beast.

The law-enforcer slightly frowned, "Are you bringing a warrior or a mortal?"

He had roughly guessed that Yi Yun likely wanted to bring along his family members.

"Mortals."

"Alright..." The law-enforcer was not surprised. As a person with a commoner background, Yi Yun's family was naturally made up of mortals.

"You can bring some, but... it will be limited to a very small number. You should know that it will be very troublesome to evacuate to the Cloud Wilderness while bringing along mortals."

"Yes... Thank you."

Yi Yun thanked him as he rushed towards the Soft Clouds Mountain Manor.

Yi Yun was extremely anxious about being able to meet Jiang Xiaorou shortly.

Jiang Xiaorou was the first family member he had ever since he came to this alternate world. In the Cloud Wilderness, when Yi Yun was still lacking in strength, he and Jiang Xiaorou had spent those tough days together, with only each other as kin.

The Soft Clouds Mountain Manor was about fifty kilometers away from the Divine Capital, so Yi Yun arrived there in fifteen minutes.

When he saw the big manor, it appeared to be even more glamorous than when he left.

The red lacquer door, with the shiny bronze ingots and the two large stone lions in front of it, made the place look substantial.

"Stop, who is there?"

Two servants who were guarding the door did not recognize Yi Yun at all. They tried to stop Yi Yun, but Yi Yun did not even

bother to answer them. With a flash, he entered the mountain manor.

The two servants were still standing at the entrance with their mouths agape. The person in front of them had instantly disappeared. They looked at each other, wondering if they had seen wrongly.

The inside of the manor was lined with red bricks and green tiles. Several hundred-year-old trees blocked the Sun, and between all the pavilions were rockery and greenery. It was a very beautiful landscape.

Yi Yun was in no mood to see this. He knew where Jiang Xiaorou stayed and focusing his hearing so that, within a hundred meter radius, he could hear even a worm burrowing in the ground.

Soon, he locked onto Jiang Xiaorou's position. With a flash of his figure, Yi Yun arrived in an exquisite garden.

In this small courtyard, Yi Yun saw a girl in green holding a watering can as she watered the flowers.

Yi Yun immediately recognized this young girl in green as it was his elder sister, Jiang Xiaorou.

After not having seen her once in the last one and a half year, Jiang Xiaorou, who had now eaten exquisite and nourishing food in the Soft Clouds Mountain Manor, now looked even more

graceful. She no longer looked like her undeveloped self from back then. Her skin had become even smoother and delicate, like creamy jade. Her figure was slim but curvy. She gave off a spring-like feeling.

"Sis Xiaorou!"

Yi Yun loudly shouted. At that moment, his heart was filled with emotion. He had thought that after he went to the Tai Ah Divine City, he would become a dragon amongst men and then have a glorious homecoming. He thought he could give his sister a title of first-grade princess, or some title of Lady, allowing her to live the life of a noble young mistress in the future. If he had a chance, he would get her some magical elixirs, allowing her to reach a certain martial arts realm and gain eternal youth.

However, he never expected that, although he had been outstanding in the Tai Ah Divine City, he could not have a glorious homecoming. He returned to the Divine Capital as a refugee.

Indeed, the phrase "the god of destiny makes fools of the people" was true.

"Yun... Yun'er?" Jiang Xiaorou looked in disbelief at the sudden appearance of this youth that was taller than her by a half a head.

Although Yi Yun had grown taller and his body had become more muscular, they had spent every day together since they were young. No matter how much Yi Yun changed, Jiang Xiaorou could recognize him immediately.

However, she could not believe that Yi Yun would so suddenly return home. She had not received any prior news to this.

"It really is Yun'er!"

Jiang Xiaorou was so overjoyed that she dropped her watering can and scurried forward to stand in front of Yi Yun.

"You have grown tall."

Jiang Xiaorou touched Yi Yun's face while her eyes became moist. When Yi Yun left, he was shorter than Jiang Xiaorou, but now, other than looking slightly boyish, he completely looked like an adult.

To Jiang Xiaorou, she did not care if Yi Yun obtained many achievements or reaching whatever cultivation realm. As long as he returned home safe and sound, allowing her to see more of him, she would be satisfied.

"Sis Xiaorou, I have something to tell you." Yi Yun said hurriedly.

"What is it? What is the rush?" Jiang Xiaorou was a very sensitive woman. She was overjoyed upon seeing Yi Yun's sudden return. However, with some thought, how could Yi Yun suddenly traverse millions of kilometers back home before finishing his training in the Divine City? There was no prior news to this which made it somewhat unusual.

And from Yi Yun's expression, it seemed as if something had happened. Jiang Xiaorou's expression turned solemn.

"We will talk in the house." Yi Yun pulled Jiang Xiaorou's hand. Yi Yun could not bring everyone from Soft Clouds Mountain Manor. He could only bring a few along...

Chapter 353: The Glimmer Of Hope

Yi Yun set up a simple sound isolation energy barrier in Jiang Xiaorou's boudoir. He then told her everything about the beast horde.

The more Jiang Xiaorou heard, the more alarmed she became. What Yi Yun was telling her was truly unbelievable.

A 100,000 feet tall Long Gui behemoth? How big was that?

Jiang Xiaorou had heard of beast hordes more than once while they were living in the Cloud Wilderness. However, she had never encountered one. Today, the beast horde Yi Yun told her about was unexpectedly a super beast horde that could wipe out the entire Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

Jiang Xiaorou had gotten a clear idea of how big the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was over the past year. Such a vast country could actually be destroyed? It sounded incredulous.

"Sis Xiaorou, you cannot tell others of what I told you. Follow me to the army campgrounds and bring Zhou Xiaoke, Aunt Wang and Uncle Zhou with you... This is probably the largest number of people I can take with me."

Yi Yun believed the law-enforcer would accommodate him bringing four people along.

Yi Yun did not know what would await him in this trip back to the Cloud Wilderness. For such a large divine kingdom to hole up in a barren land like the Cloud Wilderness, was it planning to become a Cloud Wilderness tribe in the future?

For the large divine kingdom to become a tribe was just ironic.

"Only four people?" Jiang Xiaorou could not bear it. What about the people who were left behind?

However, she knew she was unable to change anything and could only nod, "I... got it..."

Jiang Xiaorou followed Yi Yun and stayed within the Jin Long Wei campground. Now, the Jin Long Wei campground was the temporary residence of the Tai Ah Divine City's elites.

With the looming presence of the beast horde, Yan Menglong and the other Jin Long Wei superiors of Yi Yun had all been deployed to the front lines.

For days, the campground's atmosphere was extremely depressing. Everyone was waiting for the order to come down as if they were waiting for the decree of Fate.

And today... the order finally came. However, they were not to head to the Cloud Wilderness, but... to rush to the Chu Prefecture City.

To the Chu Prefecture City?

People were confused as they did not know why they were going to the Chu Prefecture City for at that moment.

The Chu Prefecture City was not near the Cloud Wilderness, it was actually closer to the Divine Wilderness. Could it be that the Tai Ah Divine City had been successfully defended?

People could not help but have such thoughts as this was the outcome they wished to see the most.

When Yi Yun learned of their destination, he slightly frowned. He had heard of the Chu Prefecture City. It was the fief of the Chu royal residence. It was also the Chu royal residence's largest city in the Chu Prefecture.

Yi Yun did not have a good impression of the Chu royal residence. Previously, his enemies, Yang Yuefeng, Yang Dingkun, and company were all from the Chu royal residence.

Regardless of that, an order was an order. Yi Yun followed everyone as they flew towards the Chu Prefecture City.

Jiang Xiaorou and company were also brought along by Yi Yun.

Following that, it was another boring journey. Through these days, they were constantly on the move, not knowing what their future fate would be...

The airship went through one teleportation array after another, slowly closing in on the Chu Prefecture City.

However, at that moment, people on the airship's deck saw another airship fly alongside them in the air.

This was an airship they had never seen before. It did not belong to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, nor any of the other large factions.

This airship was black in color and its surface was engraved with complicated red runes. As the airship flew, these runes shimmered with a rhythm. They exuded a mysterious and ancient feeling.

Clearly, the red runes were some form of esoteric array; but the law-enforcer in charge of the journey from the Divine Capital, who happened to be proficient in arrays, did not understand it at all.

The airship was about a thousand feet long but its volume was not too ludicrous in size. However, when the airships keel came in sight, a law-enforcer who was proficient in the Desolate Heaven technique became greatly alarmed.

"The heel is made of primordial strain ribs!"

The keel of an airship's main backbone was a straight beam. Along the beam were several crescent-shaped bones that formed the curvature of the keel.

This shape was, in fact, similar to a human's sternum and ribs.

If a large primordial strain's sternum and ribs were used to construct an airships keel, then the quality of that boat would be obvious!

However, in practice, the corpses of primordial strains are extremely precious. The precious bones of the species were usually used to refine desolate bone relics, so who would be willing to use them to construct an airship?

Besides, for an airship of this size meant that the primordial strain must have exceeded a thousand feet in size. It was definitely a horrific existence that could cast away mountains and upset the sea, bringing about Armageddon. Even a peak-Sage might not be able to kill such a beast!

"Such precious bones were used to construct an airship?"

A few law-enforcers became extremely alarmed. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had a few similar grade primordial strain corpses, but they were all placed in the Wilderness Divine Hall for the Tai Ah Divine City cultivators to use for cultivation.

How could they be so extravagant and use them to construct an airship?

"What faction is this?"

People started wondering. However, in times of peril, no matter what mysterious power it is, it will certainly bring imagination and hope to people.

At that moment, the black airship accelerated as it flew towards the Chu Prefecture City, leaving them behind.

"They too are going to the Chu Prefecture City?"

"Look, there are words on the back of the airship!"

People focused their gaze and saw ancient characters on the back of the airship. Two large blood-red words were written, Shen Tu!

The Shentu family clan!?

Could it be...

When people saw this surname, they all held their breaths.

If this was a few months back, no one on the airship would have known who the Shentu family clan was.

However, now, because of the Shepherd Boy, they all knew it clearly!

The Shentu family clan was an ancient family clan in the western

regions. Their heritage was unimaginably deep that far exceeded that of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

And when the Shepherd Boy first appeared, it was in the western regions. He had once stirred up a vast beast horde in the western regions, and at that time, the Shentu family clan had resisted against the beast horde.

Although the Shentu family clan was greatly weakened after the beast horde, they still managed to hold on!

A family clan which had been able to defend against the Shepherd Boy!

"It really is the Shentu family clan!"

"People from the Shentu family clan have come. Right, they have a feud with the Sheperd Boy. We might be saved!"

Thinking of this history, people were overjoyed. It could be said that the Shepherd Boy and the Shentu family clan would fight to the bitter end. Now, with the Shepherd Boy appearing once again, the Shentu family clan had taken the initiative to send someone!

The enemy of my enemy is my friend. For the Shentu family clan to appear now, it undoubtedly brought a glimmer of hope to the despairing Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!

"Hahaha, this is great! Looks like our orders to head to the Chu

Prefecture City is likely because of the Shentu family clan!" A law-enforcer, who was usually serious, became excited and started to cheer.

Even with the Shentu family clan joining, the war would still be extremely difficult with obscene amounts of bloodshed. However, it gave them hope of winning the war.

On the airship, Yi Yun gave a sigh of relief. It was best if they did not need to flee into the Cloud Wilderness.

"Disembark the airship!"

No one had time to appreciate the magnificence of the Chu Prefecture City after they landed. They had received orders to immediately head to the Chu royal residence's main hall.

And this time, they received precise information that stated that the people from the Shentu family clan had arrived. They were planning to assist the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in withstanding the beast horde.

"There are kindred spirits to be found in the human world. In this savage world, human forces have to be united!" A law-enforcer said from the bottom of his heart.

"Who can refute that. We humans are weak, so we need to unite to prosper. Things are now great!"

The law-enforcers leading the group were overjoyed. They brought the young Tai Ah Divine Kingdom elites to meet the Shentu family clan's ambassadors.

Not every elite had this qualification.

It was only limited to Yi Yun, Yao Dao, Yang Qian, Chu Xiaoran, and company.

Many of the others looked at Yi Yun and company with envy. To be able to meet the ambassadors of an ancient yet powerful family clan was an extremely glorious matter.

Not only did it broaden one's views, but getting to know mighty figures, and gaining the appreciation of the mighty figures would allow one's path to turn smoother in the future.

There were all sorts of unexpected benefits!

Of course, they were only envious, they had no contempt. Only people like Yi Yun and company had the right to represent the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. If they were sent, they would only be humiliating themselves in front of the ancient family clan.

"In a while, rouse yourselves up. The higher-ups have instructed that you are to seriously handle the Shentu family clan if they are to question you. You must not let down the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's reputation!" A law-enforcer ordered. The higher-ups had just sent down the command. Yi Yun especially, for he was the

most presentable talent the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had to offer.

They had to leave a good impression on the ambassadors from an ancient family clan. The ambassadors had to know that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was thriving with strong warriors in every generation. Only by letting them know that the younger generation of elites was extraordinary in strength could they show them the value of cooperation.

"Yes, I got it."

Yi Yun nodded. He knew very well that this meeting between the Shentu family clan and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in the Chu Prefecture City was extremely important. The fate of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom relied on it!

Whether the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom could survive this ordeal relied on the attitude of the Shentu family clan to a great extent.

Chapter 354: Spy

The grand Chu royal residence was filled with palatial towers everywhere. The main Hall was situated in the King Chu tower that stood magnificently high in the sky.

Currently, the Sun was setting in the West, enveloping the sky in a red glow. The tall King Chu tower was covered by a layer of golden light, making one feel like they were in an immortal paradise.

Before Yi Yun followed the law-enforcers into the King Chu tower, he saw the Shentu family clan's airship. It was docked in the square in front of the King Chu tower, and Shentu family clan guards surrounded it.

These guards looked strong and sturdy. Their breathing was restrained making it difficult to estimate their strength.

They stood there motionless like wooden poles. As they all uniformly wore the same type of Shentu family clan armor, it was majestic at a glance.

When Yi Yun and company walked past them, all of them continued looking straight, clearly following regimental discipline.

This made Yi Yun secretly surprised. He roughly estimated that these soldiers were no weaker than the Tai Ah Divine City instructors. However, in the Tai Ah Divine City, once people reached that amount of strength, they would have great freedom

and a high status.

However, in the Shentu family clan, these people could only become soldiers and guards.

This was the difference between a large faction and a small faction. Although the people were of the same cultivation level and those in a small faction could lead a more comfortable life, they would lose more opportunities and resources. Their horizons were more narrow, so there were people who were willing to serve a large faction, even if they were to be a normal soldier.

"The Shentu family clan has such military prowess and such regimental discipline. It's much stronger than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom." Yi Yun thought in his mind. He felt more confident of being able to withstand this beast horde.

Stepping through the King Chu tower's door, he was met with a solemn atmosphere in the main Hall. The ground was paved with inscribed stones. Not only they were harder than steel, they formed a very pretty pattern on the surface. It looked beautiful and noble.

Yi Yun saw that further in the Hall, there was a young man dressed in a traditional costume. His clothes were green in color, and there was a hair band on his head. His skin was white, and his forehead was revealed. His face had a healthy red shine to it. In a subtle way, Yi Yun could feel that in the middle of his eyebrows, there was a hint of purple air.

Purple Air Comes From The East was a symbol of innate royalty.

This youth's dress sense was simple and his breathing was very deep and composed. He did not seem to have any airs to him, and he seemed very amiable.

Sitting beside the youth were two elders who wore golden robes. They were both very respectful to the youth.

Yi Yun noticed that although the two elders were sitting on chairs, they only sat on a third of the seat. Their backs were upright, and this was a sign of humility.

Yi Yun did not recognize the two elders, but, one of the elders was wearing a golden python robe, thus Yi Yun recognized him.

A golden python could be said to be a python, but it actually resembled a dragon. It had four claws which were one less claw than a dragon, so a golden python could be said to be a four-clawed dragon.

In the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, only those who were given the title of King could wear a four-clawed golden dragon robe. For example, Chu Xiaoran's father was a Defender Duke, which was one level lower than King Chu's noble rank, hence he could not wear such a robe.

In other words, the elder wearing a golden python robe was King Chu himself!

For a young man to be able to receive such respect from King Chu made it certain that he was from the Shentu family clan. And amongst the Shentu family clan, he probably did not have a low status. Yi Yun noticed that King Chu was showing heartfelt respect to the youth himself, and not because of the faction behind him.

Other than those three people sitting in the great hall, the rest were left standing.

Yi Yun noticed that amongst those who stood, there were some teenage boys and girls wearing uniforms. These young people were clearly from the Shentu family clan, and they were likely the talented juniors from the Shentu family clan.

There were other older followers and family generals, but all of them treated the youth in green as their leader.

"Young Master Nantian, these are the young elites of our Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, please take a look."

King Chu pointed at Yi Yun and company. The youth in green casually glanced at them and his gaze stopped for a short while on Yi Yun.

"Not bad..." Shentu Nantian smiled and nodded, "When a country is in danger, being born in this chaotic times is unfortunate, but it is also lucky. If all of you can survive it, then this will be your fortuitous opportunity. Make sure to take advantage of it."

Shentu Nantian gave a simple evaluation. His voice was like powerful Spring pool, which made many of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's favored children of heaven feel as if they were placed upon a pedestal.

These days, all these teenage boys and girls had slowly understood how vast the world was. They were located in a corner, and they had limited horizons.

Originally, as a figure of such stature, Shentu Nantian would not concern himself with a bunch of geniuses from a small country as they were nothing. Unexpectedly, Shentu Nantian had even given them a good evaluation, making them feel encouraged.

"This Young Master Nantian does not have any airs."

"Right, I never expected him to encourage us. What a pleasure." A few youths began discussing using Yuan Qi transmissions.

Some of the young girls even looked at Shentu Nantian with a hint of admiration and idolization.

For a favored son of Heaven from a powerful background to be this charming and strong, he easily moved the hearts of the young girls.

"My Chu royal residence's family generals, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Sages and all these young proud children of Heaven will

listen to Young Master Nantian's orders!" King Chu respectfully said. At that moment, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was struggling, so naturally, it was very courteous to the Shentu family clan, which was like a life-saving straw.

"Alright." Shentu Nantian responded lightly. "My Shentu family clan has come to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom for two things. Firstly, it is to clear the beast horde set off by the Shepherd Boy to settle my feud with him. Secondly, it is to discuss some matters with the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom."

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he flipped his right hand slightly, and in his hand, a red stone appeared from out of nowhere.

He picked the gem out of his right hand and swiped it across all the people in the room. This gem emitted a light that put people in a dreamy state. If one looked at it, they would not even realize that their spirit was being sucked in.

Many of the favored children of Heaven were alarmed and hurriedly stop looking at it.

"This is..." King Chu was stunned, not knowing what Shentu Nantian was doing.

"Desolate Mirror Stone!" Shentu Nantian said calmly, "People from the Human race and Desolate race look no different. There is no way to distinguish them on the surface. Only this Desolate Mirror Stone can detect the Desolate race's signature. This is to prevent spies from the Desolate race being amongst us!"

When Shentu Nantian said this, King Chu's expression changed. He smiled dryly, "How is that possible? My Chu Prefecture City is a long distance away from the Divine Wilderness. Besides, these are geniuses reared by the Tai Ah Divine City. We know their roots, so they can't be of the Desolate race..."

"Impossible?" Shentu Nantian chuckled and stood up. "How many people from the Desolate race have you interacted with before? You are just guessing. The Desolate race is cunning, cruel and bloodthirsty. On the way here, I have confirmed that there is more than one member of the Desolate race in the Chu Prefecture City!"

"My guess is that the plan to set off the beast horde to destroy the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom has been prepared by the Desolate race for a long time. Many years ago, the Desolate race might have sent numerous spies to infiltrate all corners of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom!"

"This..."

Hearing Shentu Nantian saying it so certainly, the people in the great Hall looked at each other. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had been infiltrated by Desolate race spies? And there were that many?

Originally, their impression of the Desolate race was only that of the Shepherd Boy. It was synonymous with powerful, mysterious, bloodthirsty and cruel.

As for the other members of the Desolate race, they had never thought of them before.

"But..." Shentu Nantian's suddenly switched gears, "I'm curious. With the Shepherd Boy's strength, he can destroy the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom by himself. I do not understand why he sent spies out before hand. I'm afraid that his goal of attacking the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is not that simple!"

Shentu Nantian sighed slightly as he seemed to be in deep thought.

Yi Yun's mind began cranking when he heard this. When he was in the Tai Ah Divine City, he had seen the Shepherd Boy lead the beast horde to attack the city with his own eyes. Back then, the Shepherd Boy had indeed said, "I have something to do... I do not truly want to destroy the Tai Ah Kingdom, but unfortunately, the few countries around the Divine Wilderness are hindering me from doing what I want to do. As such, I can only annihilate them!"

The fact that Shentu Nantian had managed to reach this conclusion from all sorts of small clues showed how capable he was.

Shentu Nantian carried on, "Everyone, remember this. The Desolate race's blood is silver in color! If you detect any people with silver blood, you are to immediately report it to me!"

"The Desolate race may look human, but they are in fact not human. In essence, they are desolate beasts. The Desolate race is

innately cruel and prone to killing. They do not have any concept of mercy. They kill people like they are cutting grass!"

"Hence, do not treat the Desolate race as humans. Desolate race and Humans are arch-rivals, just as humans are arch-rivals with desolate beasts. You can say that we are irreconcilable!"

"The Desolate race's silver blood is of great use to Humans. The corpses of high ranked Desolate race members are much more valuable than primordial strains. And moving up, the blood of King-ranked Desolate race members are far superior to primordial true spirits! And King-ranked Desolate race members are not the strongest amongst the Desolate race!"

"The most important point is that the blood of Desolate race members has mild energies. They are not like the blood of primordial strains that can cause damage to one's meridians. If... anyone of you discovers a Desolate race, and report them to me, I will give you a portion of the Desolate race's blood. Therefore... I had previously mentioned that this war is a fortuitous opportunity for all of you. Now, you should understand why!"

After Shentu Nantian said all this, the young elites present were moved.

The value of a high ranked Desolate race member's blood exceeded that of primordial strains.

Furthermore, there were even King-ranked Desolate race members that exceeded primordial true spirits.

The concept of a primordial true spirit had been deeply engraved in their hearts. Back when the Shepherd Boy led the beast horde to attack the city, the giant turtle that shocked many was a primordial true spirit!

Then, what sort of value did the blood have that even a primordial true spirit paled in comparison?

"Alright, that will be all for today. There are no spies amongst us. From now on, the city gates have to be closed as we first find the spy!" Shentu Nantian said as his mouth suffused a confident smile.

The Shepherd Boy, who had previously stirred up a bloody storm in the western regions, was an arch-enemy that had nearly killed his parents and himself.

Now, he wanted to make the Shepherd Boy know what it meant to atone with one's blood!

Chapter 355: Spy

The Chu Prefecture City was on lockdown. People began going door to door to search for the Desolate race's spy.

A lot of Desolate Mirror Stones were handed out. The Shentu family clan and people from the Chu royal residence were also searching. However, not a single Desolate race was found after a few days.

Some people suspected that Shentu Nantian was being overly sensitive.

"If I said that they exist, then they exist! My intuition is not wrong. I have previously seen some Desolate race members with very pure blood and I have used the pureblood blood elixirs of the Desolate race, so I have a vague sense of the existence of a Desolate race. Now, I have already sensed them, so there must be a Desolate race lurking here. You must carry on searching!"

Shentu Nantian was extremely confident of his judgment. The Desolate Mirror Stone was not omniscient. When a Desolate race member's strength reached a certain realm, they would be able to hide their signature, as such it would not be surprising that the Desolate Mirror Stone was not able to detect anything.

And the stronger and purer the Desolate race's blood was, the more valuable it was.

This time, the Shentu family clan had sent several top experts.

They were not afraid of the Desolate race's strength, they were only afraid that the Desolate race blood would be impure.

"Let me... extract a high-ranking Desolate race's life-giving blood to refine into elixirs. I will use their corpses as a sacrifice to my clansmen who died that year."

Shentu Nantian rubbed his interspatial ring as a cold beam flashed in his eyes. He had made it his life's goal to slaughter the whole Desolate race. As long as he killed the whole Desolate race, then the desolate beasts would not be able to form into a super beast horde, so it was insufficient to cause fear.

...

"Using the blood of a Desolate race member to refine into elixirs..." In a small courtyard in the Chu royal residence, Yi Yun was sitting on a long bench as he watched the leaves fall from a hundred-year-old tree.

This looked like one of the courtyards that one of the Chu royal residence's palace girls lived in. There was even a swing in the courtyard. However, no one knew where the girl had gone, so Yi Yun and Jiang Xiaorou were assigned to live in it.

There were too many people that had entered the Chu Prefecture City. Although the Chu royal residence was large, it was quickly filled up. It was extremely difficult to be assigned a residence with a courtyard for a single person like Yi Yun.

"Are you biased against using Desolate blood to refine into elixirs?" Chu Xiaoran was sitting opposite Yi Yun. These days against the beast horde, Chu Xiaoran would occasionally look for Yi Yun to chat with so as to relieve her stress.

She did not have many friends in the Tai Ah Divine City. Qiuniu was one, while Yi Yun was the second.

"There will be at least some. The Desolate race look no different to Humans, so to use the Desolate race's blood to refine into elixirs makes me somewhat uncomfortable with the thought..."

Yi Yun spoke with some deliberation, despite Shentu Nantian having previously said that members of the Desolate race should not be treated as humans, and instead, they should be treated like a type of desolate beast.

Chu Xiaoran said, "The Desolate race is cruel and they have killed countless numbers of people. The Shepherd Boy looks like a neighborly youth, but underneath his skin, he is extremely cruel. The ancients describe death feuds as 'wishing only to eat one's flesh and drink one's blood', so I don't think it's too much."

What Chu Xiaoran said was not unreasonable, but Yi Yun recalled a phrase from his previous life, "there, we shall feast on barbarian flesh and drink the blood of the Xiongnu". Now, Shentu Nantian's feud with the Desolate race was probably similar to the famous general Yue Fei...

"Right, you must be careful of Yang Yuefeng and Yang Dingkun.

They have returned to the Chu royal residence and the Chu royal residence is their turf." Chu Xiaoran suddenly remembered Yi Yun's feud with the Chu royal residence's children.

"Yes...I know. I will be careful."

In the Tai Ah Divine City, Yi Yun could not do anything to Yang Yuefeng and company and vice-versa due to the Divine City's rules.

However, now in the Chu royal residence, Yi Yun had to be on the watch.

Thankfully, be it Yang Dingkun or Yang Yuefeng, they were just juniors in the Chu royal residence. They could not affect those who held power in the Chu royal residence with their own intentions.

As Yi Yun was thinking, he suddenly heard a commotion outside.

Oh? What happened?

Yi Yun focused and listened. He heard people shouting like they had caught a Desolate race spy and were prepared to submit it to Shentu Nantian to gain credit.

"They have caught a Desolate race spy?" Chu Xiaoran also heard the commotion. She was pleasantly surprised as she stood up.

However, beside Chu Xiaoran, Yi Yun's expression seemed to

change. Why...

His body flashed as he rushed out of the small courtyard!

...

"This is the Desolate race spy? How can it be so weak... Didn't Young Master Nantian say that the Desolate race spy should be very strong?"

"Haha, who cares. The Desolate Mirror Stone is so bright, so it can't be wrong. Let's send the news now."

There were two Chu royal residence's guards. One of them lit a voice transmission charm and directly sent the information.

This had happened only about a hundred meters away from Yi Yun's tiny courtyard, so Yi Yun reached here in a flash.

And what Yi Yun saw made him freeze.

Two large and sturdy Chu royal residence's guards were surrounding a girl dressed in green. She was his sister, Jiang Xiaorou!

Sis Xiaorou... How is this possible!?

Yi Yun's heartbeat stagnated as he couldn't believe it!

"I... I'm not a Desolate race spy, I'm not..." Jiang Xiaorou was curled up in the corner of a wall. Beside her was the basket she had dropped. In it were fresh vegetables and eggs that were scattered all over the ground.

Originally, she had gone to the Chu royal residence to obtain some ingredients so as to prepare a meal for Yi Yun, but she was stopped by these two guards. The stone they had emitted a red glow, and they had insisted that she was a Desolate race spy.

"Hmph, you sure can act!" One of the guards grinned. As a Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warrior, and knowing the cause and effect of the beast horde, they hated the Desolate race to the bone.

Without the Desolate race, would they have been in such a state?

"Let me see how long you can act!" A guard raised his hand as he was about to slap Jiang Xiaorou's face.

This guard's cultivation level was in the Yuan Foundation realm. This slap of his was enough to fall a large tree.

Seeing the slap reaching her, Jiang Xiaorou curled into a ball as she closed her eyes. She was filled with panic and despair.

"Stop it!"

Yi Yun's body flashed and appeared beside the guard like lightning. He reached out his hand and grabbed the guard's hand.

"You...What are you doing?" Yi Yun had recently broken into the Yuan Foundation and his strength exceeded similarly-ranked warriors. Yi Yun's grab hurt the guard. The guard's expression changed slightly as he never expected the youth to be that strong. He struggled to free himself from Yi Yun, but Yi Yun's hand was like an iron cast. The more he struggled, the more his wrist hurt.

He was a bit afraid as he said cowardly, "Don't tell me you are trying to protect a Desolate race spy?"

"Yun...Yun'er!" Jiang Xiaorou opened her eyes and she saw Yi Yun standing before her. She cried tears of joy.

"Yun'er, I'm not a spy, I really am not..." Jiang Xiaorou's voice slightly trembled. She was a very ordinary girl. She had only been trying to get some ingredients before encountering this attack on her.

"You are... Yi Yun?" A guard recognized Yi Yun, whose identity was extremely shocking.

"So you are Yi Yun... So what if you are Yi Yun? She is a Desolate race spy, as if you can protect her!"

Although he knew Yi Yun's identity and was lacking confidence,

his anger had caused him to verbally attack Yi Yun as his wrist was hurting badly.

Yi Yun stood in front of Jiang Xiaorou to protect her. His expression was not happy. At that moment, Chu Xiaoran had also arrived, "What is going on... ?"

She knew Yi Yun had a mortal sister and she had heard the commotion amongst these people. She found it hard to believe that Yi Yun's sister was a member of the Desolate race as it was too incredulous.

However, she also saw the Desolate Mirror Stone in the hands of the two guards shining the color of blood.

This meant that there was indeed a member of the Desolate race nearby, and it was extremely close!

Yi Yun looked at the Desolate Mirror Stone, and he found the red light emitted by the Desolate Mirror Stone extremely blinding.

He was silent as he turned his head around and looked at Jiang Xiaorou, "Sis Xiaorou..."

"Yun'er, I'm not a spy..." Jiang Xiaorou bit her lips. Her face was a bit pale. In Jiang Xiaorou's bright eyes, Yi Yun could see his clear reflection.

He was sure that the girl in front of him was the Sis Xiaorou who

had followed him all the way. She was not a Desolate race member in disguise.

He grabbed Jiang Xiaorou's hand and that intimate and harmonious feeling was not something an unfamiliar Desolate race member could disguise.

"She is my elder sister." Yi Yun turned his head and looked at the two guards as he said unhurriedly.

At that moment, there were more and more people gathering. Many people had rushed out when they heard the commotion.

Many of them were the favored children of the Tai Ah Divine City. Amongst them were Yang Qian and Yao Dao.

One of the Chu royal residence guards clutched his wrist that had been grabbed by Yi Yun. He pointed at Jiang Xiaorou and said to the people that had gathered, "We caught a Desolate race spy. It's her!"

Everyone's gaze fell onto Jiang Xiaorou, causing her to subconsciously move backward.

Up to now, she had not figured out what had happened. Two fierce-looking stout men had waved a red stone around her body, and had insisted she was a spy.

"She's from the Desolate race?" Yang Qian frowned as he looked

at Yi Yun. To Yang Qian, he did not mind Jiang Xiaorou, but he had to consider his attitude towards Yi Yun.

Yi Yun was silent. Jiang Xiaorou's background was mysterious and he did not know which family clan she came from either. He guessed that Jiang Xiaorou came from a huge background.

However... Desolate race?

Yi Yun recalled the bits and pieces of his interaction with Jiang Xiaorou before shaking his head, "Impossible!"

Back in the Cloud Wilderness, Jiang Xiaorou had previously told him of her childhood. Although she had lost a lot of her childhood memories, she still remembered certain scenes, which included her past life and her reading and writing.

The life she had described did not seem to be that of the Desolate race which lived with desolate beasts.

Besides, Jiang Xiaorou was literate. What she knew was language of humans, and Yi Yun knew that the Desolate race had their own language.

Jiang Xiaorou was the one who first taught Yi Yun's how to read and write.

If Jiang Xiaorou was from the Desolate race, then why would she learn the language of humans at a young age?

"Just because you say it's impossible, that doesn't mean that it's impossible? The Desolate Mirror Stone can't be wrong. If no one believes me, then we can test it now. Previously, Young Master Nantian had said that the color of the Desolate race's blood is silver. Let's use a knife and see whether this girl's blood is red or silver!"

The man who had his wrist grabbed by Yi Yun suddenly had a brilliant thought. He suggested this method and everyone who heard this agreed.

Indeed, checking the color of one's blood was enough, wasn't it?

Chapter 356: Blood

"Right, a blood test would be sufficient!" People began saying.

Yi Yun's heart nearly jumped out of his chest. After coming into this world, he had no memories from the original body.

Yi Yun had never seen Jiang Xiaorou bleed since he came here, so he did not know the color of Jiang Xiaorou's blood.

"Yi Yun, I never expected that you would encounter such a thing. I really pity you, Keke..." A voice filled with schadenfreude rang. Yi Yun looked up and saw that the person who said it was Yang Dingkun.

The two brothers, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng had appeared in the crowd. As the younger generation of the Chu royal residence, they were the masters here.

For the past few days, as everyone had temporarily taken up residence in the Chu royal residence, the status of the two of them clearly increased amongst the Tai Ah Divine City's elites.

Of course, they were still far below Yi Yun. In the Tai Ah Divine City, people respected the mighty ones more. Yi Yun's stature was obtained through his hard work, which was different from the two Yang brothers.

So even though they had returned to the Chu royal residence,

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng would usually hide if they saw Yi Yun. Today, seeing that Yi Yun's sister was likely a member of the Desolate race, they were pleasantly surprised. They had never expected this to happen to Yi Yun.

If this matter turned out true, then it would be interesting.

Just from Jiang Xiaorou's identity, they could kick Yi Yun while he was down.

Yi Yun's gaze turned cold. These two fellows and that one-armed Yang Haoran were like snakes hiding behind him. They were ready to bite him at anytime.

Unfortunately, Yi Yun could not do anything to them in such an environment.

At that moment, the crowd made way as an invisible aura approached.

Yi Yun stood up. He saw that amongst the group of people, Shentu Nantian had slowly walked over.

Shentu Nantian was still in his green clothes. He gave people the feeling of a gently breeze. He had a mild temperament of pale clouds and a light breeze and he did not seem sharp at all.

However... against Shentu Nantian, Yi Yun did not know why he felt a pressure.

"You found a Desolate race spy here?" Shentu Nantian asked as he looked at Jiang Xiaorou, "Is it you?"

Shentu Nantian smiled. Jiang Xiaorou held her breath in front of the green-dressed man. She hid behind Yi Yun as she did not know why she felt extreme fear in front of Shentu Nantian.

Yi Yun frowned. Shentu Nantian had arrived too quickly.

If it wasn't for Shentu Nantian, Yi Yun felt that he could use his status to protect her without a problem, even though Jiang Xiaorou's identity was still not clear. After all, Jiang Xiaorou was a real mortal girl. It would be the same even if a Sage used the Heaven's Eye to investigate her.

A mortal girl should not be faced with such difficulties.

However, Shentu Nantian was different. Yi Yun did not know him, and he had a great feud with the Desolate race.

"Yes, it's her! We used the Desolate Mirror Stone to test her and it turned so red that it nearly turned purple. There's definitely something wrong with her. But someone is trying to shield her."

That guard was obviously referring to Yi Yun.

Shentu Nantian lightly smiled and looked at Yi Yun, "This girl

seems to have some abnormal relationship with you?"

"She's my elder sister!" Yi Yun said seriously. He had said this several times today.

"Blood sister?" Shentu Nantian retorted.

Yi Yun hesitated for a while before shaking his head, "No!"

"Then she was adopted by your parents?"

Hearing Shentu Nantian's questioning, Yi Yun's heart sank. Although he was completely reluctant, he eventually nodded his head, "Yes!"

"Where was she adopted?" Shentu Nantian asked again.

Yi Yun's heart was growing colder, "The Cloud Wilderness!"

Jiang Xiaorou's origins was extremely disadvantageous to proving her identity. However, Yi Yun could not lie about them as there were many people who knew about his family background.

"Cloud Wilderness is a barren place with lots of desolate beasts! There are Desolate race deeply hidden in the Cloud Wilderness! You adopted a girl of unknown origin in the Cloud Wilderness, then it is possible that she is from the Desolate race!"

As Shentu Nantian said this, Yang Dingkun and company were gloating as it now seemed more and more likely!

Yi Yun clenched his fists. He knew that with his present strength, he was absolutely no match for Shentu Nantian. If Shentu Nantian wanted to do anything to Jiang Xiaorou, Yi Yun did not know what he could do.

Making a move against Shentu Nantian was like hitting a rock with eggs. Doing that would likely anger Shentu Nantian and result in the opposite effect!

Seeing Yi Yun's reaction, Shentu Nantian gently laughed, "Looks like you really care for your sister. Take it easy. Even if she really was a Desolate race, as long as she does not know anything about the Shepherd Boy and she is just a Desolate race commoner that was accidentally adopted by you, then I might let her off this once because of you. However, I will put some restrictions on her!"

When Shentu Nantian said this, Yi Yun felt relieved. He never expected Shentu Nantian to back down.

Was it because of his reputation?

Yi Yun found it a bit incredulous. He may be considered someone in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, but in the eyes of Shentu Nantian, he was probably nothing.

"Someone, check her blood." Shentu Nantian wiped his smile and

gave the order.

A sharp knife was presented and a Chu royal residence guard grabbed it.

"Hold on, I'll do it myself!" Yi Yun stopped the guard who was itching to do so. How could Yi Yun be assured letting someone slice Jiang Xiaorou's body? Besides, this person had qualms with him, and Yang Dingkun might even transmit some instructions to cause trouble.

"Let him do it." Shentu Nantian said. He gave a deep glance at Jiang Xiaorou and no one knew what he was thinking.

Yi Yun did not grab the knife, but he simply grabbed Jiang Xiaorou's hand. "Sis Xiaorou, I'm going to do it. It won't hurt."

"Alright!" Jiang Xiaorou nodded.

Yi Yun extended his index finger and gently stroke Jiang Xiaorou's palm. The knife he made out of Yuan Qi was extremely sharp.

With almost no pain, a tiny gash opened in Jiang Xiaorou's palm.

Blood slowly dripped from the wound.

At that moment, Yi Yun held his breath! He was very afraid to see

the lethal silver.

Everyone else focused their attention on Jiang Xiaorou's palm.

"Pa Da!"

A drop of blood dripped out onto the granite pavement. It broke up and reflected the light of the setting Sun. It was like a red colored gem.

"Red colored blood!" Yi Yun let out a long sigh of relief. He had never found the color of blood to be so bright and beautiful!

Jiang Xiaorou, was after all, his sister, not a member of the Desolate race!

Although her identity seemed problematic, Yi Yun could not care less. No matter what Jiang Xiaorou's background was, he only knew that they had spent the toughest days in the Cloud Wilderness. That kind of blood thicker than water feeling could not be compared to anyone else's.

Although Yi Yun now had many relations with all sorts of people and was an elite of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, back in the Cloud Wilderness, he was just a mortal. In fact, it should be said he was a burden.

However, Jiang Xiaorou did not abandon him and they depended on each other.

"It's actually red, what the heck... ?!" The two Chu royal residence guards could not believe it. They had managed to arduously find a Desolate race spy, but it resulted in them being wrong.

"F**k, this kid sure has good luck for him to escape unscathed. However, it's strange. Since the girl's blood is red in color, why does she cause the Desolate Mirror Stone to shine red?"

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng were feeling unhappy. They thought they had found Yi Yun's weakness. Although they could not use that to shake Yi Yun's position, they could at least cause his sister to die, making him grieve. That was something they were very happy to see.

However, now all had come to naught.

"So there shouldn't be a problem, right..." A person asked Shentu Nantian.

"As I said, how can Yi Yun's sister be from the Desolate race?" Tai Ah Divine City cultivators who revered Yi Yun began supporting Yi Yun.

Shentu Nantian gently stroked his chin as he looked at Jiang Xiaorou silently. No one knew what he was thinking.

"Young Master Nantian, can we go?" Yi Yun placed Jiang Xiaorou

behind him as he asked Shentu Nantian. He was still alert. As long as he did not leave their vision, he felt like he had beams stabbing his back, it was impossible for him to feel at ease.

However, Shentu Nantian did not respond. He seemed to recall something and was lost in thought.

Suddenly, he began slowly walking towards Jiang Xiaorou. Jiang Xiaorou's heart contracted as she subconsciously retreated a few steps.

However, Shentu Nantian did not force himself and stood not far from where Jiang Xiaorou previously stood. He had a smile on his face as he squatted down. He was looking attentively at the drop of blood on the ground.

It was the blood Jiang Xiaorou bled.

After a few seconds, Shentu Nantian stretched out his finger and touched the drop of blood.

Suddenly, a strange smile appeared on the corners of his mouth. He raised his head and looked at Jiang Xiaorou. He faintly said, "Your surname is Jiang, right?"

Jiang Xiaorou's heart sank. Against Shentu Nantian's smile, her face turned pale in a flash, "You..."

Beside Jiang Xiaorou, Yi Yun was on high alert. In the previous

conversion, no one had mentioned the name "Jiang Xiaorou", but Shentu Nantian had managed to guess Jiang Xiaorou's surname!

Shentu Nantian stood up and his smile became even more bright. It was so bright that it looked sinister. "I think I know who you are... I never expected that I would find you here!"

Chapter 357: Dark Red

Yi Yun noticed that the look Shentu Nantian gave Jiang Xiaorou, contained a trace of greed in it!

The feeling was similar to that of a venomous snake looking at a palatable prey.

Yi Yun tightly held onto Jiang Xiaorou's hand. His palms were sweating as he was extremely nervous. An extremely sense of foreboding started to rise in his heart.

Yi Yun really had no idea of what to do if Shentu Nantian wanted to do anything to Jiang Xiaorou.

Yi Yun was always calm, but now, his mind was completely blank.

"What... has happened?"

At that moment, two elders walked into the crowd.

The person leading the way was dressed in a four-clawed, golden dragon robe. His hair was white and his eyes sparkled. He was King Chu!

Beside King Chu was an elder, dressed in gray clothes. This elder was also present when Yi Yun previously met Shentu Nantian in

the main Hall. He rarely spoke and seemed to be a personal guard of King Chu.

"Your Highness, there is a problem with the identity of Yi Yun's elder sister."

A Chu royal residence guard quickly explained the situation to King Chu with a Yuan Qi voice transmission.

King Chu was, for a short while, stunned as he too never expected for this to happen.

"Young Master Nantian, what is this girl?"

Now, Jiang Xiaorou's identity was uncertain. The only person who knew was Shentu Nantian himself.

"She is a member of the Desolate race." Shentu Nantian determined Jiang Xiaorou's identity with a simple line without offering any further explanation.

Yi Yun's heart sank. Desolate race!

Even though her blood was red, she was still of the Desolate race?

Previously, Shentu Nantian said that if Jiang Xiaorou was of the Desolate race and had been accidentally adopted, having no idea about the Shepherd Boy's invasion, then he would not pursue her.

However, clearly... the matter was no longer that simple!

"Young Master Nantian, may I know what you want to do with my sister? She may be of the Desolate race, but she is just a Desolate race commoner." Yi Yun suppressed his emotions while asking Shentu Nantian in a respectful tone, hoping that he would let Jiang Xiaorou off.

"Desolate race commoner?" Shentu Nantian glanced at Yi Yun and chuckled, "How do you know if she is a commoner? She is not a commoner, and her identity is very special!"

"I will take your sister away. Although I could fabricate a lie and leave you with beautiful fantasies, I will not do that. I want you to know that the Human race and the Desolate race are bitter enemies, there will never be a peaceful coexistence."

"To us, the Desolate race are just desolate beasts that can speak. Originally, if this girl was a Desolate race commoner without anything special, it would be no problem for you keeping her as a pet or as a sex slave. I would have allowed that, but she is not. There is a great history contained within her background, and once she is sent back to the Desolate race, it will bring an endless amount of calamities onto humans. It might even be far more serious than the beast horde set off by the Shepherd Boy!"

When Shentu Nantian said this, everyone became stunned. Was it possible for this girl to cause something far more serious than the beast horde set off by the Shepherd Boy?

"Therefore... I must kill her. As for her blood, I will use it to refine elixirs! The truth is cruel, but since you asked, I told you the truth."

After Shentu Nantian said this, he wiped off his smile. His voice was ice-cold and full of murderous intent.

Jiang Xiaorou, who was behind Yi Yun, felt as if she had been struck by lightning!

Refine! Elixirs!

She would be refined into an elixir?

Yi Yun's blood was surging as his eyes turned bloodshot.

Shentu Nantian actually wanted to use Jiang Xiaorou for refining elixirs?

At that moment, Yi Yun felt as if his soul left his body. He stood before Shentu Nantian, as if he had been completely isolated from the surrounding world. All he could see was Shentu Nantian.

What do I do? What am I supposed to do!?

Thousands of ideas flashed past Yi Yun's mind, but none of them could resolve the current situation!

At that moment, Shentu Nantian turned towards King Chu, "King Chu, you are just in time. Does your residence have an alchemy lab? Please lend me the best one you have."

"Al... Alchemy lab?" King Chu gave him a bitter smile as he glanced at Yi Yun with the corner of his eyes.

At the moment, King Chu was having a huge dilemma. How did the matter develop to this point?

Although he did not care for Yi Yun, there were several people in the upper echelons of the Divine Kingdom who found Yi Yun very promising. They were hoping that Yi Yun would be able to change the fate of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

However, if he were to help Shentu Nantian now, and refine Yi Yun's sister, then Yi Yun might go into a rage and do something silly. Then, all the troubles stirred up would most likely be blamed on him.

King Chu found it difficult to give him an immediate answer.

"Grandpa, since Young Master Nantian wants an alchemy lab, let us just give him one. Do we not have a Herbal Royal Lab in our residence? That is an alchemy lab with Earth Fire. In the entire Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, only the imperial city's Dragon Elixir Lab can compete with our Herbal Royal Lab."

Yang Dingkun, who stood beside King Chu, said in a gloating

fashion. His heart was so happy that it felt like it was blooming with flowers. The Herbal Royal Lab's grade had been exaggerated by him as he was afraid that Shentu Nantian might not like it.

If it was Yi Yun's sister, refining her in the Chu royal residence's Herbal Royal Lab would be extremely interesting.

When he thought of this, Yang Dingkun looked at Yi Yun. He saw Yi Yun touching his interspatial ring with one hand. Green veins were protruding on his forehead, clearly he was extremely angry.

Seeing the action of Yi Yun touching the interspatial ring, Yang Dingkun became overjoyed.

Great! This is too great! If Yi Yun got agitated to make a move, then it would be a joyous occasion. Then he could even kill by proxy, by letting Shentu Nantian destroy Yi Yun.

In Shentu Nantian's eyes, how great of a figure could someone like Yi Yun be?

With this thought in mind, Yang Dingkun sent Yi Yun a sarcastic Yuan Qi transmission, "Yi Yun, Keke, your expression sure looks fearsome, but what can you do? Now, you can only watch on helplessly as your sister is being refined into elixirs. Young Master Nantian previously said that the stronger the Desolate race, the more power the blood contains. The elixir that is refined would then also be higher in grade. Your sister must have a pretty good bloodline for her to gain the favor of Young Master Nantian. If only I could get a few of those elixirs."

Yang Dingkun said it all in a an eccentric manner as Yi Yun's gaze turned muddy. He had now given Yang Dingkun the death penalty in his heart.

Actually, up till now, Yi Yun had never really killed a person.

For example, although Lian Chengyu's death was caused by Yi Yun, he had only been maimed by Yi Yun. Lian Chengyu only died due to his own despair and serious injuries.

However at that moment, Yi Yun really wanted to kill Yang Dingkun!

Yang Dingkun's heart sank upon seeing Yi Yun's cold eyes. He inexplicably felt his back go cold.

Yi Yun did not lose his reason due to his rage and did not blindly attack. This made Yang Dingkun unhappy, but Yi Yun's murderous gaze made him feel fear.

"What is there to be afraid of!?" Yang Dingkun said to himself. He had decided to arrange the alchemy lab, and by sucking up to Shentu Nantian, allowing Shentu Nantian to feel happy.

When that happened, he would end up with a meteoric rise.

So what about Yi Yun, so what if he was great? He may be special

in the Tai Ah Divine City, but compared to Young Master Nantian, he was nothing but a fart!

Chapter 358: At The End Of The Road

"Earth Fire alchemy lab? That will probably do..." Shentu Nantian said treating the matter lightly.

Shentu Nantian's statement had decided the matter.

What else could King Chu do? With the entire Tai Ah Divine Kingdom teetering on the brink of destruction, how could he possibly disobey Young Master Nantian's orders?

"Uncle Zhou, arrange the Herbal Royal Lab for Young Master Nantian." As King Chu spoke, he glanced at Yi Yun. He had been noting Yi Yun's reaction the entire time. He too felt some sympathy for this young man.

"Yes, your Highness."

Uncle Zhou was the elder in gray that had been following King Chu all this time. He was King Chu's personal guard as well as the steward of the Chu royal residence.

"Uncle Zhou, let me and Dingkun arrange it." Yang Yuefeng said. He was eager to do the job and seize this opportunity to please Shentu Nantian. An opportunity like this was very rare.

"Young Master Ding, Young Master Feng..." Uncle Zhou hesitated for a bit but did not stop them. He just quietly stood by King Chu's side.

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng looked at Yi Yun with mocking glances and solicitously said to Shentu Nantian, "Young Master Nantian, shall we do it now? If you need any materials, we will prepare them for you immediately."

Yang Dingkun patted his chest as a guarantee.

Shentu Nantian said with a smile, "There is no need. I am afraid that you do not have the things I need."

"Yes, yes, yes. The things Young Master Nantian need must be priceless treasures that we cannot prepare. Sorry for the joke displayed before you." Although he had been despised, he still flattered Young Master Nantian cheerfully.

At that moment, Shentu Nantian turned towards Jiang Xiaorou.

As for Yi Yun, he was standing in front of Jiang Xiaorou with his right fist clenched and his left hand was on his right hand's interspatial ring.

At that moment, Yi Yun was like a sparrow protecting its young against a foul hawk in front of him.

"Your name is Yi Yun right? I can feel that you are very promising. To have such accomplishments while being born in such a small country. Breaking through to the Yuan Foundation realm at such a young age and having such a solid foundation is

extremely difficult."

"Cherish your future and do not do anything stupid. I have repeatedly stressed that humans and desolate beasts are bitter enemies! Do you not see how this beast horde was stirred up? The Desolate race are willing to kill trillions of civilians without even blinking, just to accomplish their goals!"

"The sister you have behind you has a special bloodline. I definitely cannot let her live. For once she is found by the Desolate race, there will definitely be a scourge."

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he walked towards Yi Yun and Jiang Xiaorou.

However, Yi Yun gritted his teeth as he remained standing in front of Jiang Xiaorou.

Shentu Nantian frowned. He stared into Yi Yun's eyes for a few seconds, Yi Yun did not relent and stared back.

Shentu Nantian's expression sank as his patience was limited.

"I am saying this for the last time. I am giving you the time it takes to take 3 breaths to get out of my way."

Yi Yun took a deep breath. He felt as if his heart was bleeding, but he still endured it, "Young Master Nantian, I beg of you, let my sister go. You can put restrictions on her, but..."

"Oh!?" Shentu Nantian's face turned cold as his aura exploded. Originally, Shentu Nantian gave people the feeling of a gently breeze. His usual temperament was like that of a elegant breeze, giving people a comfortable feeling.

However, now, he was like an evil demon. It was like a ferocious beast had awoken within Shentu Nantian's body!

Suddenly, Shentu Nantian became extremely scary.

"Scram!"

Shentu Nantian waved his hand, making Yi Yun feel a terrifying force surge towards him from all sides. The blood within his body seemed to freeze at that moment. His meridians, his key points and his energy had been completely locked.

This energy was too terrifying as Yi Yun was powerless to resist it. His entire body was sent flying by the energy, heavily slamming into the Chu royal residence's wall!

"Boom!"

With a loud bang, the one foot-thick wall collapsed. Stones fell as Yi Yun was buried in rubble, his body now completely covered in stone and dust!

At that moment, Yi Yun felt as if all of his organs had been misplaced. He felt something in his throat as he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Yi Yun!

This sudden scene stunned everyone.

Under Shentu Nantian's sudden attack, the powerful Yi Yun was like a helpless baby.

Chu Xiaoran and company felt their hearts clench as they were worried about Yi Yun. A wise man does not fight when the odds are stacked against him. They were afraid that Yi Yun would be rash and do something stupid.

However, there were also people like Yang Dingkun, Yang Yuefeng and company who were now smiling. This was great, it really felt great!

Shentu Nantian's voice said coldly, "I gave you face, but you did not want it. Who do you think you are? I appreciate you and can speak to you pleasantly, but if I hate you, you can be squashed by me like an ant!"

"I have taught you the ways of being human countless times, telling you to keep away from the Desolate race, but you! You repeatedly go against me. Do you really think that I would tolerate you time and again?"

At that moment, Shentu Nantian revealed a natural regal air to him and was extremely scary!

He was like a King who held the rights to life. One moment, he was pleasant, in the next moment, he was killing people out of anger. His moods made it hard for people to grasp it.

"I warn you for the last time, draw a line with the Desolate race. If you do so, then you will be one of us Humans. If you do not, I will kill you with my own hands!"

Shentu Nantian's final words were filled with murderous intent.

"Yun'er..."

Jiang Xiaorou ran in front of the rubble and helped Yi Yun up. At that moment, Yi Yun's mouth was full of blood. The blood had mixed with the dust, turning its color into a reddish-black.

Seeing Yi Yun in such a state, Jiang Xiaorou's heart broke. She bit her lips. In this situation, she was helpless.

She looked at Shentu Nantian and sobbed, "Do not fight anymore... I will follow you."

"Haha!" Hearing Jiang Xiaorou's words, Shentu Nantian laughed heartily, "Such a sickening sibling relationship. For a human and

one of the Desolate race to have such feelings for each other, that they can give up their lives to protect the other is laughable to an extreme!"

"Do you think that you would have the chips to negotiate with me if you were to leave with me? Your life was originally in my hands! However, I did not want to kill your so-called brother today. I only wanted to teach him a lesson and let him remember what race he is. I wanted to let him know that he cannot forget who he is!"

As Shentu Nantian spoke, his hand grabbed towards Jiang Xiaorou, "If you want to blame anyone, blame your own destiny!"

Shentu Nantian's hands were injected with a trace of Yuan Qi as he pressed towards Jiang Xiaorou's head. He wanted to strike Jiang Xiaorou's mind. Once that happened, Jiang Xiaorou would lose her sanity, but her body would remain alive. Using a living body when refining elixirs gave the best results.

Chapter 359: Serene Smile

Yi Yun looked on helplessly as Shentu Nantian's hand went to grab her. Shentu Nantian's motion was not fast, but he did not need to be that fast to destroy a mortal's mind.

No——!

Yi Yun shouted in his heart. He buried his hands deep in the rubble as his eyes nearly bled, but he was still completely powerless to prevent this scene!

At that moment, Yi Yun's body was in complete pain. His energy was still being locked by Shentu Nantian so he could not use his Yuan Qi. Even if he could use it, against Shentu Nantian, Yi Yun's strength was negligible. He had no doubt that if he were to challenge Shentu Nantian's authority again, not only would he not be able to save Jiang Xiaorou, he would also end up dying together with her!

At that moment, Yi Yun deeply felt how minute his existence was!

Because of his minuteness, he could be kneaded by others in any way.

Because of his minuteness, he could not protect the people he wanted to protect.

Strength! He needed strength! He needed time to grow, but... now, it was too late!

Time seemed to freeze as Shentu Nantian's hand came pressing onto Jiang Xiaorou's head without any resistance. It was as if this strike was shattering Yi Yun's own heart!

Jiang Xiaorou closed her eyes. She had calmly accepted this approaching fate of hers. At the last moment, she was praying for Yi Yun to be fine. That, after her death, Shentu Nantian would not harm Yi Yun.

And at the moment Jiang Xiaorou had resigned herself to fate, something strange happened. Murderous intent covered everything!

"Huh!?"

Shentu Nantian suddenly turned around and slammed his palm to the back, "Who!?"

"Pa!"

A loud explosion, which sounded like glass breaking, boomed out. Shentu Nantian's body trembled as he retreated. Before him, there now was a thin grey figure attacking him!

In his hand was a short, black, curved saber that was slashing straight at Shentu Nantian's neck!

"Uncle Zhou, you..."

When he saw who it was that attacked, King Chu was dumbfounded. His guard and steward actually attacked Shentu Nantian!?

Uncle Zhou had previously saved King Chu's life in a mystic realm!

Compounded with Uncle Zhou's power and steady personality, King Chu had always trusted him greatly.

In name, Uncle Zhou was King Chu's personal guard and steward, but he was in fact a very good friend of his. Usually, they would address each other as brothers.

King Chu never expected that Uncle Zhou would suddenly launch a surprise attack at Shentu Nantian at this critical moment!

"Courting death!"

Shentu Nantian loudly shouted as a sword appeared in his hand from out of nowhere. His sword blocked off Uncle Zhou's curved saber. He knew that if he could drag it out a few more seconds, then the Shentu family clan's experts would be able to rush here and kill this person!

"So, the person of the Desolate race that I felt was you!" Shentu Nantian grinned as he revealed Uncle Zhou's identity.

Uncle Zhou was the Desolate race spy!

Jiang Xiaorou's strength was too weak, so even though her bloodline was pure, it was in fact impossible for Shentu Nantian to detect her presence.

What he felt had to be a strong member of the Desolate race.

And this Desolate race was extremely good at hiding. Even with a Desolate Mirror Stone, there had been no way of finding him.

Instead, Jiang Xiaorou, who was a commoner, could neither hide the signature of her bloodline nor could she hide from the Desolate Mirror Stone.

"Clang!"

The sword and saber clashed as Shentu Nantian started laughing maniacally, "Another high-ranked Desolate race, great! Today I will have a great harvest. Stay behind and enter the furnace..."

As Shentu Nantian said this, his voice froze.

He looked incredulously at his neck and saw that a gruesome gash had appeared out of nowhere. It extended from his carotid

artery, all the way down to his collar bone.

"Puah!"

The carotid artery had been slashed open, causing blood to spray out!

A dizzy feeling flooded Shentu Nantian senses as he froze. He had clearly blocked the spy's saber, so how did he get so seriously injured?

An invisible saber blade had injured him with a slash!

When he thought of the moment when he turned around, there had been the clear sound of breaking glass. Only then did Shentu Nantian realize what had happened.

Spatial Dimension Blade!

Spatial Dimension laws!?

A Desolate race had actually managed to cultivate in the Spatial Dimension laws and used an invisible Spatial Dimension Blade to injure him!

The mysterious and esoteric Spatial Dimension laws were of a realm that made people envious. Its was extremely powerful and the way it attacked was extremely elusive. Many wanted to

cultivate in it, but no one had ever managed to even step through that door.

"Shentu Nantian, today I'll die with you!"

Uncle Zhou hated Shentu Nantian to an extreme, as if they had a great feud in between them. The curved saber in his hand quickly rotated as he slashed towards Shentu Nantian's heart!

If the Spatial Dimension Blade pierces through the heart, it could kill Shentu Nantian!

At that moment, Shentu Nantian's artery was spewing out blood and almost half his neck had been cut open. Any normal warrior would have long since died. Even if it was Shentu Nantian, his battle prowess had now been greatly reduced. He could not withstand that strange attack which contained the Spatial Dimension laws!

In a split second, Shentu Nantian's chest suddenly flashed with a divine flow as a protective charm flew out on its own towards Uncle Zhou's blade.

"Clang!"

The blade beam was shattered while the protective charm revealed a crack. However, it was still able to completely protect Shentu Nantian.

Shentu Nantian's eyes turned cold, "You want to kill me? You are too naive, you do not have anymore time."

Just after Shentu Nantian said this, seven Yuan Qi beams shot up from the surroundings and into the sky.

"Who dares to assassinate our family's young master!?"

"Prepare your life!"

The seven elders came from all directions. They were all legendary figures of the Shentu family clan and each had unfathomable strength!

They were responsible for the protection of Shentu Nantian during this trip!

The seven people's speed was as fast as lightning as they approached Uncle Zhou.

Feeling the Yuan Qi intensity coming from these people, and seeing the thick, shimmering protective shield now around Shentu Nantian, Uncle Zhou's eyes glimmered with resentment and unwillingness!

He was unable to kill Shentu Nantian!

"The Heavens has eyes, you shall pay with your blood!"

Uncle Zhou gritted his teeth as he retreated a step back to stand beside Jiang Xiaorou. He then grabbed Jiang Xiaorou's shoulder!

Seeing this scene, Shentu Nantian's heart tightened. He knew that the Desolate race was escaping!

"Seal all routes of retreat. Do not let this old thing escape with the little witch girl!"

Shentu Nantian snapped with a fierce voice as he clutched his bleeding neck.

The seven legendary figures had already begun to set up an array while they were rushing over. They locked down all routes of retreat, preventing Uncle Zhou from escaping!

However at that moment, Uncle Zhou's expression showed an unswerving determination. He suddenly punched himself in the chest.

"Puah!"

Uncle Zhou forced out a mouthful of blood, and this blood sprayed onto Jiang Xiaorou's clothes.

Silver blood that reflected the setting Sun's glow and seemed to be, in itself, a flowing treasure. It looked even more glaring than

red blood.

Jiang Xiaorou was completely stunned. She was unable to react to this sudden turn of events.

At that moment, Uncle Zhou touched Jiang Xiaorou's head with one hand and showed a kind smile.

Under the sunset's glow, his wrinkle-filled face and smile seemed to freeze into eternity.

"Successor, this old servant will now be sending you home..."

The words said by Uncle Zhou's old voice resounded in Jiang Xiaorou's ear. These words seemed to become forever imprinted in her mind.

Following that, Jiang Xiaorou suddenly felt the blood on her chest, from Uncle Zhou, turn warm, as if the blood was burning.

The silver blood was like a river of fire, causing her to feel pain on the chest.

At that moment, she felt inexplicable pain upon seeing old Uncle Zhou. This pain came out of nowhere, making it hard for her to even breathe.

A beautiful rainbow light enveloped Jiang Xiaorou.

"Space teleportation! That old beast knows Spatial Dimension laws. He has burned his blood essence and initiated a space teleportation to send the little witch girl away!"

Shentu Nantian finally realized what Uncle Zhou was doing. He was angrily alarmed. Jiang Xiaorou was not to be let go!

Shentu Nantian conjured up a large golden hand to grab at Jiang Xiaorou!

"Little witch girl, you are staying behind!"

"Boom!"

A loud explosion sounded as the large hand grabbed onto the light formed from the laws that surrounded Jiang Xiaorou. The light shield trembled, causing ripples to form in the spatial dimensions.

Shentu Nantian's palm felt pain from the tremors, but Jiang Xiaorou, who was within the light shield was still safe and sound.

The Space Dimension laws had been activated. Although they could still see Jiang Xiaorou, at that moment she was already in a completely different space-time dimension.

"It is too late!" Shentu Nantian said as his heart burned with

anxiety. "We cannot let the array succeed. Kill that old beast and interrupt the array. Tear open the space dimension tunnel and drag the little witch girl out!"

Shentu Nantian yelled as if he was crazy.

The legendary figures from the Shentu family clan attacked from all corners. There were 4 swords, 2 sabers and 1 spear. They all stabbed at Uncle Zhou at the same time.

The weapon's cold beams flashed, but Uncle Zhou did not even take a glance. He did not even conjure up his Power of Desolates to protect his body.

He bit the tip of his tongue and spat out another mouthful of blood essence to inject into the array!

"Puah Puah Puah!"

Seven sharp weapons pierced through Uncle Zhou's body at the same time!

Fresh silver blood splattered. Uncle Zhou's slightly stooped body suddenly quivered. His organs had all been ruptured and his mouth was filled with blood. It flowed down like mercury.

His hands were slightly trembling as he pressed onto the spatial light shield around Jiang Xiaorou. With the last ounce of his strength, he drew an engraving with his blood.

He watched Jiang Xiaorou in this fashion, as if he had all sorts of things he wanted to say to her but couldn't.

Jiang Xiaorou held her breath. She had always lived a bland life, never experiencing such a scenario.

She did not even know who this elder, who died for her, was. Neither did she know what their relation was. She had lost a portion of her childhood memories. She desperately tried to recall, but could not remember a thing...

She wanted to touch the elder's face through the light shield, but she could not touch it...

"Boom!"

A battle axe cleaved down on the elder's head.

The elder's head jerked as his head was split open. Blood spouted out from his forehead.

With his incredible will, he managed to ignite all the engravings at the last moment of his life. The light beams became thicker, like a burning flame.

In this light, Jiang Xiaorou saw the elder's final expression. It was that of a serene smile...

As space distorted, Jiang Xiaorou was aware of what was about to happen. She would soon be teleported away.

"Yun'er! Yun'er!"

Ignoring the grief of the dead elder, what Jiang Xiaorou was the most concerned about now was Yi Yun!

The elder, having sacrificed his life to send her away, was already the limit. As for Yi Yun, what would happen to Yi Yun?

Would Shentu Nantian, in his anger, spare Yi Yun's life?

"Yun'er!"

Jiang Xiaorou cried out loudly. However, her voice was completely isolated by the light shield.

She felt space distort, causing her to nearly faint! At that split moment, she tunneled through endless space-time!

Chapter 360: Vicious

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

Above the Chu royal residence, a space-time black hole appeared out of nowhere. It swallowed Jiang Xiaorou, leaving behind black Spatial Dimension law beams that slowly disappeared in the sky...

Uncle Zhou's body had been completely pierced through by sabers and swords. He looked at the space-time portal as it was slowly disappearing, the smile on his face had already gone stiff.

He had done it. Although he did not manage to kill Shentu Nantian, he did manage to send away the Successor. He died without any regrets.

"Old bastard! You interfered with my grand plans!"

Shentu Nantian was clutching his own neck as his eyes turned scarlet, like those of a wild beast!

Under his tremendous rage, Shentu Nantian's body flashed and then appeared before Uncle Zhou's body. He then smashed down onto Uncle Zhou's forehead with a palm.

"Ka-cha!"

People heard the crisp sound of cervical bones cracking. Shentu

Nantian had pressed Uncle Zhou's neck all the way into Uncle Zhou's own chest.

His neck was completely broken, even his skull had been completely cracked open. It was a terrible sight!

Shentu Nantian's hair was disheveled, his body was covered with of blood, and his hands were stained with brain fluid. Currently, he looked like a bloodthirsty demon!

People held their breaths, they were reduced to complete silence!

After Shentu Nantian completely revealed his foul ways, he was a completely different person!

The way he dealt with Uncle Zhou could be said to be extremely brutal!

Even King Chu was shaking and felt distraught. The person who had sneaked up on Shentu Nantian and disrupted his great plans, causing them to fail, was his most trusted steward.

"King Chu!"

Shentu Nantian stared at King Chu with his blood red eyes!

King Chu held his breath as beads of sweat began to emerge on his forehead.

"This small King has made a great mistake by not investigating his subordinates." King Chu had experienced all sorts of situations before, but in front of Shentu Nantian, he was unable to keep any standing.

This was the absolute pressure brought on by strength. No matter what one's status was, it was completely meaningless in front of strength.

"Please calm down Young Master Nantian, my grandfather was blinded by schemers. Today, everything should be blamed onto that ungrateful rascal, Yi Yun. If not for him, with Young Master Nantian's superior divine strength, how could you be sneaked upon by that old thing? Yi Yun, he..."

Yang Dingkun realized that Shentu Nantian was about to cause trouble for his grandfather, so he quickly said this in an attempt to redirect the spearhead at Yi Yun.

"Shut up!"

Shentu Nantian roared. A sharp sound wave, containing Yuan Qi, formed into a sword and hurled towards Yang Dingkun.

"Peng!"

Yang Dingkun's body shook as his eardrums began to bleed from the tremors.

With a tremble, Yang Dingkun half-kneeled on the ground.

He looked at Shentu Nantian with inexplicable horror. He did not dare to speak another word. A few moments ago, he almost thought he was going to die.

"Do I need you to teach me what to do?"

Shentu Nantian's voice was gloomy. Everyone understand that his rage had reached an extreme with Jiang Xiaorou's escape. At that moment, whoever interacted with him were bound to not end up well.

It would be no surprise for him to suddenly start killing people to vent his anger!

And if he really wanted to do so, Yi Yun... would by no doubt be the first to suffer his wrath!

Step by step, Shentu Nantian walked towards Yi Yun. Blood was dripping from his fingers and onto the granite pavement.

This strong oppressive pressure made people hold their breaths.

"Yi Yun..."

Chu Xiaoran and company, who had good relations with Yi Yun,

had their hearts in their mouth.

The odds were stacked against Yi Yun!

They could only stare on helplessly. As for jokes, such as standing up for Yi Yun to plead for him, that would be useless. It would only result in them accompanying Yi Yun to the grave.

"You sure have guts!" A cold gaze flashed in Shentu Nantian's eyes.

"Boom!"

Yuan Qi exploded around Yi Yun, causing debris to crumble. Yi Yun felt his body tremble as he rolled out. His injuries had become worse!

Shentu Nantian walked before Yi Yun and grabbed his neck.

Yi Yun's body was covered with blood. His vision was blurry and he found it hard to breathe.

At that moment, he could feel that if Shentu Nantian were to even just slightly use some of his strength, he could immediately break his neck and throat. His entire head would be ripped off!

Death seemed to be looming near. His feeling of powerlessness reached an extreme as his life was now in the hands of someone

else!

"It's because of you! Originally, I would have gained a furnace filled with divine blood elixirs. My cultivation level would have increased by leaps and bounds! However... you allowed the Desolate race spy a chance to sneak up on me, causing the little witch girl to escape! You did well! Not even killing you ten thousand times will be enough to appease the hatred in my heart!"

Shentu Nantian pushed all the blame onto Yi Yun.

Jiang Xiaorou's identity was special. To Shentu Nantian, obtaining Jiang Xiaorou would be the greatest fortuitous opportunity, but now, this opportunity had escaped right in front of his eyes. So how could Shentu Nantian not feel hatred!?

Yi Yun laughed bitterly. At this stage, whatever he said would be meaningless.

The only thing to blame was that he was too weak. If not, he would not need to swallow this insult or this humiliation silently while begging Shentu Nantian to let Jiang Xiaorou off and not refine his sister into elixirs.

Pleading did not work, and he had been beaten up. Later Jiang Xiaorou was rescued by someone else, resulting in him becoming the scapegoat and punching bag. He was facing an outcome of death.

Having one's life in the hands of someone else, with no room for resistance, this was the sorrowful truth of the weak.

Shentu Nantian looked at Yi Yun, murderous intent rising in his eyes. However, his hands still did not press down on Yi Yun's neck.

He was silent as several thoughts flashed past his mind.

Killing Yi Yun would not be enough to appease his hatred. This feeling was like being bitten by an ant. Even if he crushed the ant to death, he would still have been bitten, so how could trampling this ant to death relieve his hatred?

This was an irredeemable scene. Shentu Nantian had not been able to capture Jiang Xiaorou and had thus been unable to deal a blow to the Desolate race.

The Desolate race would not feel anything for a dead human. Only Jiang Xiaorou would feel hatred, and it might even end up causing her to attain greatness.

However, what if he made good use of Yi Yun?

Shentu Nantian remembered that Jiang Xiaorou had agreed to give her life to him in order to prevent Yi Yun from being harmed.

Jiang Xiaorou definitely cared a great deal about Yi Yun's safety.

When he thought of this, Shentu Nantian stood up and let Yi Yun go.

He said to an elder behind him, "Take this little bastard away. Announce to the masses that he will be given capital punishment for treachery, death by dismembering the heart!"

Dismembering the heart!?

A few elders jumped with fright as they heard the name of the death sentence.

Dismembering the heart was the most brutal capital punishment of the Shentu family clan. It was only used on warriors, as mortals could not handle such torture.

In a period of 36 days, a red-hot blade would be slashed onto the criminal 36,000 times, 1000 slashes a day!

After each day's slashing, a heart dismembering worm's egg would be placed in the wounds. The eggs would then slowly hatch and eat the flesh and blood. The teeth of the heart dismembering worm larvae were toxic. Once this toxin entered the body, together with the feeling of one's flesh and blood being eaten, it would be indescribable.

Finally, when the 36,000 slashes were completed, the heart dismembering worms would follow the blood vessels and meridians all the way to the heart. There, tens of thousands of

worms would bite at the heart, eventually leading to one's death.

In this capital punishment, the heart dismembering worms caused the most pain. Typical Yuan Foundation realm warriors could not withstand this capital punishment and would die after just a few days of torture. Even when the Shentu family clan carried out the capital punishment, they still had to provide pills to extend the life of the criminal.

"Young Master, are you going to lure the Desolate race into saving him?"

A few elders immediately guessed Shentu Nantian's intentions.

"That is correct. Killing this kid would be no different from squeezing an ant to death. It is meaningless to me, neither can it remedy anything. However, if I were to spread the news that the kid would be executed by dismembering the heart, then that little witch girl would quickly learn of it. In the Chu Prefecture City, there are probably still other Desolate race spies! The news will quickly spread to her ears."

"That little witch girl will not sit idly by. At that moment, we will have an opportunity!"

When the few elders heard this, they slightly sighed. An elder said, "Does this Yi Yun have such great a value? When the Desolate race receives the news, they will definitely know that we have laid a trap. If they know that there is a trap, they will likely not be so dumb as to fall for it. Besides, Yi Yun is a human, so what happens

if the Desolate race does not come to save him?"

Yi Yun was only close to Jiang Xiaorou and had no relations with the Desolate race. Why would the upper echelons of the Desolate race care about Yi Yun's life? How could they send and risk an expert's life to save a human, especially when they knew that there was a trap?

"We will know by trying. There will not be any loss for us. If no one cares about his life, then we will just let him die from a dismembered heart!"

Shentu Nantian said this lightly, determining Yi Yun's fate.

And none of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors standing beside Yi Yun could prevent this.

Just thinking about it made them depressed. This was their country and Yi Yun was their country's genius. A few simple words from Shentu Nantian had been enough to sentenced Yi Yun to death! And now, they could only watch on helplessly!

"We must immediately report this matter to His Majesty, the Divine Emperor!"

Chu Xiaoran made up her mind. Although the Divine Emperor might not save Yi Yun, as the master of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, he definitely had some weight in his words...

At that moment, Shentu Nantian suddenly thought of something. He then walked towards Yi Yun and pinched Yi Yun's jaw.

With a flip of his hand, an icy-blue pill appeared in his palm.

This pill was like a ball of ice. After it appeared, it exuded an alarming frost Qi. The surrounding water vapor quickly condensed, forming ice as a result of the frost Qi.

A single pill was able to exude such a tremendously dangerous aura.

Shentu Nantian looked condescendingly at Yi Yun with a tinge of mockery, "I really do not like the way you look at me... On the surface, you seem to fear me, but in your heart, you deeply hate me. You truly wish to kill me to release your anger, right!?"

"Are you thinking that if you survive this calamity, you will cultivate with all your might and, in the future, seek revenge against me? Hahaha!"

Shentu Nantian read Yi Yun's mind, and his eyes flashed contempt.

"How can I let you wish to kill me all day and night while you are being imprisoned? You are like an ant, and thus do not deserve such thoughts. If you could that, that will be a desecration of my status!"

"Let me cut off your hopes and give you despair as if you are a member of the walking dead."

Chapter 361: Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill

When Shentu Nantian said this, the surrounding people were alarmed. They did not know what he would do to Yi Yun. However, there was no doubt that it would be extremely terrifying.

People looked at the pill in Shentu Nantian's hand, the icy air around it made people shudder with fear!

Shentu Nantian then said to Yi Yun, "To me, you are like an ant. You are not worthy of mention. Your thoughts of killing me are as funny as a mortal beggar telling a human Sage that he will replace him. Besides, you will die in ten days. I will especially prepare a trap for the members of the Desolate race that will come to save you, preventing them from saving you."

"However... even so, I will not give you any chance of revenge. The pill in my hand is called the Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill!"

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he forced open Yi Yun's mouth. His face was still covered with a smile, but the smile was one of ferocity and cruelty.

"The Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill is an extremely expensive pill. You should find it worth your while eating it as a dead person."

"In ten days time, the frost toxins will invade your organs. You seem to be cultivating pure Yang laws? Haha, from today onwards and in ten days time, your pure Yang cultivation will completely

waste away. Even a God cannot save you! At that moment, taking ten thousand steps back, even if you are actually saved by the Desolate race, you will still become a cripple. There is only endless despair waiting for you."

When Shentu Nantian finished speaking, the faces of the people around him turned ugly. Shentu Nantian had reached a point that was so vicious that it was difficult to imagine anything worse. Wasting away a warrior's cultivation level was worse than just killing him.

After being accustomed to the strength and status that martial arts brought to them, many warriors would rather die than have their cultivation levels waste away.

Furthermore, Shentu Nantian was using Yi Yun to lure his sister back, even after feeding him a poison pill, yet the Desolate race would be trying to save a cripple. His methods were so vicious that it made one's hair stand on end!

Yi Yun's mouth was filled with blood. As he looked at Shentu Nantian, he revealed a bitter smile. He had never hated a person so much in his entire life. In contrast, Lian Chengyu, who had made several attempts on Yi Yun's life back then, was actually much better than Shentu Nantian!

"It seems like you really hate me? That look in your eyes, Keke! However, what can you do? If you did not have any use, I would have killed you by now... Of course, killing you cannot compare to the way I am handling you in terms of making you suffer."

Shentu Nantian laughed sinisterly. With a flick of his finger, the Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill was shot straight into Yi Yun's mouth.

"Phew", the pill was sent all the way into Yi Yun's stomach.

In the first few seconds, Yi Yun did not feel a thing. However, what followed was that he suddenly felt his body freeze. This pill carried a terrifying frost Qi. After it rushed into his stomach, it rushed straight towards his dantian.

He felt extremely cold.

That terrifying frost Qi rose up from his dantian, and the pure Yang Yuan Qi he originally cultivated, was quickly eroded by it.

Cold, too cold!

Yi Yun's face turned pale as his body shivered. Surges of frost Qi emanated out from his acupuncture points and pores. The water vapor in the surrounding air condensed, eventually forming ice crystals. A layer of ice froze over Yi Yun's eyebrows and hair.

He tumbled to the ground as he felt like his blood had frozen over and stopped flowing.

"Yi Yun!"

Seeing Yi Yun in such a state, Chu Xiaoran and those who had good relations with Yi Yun felt their hearts ache. Shentu Nantian was inhuman, he was ruthless and unscrupulous, prone to mood swings and had high ambitions!

And Yi Yun would probably end up dying in his hands.

Disasters could not be predicted, who would have thought that the originally high-spirited and promising Yi Yun would become like this in just a matter of days!?

And Yi Yun's cultivation level was quickly being wasted away. Would the Tai Ah Divine Emperor still bother to save him?

Everyone had a value attached to them.

If it was Cang Yan, Grandmaster Yuehua, or the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord, they might be sentimental and take into account the merits which Yi Yun had accomplished. Even though Yi Yun's cultivation level was now crippled, they would still try their best to protect Yi Yun.

However, the Tai Ah Divine Emperor did not know Yi Yun at all. He had only heard of him, but with the country's interest in front of him, how could he go against Shentu Nantian for the sake of a hopeless person, who now had his cultivation level crippled?

Now, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was counting on the Shentu

family clan!

Without any surprises, the Tai Ah Divine Emperor would most likely take it lying down, as if this had never happened...

Just thinking about it made Chu Xiaoran feel a pang of sadness.

At that moment, Shentu Nantian spoke to an elder behind him, "Formulate the edict and inform the world that the beast horde is attacking. Tell the Tai Ah commoners that the legend in their heart, the Tai Ah Divine City, has been lost. Danger will befall even the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's lands!"

Shentu Nantian knew that the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had kept the beast horde a complete secret. However, now there was no need to keep it a secret anymore!

People could guess what Shentu Nantian's intentions were. He wanted to throw the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom into a panic. As such, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's royal household would have to rely on them even more.

And they would also successfully win the hearts of the people. Their status would rapidly advance in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and then, they could justify their action of using the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom as the battlefield for chasing after Jiang Xiaorou.

"This person is vicious and scheming. There is no way to prevent Yi Yun from dying under his hands..." A Tai Ah Divine City proud

son of heaven lamented.

A person like Shentu Nantian was a natural-born leader. His viciousness, determination and unscrupulous methods terrified others. No one would dare disobey the commands of such a person.

As such, Shentu Nantian, who did not belong to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, had now secured his place in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, becoming the person in control of the entire Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

At that moment, Shentu Nantian carried on, "Arrange for Elder Su and Elder Mo to set up a Heaven Earth Empyrean Array. Place Yi Yun in the middle of the array and wait for the Desolate race to bite at the bait. No matter who comes, kill them all!"

"Elder Su... Elder Mo..."

A few elders looked at each other and felt alarmed, "To invite them to do so... to use Yi Yun as bait... Important people from the Desolate race might not come knowing that there is a trap. If we were to disturb the two of them and make them come over for nothing, that would not be good, right...?"

Elder Su and Elder Mo were guests of the Shentu family clan. They were extremely famous in the western regions. They were existences that were treated as distinguished guests no matter which ancient family clan they went to.

They owed the Shentu family clan relational favors, resulting in them being of service to the Shentu family clan for 300 years, and they only had to do a total of three things.

For example, by inviting Elder Su and Elder Mo to set up the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array, that would be considered as them having done one thing for the Shentu family clan, even if an inferior Desolate race member came.

However, if no one from the Desolate race came, then it would not be considered as one of those things, but it would be a waste of their relational favors.

That was why a few of the elders felt that it was raising a big rumpus. Yi Yun was just a human, who was very weak. Was there really a need to do so?

Shentu Nantian said, "I feel that this little bastard is extremely important to that Jiang girl, and that girl has a very special status amongst the Desolate race. When I release this piece of news, it is very likely that a high-ranking member of the Desolate race will come!"

"The Desolate race has crossed over the Divine Wilderness with a huge scheme. To conjure up such a beast horde is not for the simple task of finding a girl. The Shepherd Boy might not even know of the Jiang girl's existence!"

"Hence... even if they were to find the Jiang girl, they might not leave immediately. If we can kill some of the upper echelons of the

Desolate race, then we can track down the girl by following the clues left behind and capture her!"

"Not only is she extremely important in status, but her blood is also extremely pure. It is invaluable. If we can capture her, not only will it be a great fortuitous opportunity for me, it will also be a golden opportunity for the Shentu family clan. For this, it is a must for us to use Elder Su and Elder Mo!"

"This... Alright, we will follow the young master's instructions." The elders retreated and began arranging all the logistics.

Shentu Nantian glanced at Yi Yun and said coldly, "Take him away and lock him up!"

At that moment, Yi Yun's body was covered in ice. White strands started to appear amongst his originally black hair.

This was one of the effects of the Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill.

This pill, as mentioned by Shentu Nantian, was priceless!

Yi Yun did not know how the Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill was refined. He guessed that the ingredients were at least from top-grade primordial strains. There might even be several primordial herbs mixed within it.

One had to know that in such a family clan, even primordial true spirits existed. As for a pill, it was not surprising for it to have a

portion of a primordial true spirit's blood mixed in it.

Under normal circumstances, if a Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill was swallowed, with his cultivation level, all of Yi Yun's meridians and his dantian would be frozen as Shentu Nantian said. Later on, the pure Yang Qi that he cultivated would be slowly eroded by the frosted ice.

At that moment, his meridians would become damaged and his dantian would disappear. With frost toxins in his entire body, his cultivation level would waste away into nothing, and he would become a complete cripple!

This was what Shentu Nantian wanted to see. Although he looked down on Yi Yun, he made it a habit to rid himself of weeds by killing them at their roots. He did not want to see anyone, who had even the tiniest possibility of threatening him, exist in this world.

When Yi Yun was enduring the horrifying icy frost Qi, no one knew that the Purple Crystal Origins in his heart was quietly palpitating. Again and again, the Purple Crystal Origins pulsated with every heartbeat. The frost energy in his body was being subtly absorbed by the Purple Crystal.

If Yi Yun's body was to become a piece of ice, then the Purple Crystal was like a seed of fire in the middle of the ice, giving him a flicker of warmth and light.

With the Purple Crystal's energy flowing through his frozen

meridians, Yi Yun felt that they were gradually showing signs of recovery.

And after the Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill's frost energy was absorbed by the Purple Crystal, it was slowly compressed into a lump within the Purple Crystal.

It was a lump of blue ice crystals. It began to condense within the Purple Crystal, slowly becoming larger in size. Not far away from it was the pure Yang spirit.

A lump of frost blue energy and a lump of golden energy were just a distance away from each other in the purple crystal. Although the energies were the complete opposite in nature, they remained distinct from one another and nothing happened.

The Purple Crystal... was still here...

Yi Yun clutched his chest. In his greatest moment of despair, the Purple Crystal had not abandoned him. It gave Yi Yun his last hope.

Indeed, no matter what happened, the Purple Crystal remained in his body, becoming something that Yi Yun could rely on for eternity.

Chapter 362: Lotus Blooming With Each Step

"Get in there!"

Two guards brought Yi Yun to a chamber in the Chu royal residence and pushed him into it, they then locked Yi Yun's limbs with chains.

Yi Yun fell down to the ice-cold ground and laid down on his back. Every breath coming from him released cold vapor, causing the water in the air to condense.

The chamber's doors and windows were all made of a special metal, engraved with arrays in them. Even if a Human Lord were to be locked in here, he would not have the ability to break out.

Furthermore, there were Chu royal residence guards patrolling outside the door. And further away, there were the legendary figures of the Shentu family clan. Attempting to escape only amounted to wishful thinking.

Though, regardless of this, he had still survived. However... he was only able to live for the time being. The reason was that of Shentu Nantian's obsession with Jiang Xiaorou's blood.

If Shentu Nantian did not hate the Desolate race to such an extreme or wished for a chance to capture Jiang Xiaorou, Yi Yun would have already lost his value, leaving him as a corpse.

Yi Yun found this hard to accept. He did not want his survival to be established on so many what-ifs.

Today had been the closest he had ever come to dying. It was also the moment when he nearly lost the most important person in his life.

In comparison, Lian Chengyu's plots against him in the Cloud Wilderness as well as being hunted by the Golden Crow species in the Fallen Star Gate were much smaller in magnitude.

Death...Yi Yun did not know what it was like. Under the ground, it was cold and dark, with a sense of endless loneliness. Bodies rot there, eventually turning into nothingness...

Yi Yun was a modern person in his previous life. He was not like the warriors of this world. He would not easily risk his own life for a particular matter.

Yi Yun cherished his life. As long as his bottom line was not crossed, Yi Yun will try his very best to live on.

If he could live through this disaster... Then, he never ever wanted his life to be in the hands of someone else, never ever should someone else decide his life.

He would not allow anyone to do so, no matter who it was!

Yi Yun's body remained motionless. In this chamber, in a completely silent environment, he interfaced his spiritual energy with the Purple Crystal. By using the Purple Crystal's powers, he started to slowly refine the frost toxins in his body.

Even in the midst of despair, he was not willing to give up hope. He wanted to give it his all to gain even a slightly better chance of survival.

He knew that he was temporarily safe.

Shentu Nantian was using him to lure out the upper echelons of the Desolate race. As such, they could not maim him too badly. At least he would not be made into a complete cripple, such as the breaking of all of his limbs.

If that happened, when the upper echelons of the Desolate race came, they would realize that Yi Yun was in such a pathetic state and give up on him when they probed him with their perception. This was because saving Yi Yun in such a state would be meaningless. It would only add to Yi Yun's suffering.

This was probably why Shentu Nantian used a Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill to waste away all of Yi Yun's cultivation. By doing so, and by controlling the proliferation of news, then on the surface, it would look like Yi Yun was void of all energy and extremely weak. Like that, the upper echelons of the Desolate race would not know that they were saving a cripple.

This was also Shentu Nantian's plan.

Obviously, Yi Yun would not succumb to his machinations.

There was no concept of time in the chamber due to the lack of light. So as time passed, Yi Yun remained sprawling on the ground, without moving even his fingers. However, in Yi Yun's body, the Purple Crystal had formed a tiny whirlpool. This whirlpool imperceptibly absorbed all of the frost toxins in Yi Yun's body.

Inside the Purple Crystal, the originally small, blue, ice crystal gradually grew bigger.

Although its quality was inferior to the Pure Yang spirit, this incident had accidentally left behind a frost Yin elemental seed within the Purple Crystal...

One day, two days, three days...

Yi Yun looked up towards the sky with his eyes open. He did not move and on the surface, it looked as if he was dead.

However, Yi Yun's injuries were slowly healing. His strength was also quickly recovering.

In his dantian, the Radiant Sun Qi had restarted flowing vigorously, but... Yi Yun used the Purple Crystal to seal the pure Yang energy.

As long as the Purple Crystal absorbed and sealed the energy within itself, then not even Sages could detect it.

At the same time, Yi Yun released the frost energy inside the Purple Crystal throughout his entire body. Because of this, from the surface it still looked as if Yi Yun was poisoned by the frost toxins, and as if his cultivation was nearly wasted away.

There was no night and day in the chamber. The guards of the Chu royal residence would bring a pill and force feed it to Yi Yun every morning. This pill was a life-prolonging pill used to prevent Yi Yun from dying.

The deadline was a few days away. They had to ensure that Yi Yun looked fine, regardless of anything, or they would not be able to lure in the Desolate race.

"Keke! So pitiful. It has been seven days, yet this Yi Yun has not even moved his eyes. If not for his heart still beating, I would have thought he was already dead."

A guard said with a gloating tone.

As a Chu royal residence guard, their status was not low. However, when compared to an elite like Yi Yun they were almost worthless.

It was inevitable that they felt some hatred and jealousy in their hearts. When they saw Yi Yun in such a misfortune, they got the

same feeling as commoners who saw a high ranked official fall.

"Nothing is more lamentable than a dead heart. With your cultivation crippled, you would end up the same when your heart is dismembered a few days later." Another guard said as he fed the pill to Yi Yun.

"Haha! If I were him, I would probably commit suicide now!"

"Commit suicide? Stop dreaming. Young Master Nantian would not let him die. Poisoned by the frost toxin, he does not even have the ability to terminate his own meridians. His limbs are also locked down, so he can only give up hope on committing suicide. With a life-prolonging pill being given to him every day, it is impossible for him to die even if he wishes to. Hai! This world is unpredictable. Who would have guessed that he, who was like the sun in the middle of the day a few days ago, would become a pathetic death row criminal? He has fallen from a heavenly palace and into hell!"

A guard shook his head as he spoke. He knew that the Shentu family clan had invited two enigmatic elders. Both of them had set up a powerful large array to lay down the bait.

In a few days, high-ranking Desolate race members might come to break through this virtually unbreakable large array to save a complete cripple.

Just thinking of this made the two guards feel like there was something fun to look forward to.

They really wanted to know what kind of facial expressions the upper echelons of the Desolate race would have when they saved Yi Yun, only to find out that he was now a cripple.

...

The ninth day.

Shentu Nantian looked at the sky. The Sun was about to set and tomorrow was the last day. If the upper echelons of the Desolate race did not come, then Yi Yun would be put to death.

"Young Master Nantian, I am afraid that the Desolate race will not come. Setting up this Heaven Earth Empyreal Array was not cheap..."

Beside Shentu Nantian was an elder in white robes. His eyebrows were very long and hung down like two white snakes.

The Heaven Earth Empyreal Array needed the blood essence of primordial strains in order to draw the array lines. 108 refined desolate bones were also needed to be used as the array flags.

Creating this set of array flags was costly. Furthermore, this kind of array flags could not be permanently used. A portion of their lifespans would be consumed with every use.

Shentu Nantian then said, "Elder Su, Elder Mo, I wish that you do not take this lightly. That witch girl is of a very special status amongst the Desolate race. Her wishes would be valued greatly by the Desolate race. The Heaven Earth Empyrean Array may be expensive, but if we can capture a few high ranking Desolate race members, as well as stop this beast horde, then we can even take this opportunity to capture that witch girl. If we do, then this amount of investment can essentially be ignored."

The two elders did not reply. They went back to their own positions to meditate and rest. They were recuperating to ensure that they would be in tip-top condition.

However, to the two elders, this obvious trap would likely not give any returns. No high-ranking Desolate race member would want to come seeking death.

The moon was high up in the sky as a night wind blew through the Chu Prefecture City.

On a mountain in the city outskirts, a lone, silver wolf howled while facing the silver like full moon.

The lone wolf howled.

Beside the silver wolf was a youth holding a bamboo flute that was not more than a foot long. He stood there in solitude.

His eyes like deep, dark, black gemstones. It reflected lights that

were brighter than the stars. Behind the youth was a vast galaxy. The silver light was like a waterfall falling from the sky. The scene was reminiscent to that of a dream.

The green-clothed youth looked into the distance towards the Chu Prefecture City. The night wind blew up his green hair band as it fluttered in the wind.

Under the night sky, the Chu Prefecture City was like a huge black beast that was just waiting for his arrival.

The green-clothed youth took a step on the flowing wind and started levitating...

"Huh!?"

Elder Su and Elder Mo, who were meditating, suddenly opened their eyes. They had simultaneously felt a strong presence approaching.

And it was not the Yuan Qi energy of humans, but the surging Power of Desolates!

Power of Desolates... Desolate race!?

They really came!?

The eyes of the two elders flashed. They leaped up into the sky

and flew with a golden beam trailing their feet. One of them held a golden sword while the other held a bronze mirror. They were like two gods of war flying in the air.

It was unexpected that with the two of them there, and with the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array, that a Desolate race member was actually willing to come to his death!

To come alone was a military taboo. Besides, they were fresh and fit, with a trap set up. This member of the Desolate race was absolutely crazy!

At that moment, Shentu Nantian also flew out from a palace. He was extremely excited that a member of the Desolate race would actually come.

With this, his plan had a meaning to it.

If the Desolate race did not bother with Yi Yun, then even if Yi Yun's heart was dismembered in a day's time, it would just be the execution of a cripple. It would be no different from stepping on an ant.

However, now, even if he could not capture Jiang Xiaorou, he would still gain a lot just from capturing a high-ranking Desolate race member!

"I wonder what the lineup is. I hope that I will not be disappointed." Shentu Nantian thought. He was estimating that

the Desolate race would send at least seven or eight experts, to help each other out to reduce the risk.

However, when he saw the person who had come, Shentu Nantian was stunned.

A green-clothed youth was slowly walking on thin air.

His movements were calm and elegant. With every step he took, there would be starlight condensing together before it bloomed like a green lotus.

Sliding over water, lotus blooming with each step!

His steps seemed very slow, but every step he took seemed to contract the distance under his feet. A few seconds ago, he was along the horizons, but now, he was already right above the Chu royal residence's thanks to his calm steps.

"Shepherd Boy!"

Shentu Nantian's eyes flashed coldly!

Chapter 363: Trap

Ten years ago, the Shentu family clan had fought the Shepherd Boy. Shentu Nantian still clearly remembered that the green-clad youth in front of him had killed several of his clansmen. There was an irreconcilable feud between them!

"You really have guts. Even though you know that there was a trap, you still dared to come alone. Today, you are going to die!"

Shentu Nantian's nerves tightened. He was unable to muster up any courage against the Shepherd Boy, who was a very powerful member of the Desolate race, even though he had the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array, Elder Su and Elder Mo. He even had a hidden last resort as his trump card.

The Shepherd Boy had left an enormous psychological scar on him in the battle ten years ago.

The Shepherd Boy glanced at Shentu Nantian. It seemed like two bolts of lightning from his black eyes had pierced through the air. The bolts brought with them an unmatched aura that penetrated straight to the heart!

At that moment, Shentu Nantian's face paled. He felt that the Shepherd Boy's eyes had seen through him. That glare was sufficient enough to harm him!

Shentu Nantian retreated a few steps in the air. At that moment, Elder Su had stood in front of Shentu Nantian with a bronze

mirror.

As a result, the pressure on Shentu Nantian decreased.

"Young Master Nantian, he is just an empty show of strength. The current him is different from the one ten years ago!" Elder Su looked at the Shepherd Boy with a sneer.

...

At that moment in the Chu royal residence, many people rushed out of their residences knowing that an expert of the Desolate race had arrived. They looked up into the sky awaiting the battle.

They were both excited and nervous.

"That is the Shepherd Boy?"

It was the first time the people from the Chu royal residence had seen the Shepherd Boy.

The warring parties were both existences that they found difficult to raise their heads up to. This battle was definitely going to be earth-shattering. To them, this was a rare experience.

"Let us keep a distance away. If we get hit by any stray attacks from the battle, our bodies will definitely turn to dust..."

The people from the Chu royal residence knew their own strengths. Even King Chu was taken a distance 5 kilometers away from the Shepherd Boy and company by the convoy of his guards.

With the vision of warriors, they could still clearly see the details of the battle in the night sky, even from a distance of 5 kilometers.

At that moment, in the center of the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array, where the royal residence's chamber was, Yi Yun lifted his head. He looked up at the sky with the chamber's arrays blocking him.

At that moment, someone's perception swept across him. Even though he was surrounded by arrays, the arrays were unable to prevent this person's perception.

He knew that someone from the Desolate race had come!

Jiang Xiaorou had after all sent an expert from the Desolate race to make a move.

He had never expected that he would be backed into a corner when the Desolate race attacked by setting off a beast horde that could wipe out the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

However, it later turned out that the Shentu family clan, which was like a savior, had sentenced him to death, resulting in him on relying on the Desolate race to save him.

Such shocking situation reversals were extremely ironic.

...

"Shepherd Boy, since you are here today, stay behind! For the battle ten years ago, you borrowed a Primitive Sacred Desolate Beast, the Divine Lion from the Nether World Desolate God. It was indeed powerful, but that Divine Lion was seriously injured by our Ancestor. It's not bad that it still lives to this day, but without the Divine Lion, you are only left with an old Long Gui. You are like a tiger without claws, so what is there to fear?"

"He won't have the Long Gui!" At that moment, Shentu Nantian interjected, "I purposely set a period of ten days, so that he has to hurry here from the Divine Wilderness. That old Long Gui may be strong, but it's speed is extremely slow. How can a typical teleportation array send it through due to its size? Hence... that old Long Gui did not come at all!"

Shentu Nantian sneered. To rush from the Divine Wilderness to King Chu's city in ten days was quite a feat, considering that there was a time lag between the Shepherd Boy receiving the news and setting off.

"That's right, he doesn't even have the Long Gui True Spirit." As Elder Su spoke, a phantom image appeared behind him. It was a thousand-hand Buddha and in front of the Buddha, there was a bronze lamp that burned slowly.

This was Elder Su's Aspect Totem!

"A thousand-hand Buddha as an Aspect Totem?"

This was the first time the people from Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had seen such an Aspect Totem. The Aspect Totem was hundreds of feet tall. When it was conjured, it pierced the sky, and was as if a Buddha the size of a mountain was standing behind Elder Su.

This scene was extremely shocking.

Before this, the Aspect Totems they saw were much smaller, even for Sages.

And at that moment, colorful Aspect Totems lit up like torches from all corners of the Chu royal residence.

Elders from the Shentu family clan and their guests all flew up into the night sky.

All of them were famous figures. Typically, they would seldom team up to fight against someone due to their extraordinary status.

However, today, ten Shentu family clan Elders, together with Elder Su and Elder Mo, a total of 12 peerless figures, surrounded the Shepherd Boy from all corners.

Against the Shepherd Boy, they had to go all out and use whatever means possible.

If they could kill the Shepherd Boy, it would be a great achievement. The Shentu family clan would definitely reward them with invaluable items.

The Shepherd Boy was encircled by them, and beneath his feet was the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array that the Shentu family clan had carefully prepared!

"Shepherd Boy, your Desolate race is essentially no different from beastmasters. Without the prehistoric sacred beasts under your command, I don't believe you can escape!" Elder Mo, who was dressed in black, pointed his golden sword at the Shepherd Boy.

The Shepherd Boy glanced at Elder Mo and said calmly, "Your Aspect Totem has not even managed to enter your body... Your cultivation level is just so-so." The Shepherd Boy's voice was calm as his green clothes fluttered.

"The nerve!" After being looked down upon by the Shepherd Boy, Elder Mo's eyes flashed coldness, "Ten years ago, you were hit by our Ancestor's Death Heavenly Revolution. Even now, you are still injured, yet you dare to speak so recklessly. I wonder who gave you that confidence!"

The battle ten years ago had the Shepherd Boy use the Divine Lion against the Shentu Patriarch.

As a beastmaster, the Divine Lion he borrowed from the Nether World Desolate God was the Shepherd Boy's greatest strength.

However, that Divine Lion had been seriously injured by the Shentu Patriarch.

At the same time, the Shepherd Boy had been hit by the Shentu Patriarch's Death Heavenly Revolution!

The Shentu Patriarch's strength could only be described as unfathomable! However, he had suffered injuries from that battle and has been in reclusive healing ever since.

Elder Mo was sure that the Shepherd Boy was more injured than the Shentu Patriarch was ten years ago. That was the reason why he had retreated, as for that Death Heavenly Revolution, it was impossible to dissipate it once it was struck one's body.

Now, the Shentu Patriarch's strength had not even recovered 60% of his strength, so how much could the Shepherd Boy recover?

The Shepherd Boy remained silent and did not acknowledge Elder Mo.

Suddenly, he turned around a tiny bit and looked somewhere into thin air. With the bamboo flute in his hand, the Shepherd Boy lightly waved his sleeves, "Come on out! I know you are hiding in the shadows."

The thin air remained still as no one responded.

The Shepherd Boy raised the bamboo flute to his chest silently

before saying in a deep voice, "Do you want me to invite you out?"

At that moment, a shrill laugh came out from the thin air. It made the scalps of the surrounding people tingle.

"I was just accompanying the Shentu family clan with their foray into the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and I had no intentions on doing anything. However, with you coming in person, how could I miss it?"

The hoarse voice made people shudder. The people from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom were so alarmed that they did not speak a single word. The 12 legendary figures from before, especially Elder Su and Elder Mo, were extraordinarily strong. Even Shentu Nantian treated them with absolute respect.

However, now, there was actually a person hiding in the shadows? And it seemed that this person was the strongest amongst all of them!

Chapter 364: Order Of Heaven And Earth

A ripple suddenly appeared in the thin air. Space was torn apart as a black bell flew out of the void.

"Dang!"

A loud ring sounded from the bell, resounding throughout the entire area. It shook the entire Chu Prefecture City.

With the bell appearing, a old man, wearing a black cloak with a stooped back, slowly walked out of a black mist. There was a thick aura of death being exuded from him.

"As I guessed, it is you, the Myriad Empyreal King."

The Shepherd Boy looked at the black-cloaked person who had suddenly appeared, without any change in his expression.

However, when the warriors of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom in the Chu Prefecture City heard the title of Myriad Empyreal King they gasped.

Myriad Empyreal King...

Ten Thousand was a title, while Empyreal King was the name of the person's realm.

In fact, a lot of people in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom were not sure of what the names of the realms above the Sage realm were. Empyreal King was by no doubt in the realm of a Great Emperor. As for how strong he was amongst the Great Emperors, they had no idea.

Great Emperors were too mysterious for them.

"It is nice of you to remember me, hehe." The black cloaked man insidiously smiled. He slowly lifted off the hood covering his head. With that, people saw a face that made them feel like vomiting.

The cloaked man's face was filled with wrinkles and scars. Most of his hair had fallen off, leaving behind only a few strands of hair. His neck, face and skin were all baggy. It looked like it were about to fall off due to rot.

The person in front of them looked as if he had crawled out from a grave. Such a look made people not want to take a second glance.

"He is still alive even in that state?"

The Tai Ah Divine City warriors were extremely alarmed. An old man's corpse that had begun to rot after a month would probably be in a better shape than he was.

"Of course I remember. I am just curious about how you are still alive. You cultivated the Ten Thousand Ghost Dao, to the point of going astray. And now, you are in a state where you are neither

ghost nor man... To carry on living like this requires a great deal of courage."

The Shepherd Boy used a calm tone of voice to say what were obviously mocking and vicious words. However, the way he said it made people unable to detect the sarcasm, it sounded more like he was stating a general fact.

When people heard him, they shuddered. In this situation, with so many experts surrounding him, while situated inside such a large array, the Shepherd Boy was still able to calmly taunt his opponents.

The Myriad Empyrean King's face sank, "Good! Good! Today, I want to see what qualifications you have to be so arrogant!"

"Attack!"

The Myriad Empyrean King was the first to make a move. He cried out in a strange way and a gigantic, blood-colored skeleton appeared behind him.

This blood-colored skeleton was a thousand feet tall. It looked like blood intertwined with the full moon!

"Shoo! Shoo! Shoo!"

The blood-colored skeleton melted in the air, turning in a blood-colored sea. It reversed directions and swept towards the Myriad

Empyrean King, and finally, the blood-colored sea completely merged with the Myriad Empyrean King's body.

In an instant, the Myriad Empyrean King's rotted body became blood-red. At that moment, he looked like a blood-colored Shura who had climbed out from Hell.

"The Aspect Totem entered his body!"

King Chu said with surprise five kilometers away. He did not know what realm merging one's Aspect Totem into one's body was, but he did remember that the Shepherd Boy had previously said, "Your Aspect Totem has not even managed to enter your body... Your cultivation level is just so-so."

Clearly, merging one's Aspect Totem into one's body was the goal of those peerless mighty existences.

The Myriad Empyrean King struck with a palm. The palm swept up a surging tidal wave of blood. One could also faintly see white bones within it, and one could also hear the ghastly wails of ghosts roar!

Against this tidal wave, the Shepherd Boy did not take one step back. He lightly flicked his green long sleeves and pressed down against the tidal wave with one palm.

A large green hand appeared out of thin air, one that could block out the sky!

"Boom!"

The blood wave dissipated into a bloody mist before it disappeared into the night sky. The Shepherd Boy did not retreat at all. His deep, black eyes saw through the blood mist and locked on to the Myriad Empyrean King, "You are already half a step into the netherworld. Since you do not have the courage to take that final step, let me send you on your way!"

The Myriad Empyrean King looked at him ferociously as he roared, "What are you waiting for!? Activate the large array and join forces to kill him!"

"Right, attack! We have so many people, and he still has injuries. He will definitely be no match for us!"

"Without the Primitive Sacred Desolate Beast at his command, he is nothing to fear!"

Several legendary experts attacked together. At the same time, the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array beneath them started to emit a ghastly blue light. A visible energy shield then encased this part of the world!

The Heaven Earth Empyrean Array was an array that countered the Desolate race. Once the array was activated, there would be a closed domain spanning the radius of 5 kilometers. In this domain, the Power of Desolates would be greatly reduced.

The Power of Desolates was the source of the Desolate race's energy. Now, whenever the Shepherd Boy used an attack, he had to exert a force to counter the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array!

To resist the array and face off against the attacks of so many people alone, it would naturally be very disadvantageous for the Shepherd Boy!

However, even though this was the case, the Shepherd Boy still had to enter the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array. That was because Yi Yun was sealed within the heart of the great array by the Shentu family clan!

A few legends of the Shentu family clan attacked together. In an instant, the beams of Aspect Totems lit up the dark sky. Terrifying Heaven Earth Yuan Qi condensed together to form a gushing divine fountain!

In the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array, the strength of humans would not be reduced, it would instead increase!

"With the ten of us joining forces, you will definitely turn to dust!"

A few of the Shentu family clan's legends set up a battle array, which increased their strength. The force from one strike was earth-shattering!

The Shepherd Boy however transcended them. His expression did not flinch at all, for there was no sadness or happiness in it.

He bathed in the moonlight of the nine heavens, as if he was a god that had descended from the heavens.

He made his move. No one saw how he attacked, all they saw was a green flash that looked like a green, hundred thousand feet waterfall, traversing the starry sky.

"Ah!"

A legendary expert of the Shentu family clan, who was previously antagonizing, suddenly let out a scream. It was as if he had hit a mountain at high speed. He flew backward, his sternum and ribs on both sides now completely shattered. His chest sank inwards as his organs ruptured! He spat blood out from his mouth!

"What!?"

The Shepherd Boy managed to counterattack even when alone against the ten legends' combined efforts. At the same time, he had seriously injured one of them!

Furthermore, this was within the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array. In this array, his strength was greatly reduced!

"Elder Sun!"

A legendary expert of the Shentu family clan turned around to save the old man. However, at that moment, a silk like strand of a green beam flashed past his body. This strand was clearly condensed of extreme amounts of energy. It cut through thin air at an incredulous speed.

"Puah!"

Blood dyed the sky as the heavily injured legendary expert's head flew out. His neck had been split apart just like the thin air!

Injuring all of a man's fingers was not as effective as merely chopping one off. The Shepherd Boy knew that this battle today would not be easy. So his goal was not to heavily injure the enemy, but to kill them!

Seeing the head fly up high in the sky, people were stunned.

To the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors, this was a battle that exceeded their comprehension.

As for the people of the Shentu family clan, they were all frightened and distraught.

Shentu Nantian had long since retreated to the far back. He was only a junior and had no qualifications to participate in this battle.

He watched on helplessly as Elder Sun was killed by the Shepherd Boy. He could not even tell how the Shepherd Boy had attacked!

"How can this happen?" Shentu Nantian frowned. He had set up the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array, why did it not seem to affect the Shepherd Boy at all?!

"Do not panic. With us combining forces, there is no way that we will lose! He must have used brute strength to break through the array's shackles. This will be extremely taxing on him!"

A legendary expert of the Shentu family clan said. He did not believe that the Shepherd Boy had the strength to turn the tide under this situation.

As long as morale was upkept, they could combine forces and, step by step, the Shepherd Boy would soon run out of energy!

However, just as that legendary expert finished speaking, he saw a blur. A figure flashed before him like a ghost. It was like a vast amount of green smoke condensed before him.

The Shepherd Boy appeared right before the old man, without any expression. He then attacked with a palm strike!

What!?

The elder's soul jumped out of his body. When he said those words, he was on full alert. He did not feel any spatial fluctuations

in energy, but still the Shepherd Boy suddenly appeared in front him like a ghost. He had instantaneously traversed a thousand feet through the void, far exceeding the elder's reaction time!

Against the terrifying male of the Desolate race, the Shepherd Boy, this elder felt as if Death itself had descended on him. That pressure, this fear could not be described with words!

Even though he had spoken with confidence and logic, his hair was now standing on end, and his face had turned pale.

It was too terrifying. He was unbeatable!

In a split second, the elder knew that escape was no longer a possibility. He roared and ignored the palm strike from the Shepherd Boy. He circulated his body's Yuan Qi and slashed at the Shepherd Boy's chest with a saber!

He wanted to risk his life to take a life!

Since he could not block the Shepherd Boy's attack, he could only use this method to force the Shepherd Boy to defend!

However, the Shepherd Boy remained expressionless. His palm carried on descending.

Risking his life?

The Shepherd Boy had spent his entire life in the Divine Wilderness, and now stood above this world. How could he risk his life with a Shentu family clan's elder?

"Boom!"

As the palm struck the elder's chest, the elder's body suddenly shrunk. Even the space around him collapsed. His sternum fractured and his heart and lungs burst. He turned in a mass of blood.

However when the elder's saber finally slashed down, the Shepherd Boy's body suddenly disappeared!

He had calmly retreated to a few hundred feet away with peerless gracefulness. His green clothes fluttered as they remain clean from even a single drop of blood. Even his hands were clean of blood, it was as if he had not fought. His hands sparkled like jade, as if he had never struck out with his palm.

The second legendary figure had died!

Several kilometers away, Shentu Nantian's face was pale. How could this happen? Even when the Shepherd Boy was at his peak ten years ago, he was not that strong, even with the Divine Lion's battle strength!

Ten years ago, although it was said to be a battle between the Shepherd Boy and the Shentu Patriarch, the one really fighting

was the Divine Lion. The Shepherd Boy was only playing a supporting role.

Back then, the Shepherd Boy had definitely not been a match for the Shentu Patriarch.

As for the Divine Lion, it was a sacred beast owned by the Nether World Desolate God. It did not have any relations with the Shepherd Boy as it was just lent to him.

Hence, Shentu Nantian's impression of the Shepherd Boy's strength was that it was equivalent to the early stages of Great Emperor.

Shentu Nantian would not be afraid of such strength at all, as the Myriad Empyrean King, who had been hiding in the shadows, had already exceeded this realm.

With the support of the great array, this was supposed to be foolproof.

However, the turn of events had gone far beyond his expectations!

The Shepherd Boy was so strong that it was unbelievable!

According to common sense, the Shepherd Boy, at his previous cultivation realm, should not be able to increase his strength this much in the short span of ten years!

Did something happen to the Shepherd Boy in the past decade?

Even if something did happen, Shentu Nantian could not understand how the Shepherd Boy was able to completely ignore the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array.

Or could it be just as the Shentu family clan's legendary expert, who had just died, said? That the Shepherd Boy had forcefully gathered his strength in order to break through the shackles of the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array. If so, then every strike of his would expend a great deal of energy, weakening him at a rapid pace!

If this was true, then they were bound to win if they dragged the battle out!

However, at that moment, the Shentu family clan's legendary experts before him were all lacking confidence. The Shepherd Boy was too terrifying. He had attacked twice, and both the attacks had killed one of the Shentu family clan elders!

This was also under the restraint and threats of the others. It was as if he could ignore the presence of everyone!

No one dared to speak another word while facing the Shepherd Boy. They were now all silent because the past two times the Shepherd Boy attacked, he killed the two elders that spoke the most.

They had taunted the Shepherd Boy, but were killed shortly after!

"So that is why..." A thousand feet away from the Shepherd Boy, the Myriad Empyrean King had witnessed the two times the Shepherd Boy attacked. His expression turned serious, "You have already grasped the Order of Heaven and Earth. And the Order you have gained insight in, has the ability to manipulate the world's Power of Desolates, allowing you to ignore the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array..."

The Heaven Earth Empyrean Array was also a type of law. To be precise, all the arrays in the martial world belonged to a type of law.

When the laws a warrior grasped far exceeded the array's laws, then that array would not be able to restrain him.

The Shepherd Boy was in such a state. The Order which he controlled was something the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array could compare to at all.

Hearing the words of the Myriad Empyrean King, the Shentu family clan elders held their breaths.

Grasped the Order of Heaven and Earth? This had nothing to do with one's cultivation level, it was one's attainment in the laws. It meant that a warrior's achievements in a particular law had reached its peak!

The Shepherd Boy did not comment as he gently wiped his interspatial ring and took out a sword.

This sword was entirely white, like jade. It did not reflect any light like metals do.

However... this sword was not made of jade but bone.

This was a Primitive Sacred Desolate Beast's bone that had been ground into a sword!

The sword's blade was four feet long, but its hilt was extremely short, just four inches long.

The sword's blade and hilt were connected together without a guard. However, on the hilt, there were nine nomological seals. It emitted a mysterious yet ancient aura.

"The sword's name is Illusionary Bone."

The Shepherd Boy said lightly as he pointed the white sword blade towards the Myriad Empyreal King!

Chapter 365: The Yang Brothers' Idea

The Myriad Empyreal King's expression turned ugly when the Shepherd Boy pointed at him with the sword, "You think I am like them?"

That night, amongst those who fought for the Shentu family clan, the Myriad Empyreal King was the strongest. Following behind him were Elder Su and Elder Mo, the two elders who were not in the family.

As for the other ten elders, and legendary experts, they were the weakest.

The two people the Shepherd Boy killed were two of the ten normal elders.

Hence, although the Shepherd Boy seemed overwhelmingly strong, the Myriad Empyreal King was not scared out of his wits by the Shepherd Boy. A dense deathly aura emitted from his body as he opposed the Shepherd Boy!

"Things do not look optimistic..." Several kilometers away, Shentu Nantian's expression had turned ugly. The events of tonight had gone far beyond his original expectations.

The large array he had set up, along with all the experts he had gathered here to await the enemy falling into the trap, was all foiled by the Shepherd Boy alone. He had even killed two people!

Now, it was still a mystery if the Myriad Empyreal King could actually defeat the Shepherd Boy!

If he could not prevent the Shepherd Boy from leaving today, then when Shentu Nantian returned to his family, those who were at odds with him in the family would attack him with this.

Even in the Shentu family clan, there was competition over power and benefits. Shentu Nantian's existence naturally harmed the prospects of others.

"Young Master Nantian, that... Should we take this opportunity to get rid of Yi Yun?"

At that moment, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng came to the Shentu Nantian's side and suggested this without much confidence.

The way Shentu Nantian had previously done things was still fresh in their minds. Especially so for Yang Dingkun. Just after Jiang Xiaorou escaped, he had interjected, hoping to redirect the spear head from King Chu onto Yi Yun. However, with a shout from Shentu Nantian, his eardrums had burst, resulting in him bleeding. He himself even knelt down at that moment.

Back then, Yang Dingkun even thought that he was dead.

Against Shentu Nantian, Yang Dingkun had a psychological scar,

so he did not dare to speak boldly.

However, he had to suggest this matter at that moment. From the current situation, there was a possibility that the Shepherd Boy would be able to rescue Yi Yun!

They had offended Yi Yun badly, and had done all sorts of things to add insult to injury. If they did not take this opportunity to get Yi Yun killed. Then, if something was to happen in the future...

Previously, Yi Yun's talent had appalled Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng. In the four kingdoms' alliance tournament, Yi Yun had defeated Feng Lin, then Bai, and finally he battered the elites of the Yun Long Divine Kingdom. He was almost non-human!

Although Yi Yun was already crippled now, they would rather be safe than sorry!

Seeing the Shepherd Boy and his heaven defying methods, what if he had the means to heal Yi Yun?

Even if he could not be completely healed, just being partially healed would be more than enough to torture the two brothers!

Furthermore, even if Yi Yun was completely crippled, he could still find his elder sister and send someone from the upper echelons of the Desolate race to kill the two of them. It would be as easy as child's play!

Just thinking about it made Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng feel fear. Hence, they had to muster up their courage and talk to Shentu Nantian!

"Oh?" Shentu Nantian's voice turned cold. "Do you think that my Shentu family clan is destined to be defeated in tonight's battle?"

Yi Yun could only be saved by the Shepherd Boy if Shentu Nantian's plan failed!

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng immediately shivered. Their faces turned white with fright. Shentu Nantian's had mood swings, and once his anger burst out, no one would know what their outcomes would be.

"No, we do not mean that. How could that happen... It is just..."

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng were sweating profusely. They wanted to force out an explanation, but seeing Shentu Nantian's cold eyes, their voices began to tremble.

Facing Shentu Nantian was like a mortal facing a powerful desolate beast. They could lose their lives at any moment.

Although Shentu Nantian's eyes were cold, he was not against Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng's proposal.

In fact, Shentu Nantian did not think that the Shepherd Boy had any means of healing Yi Yun.

That was a Seven Noxious Divine Yin Pill, which had an extremely strong frost power to it. That sort of pill was originally used by peak-Sages for them to cultivate in the frost ice laws. It could be used to increase one's insight in the laws and deepen one's cultivation level.

The medicinal properties of a pill used by peak-Sages were extremely violent. What sort of outcome would happen when used on a Yuan Foundation warrior?

Furthermore, the frost toxins had already been in Yi Yun's body for ten days. Even a god could not save him now.

However, he still agreed with Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng. There was nothing wrong with being meticulous and making sure to prevent any possible future troubles.

Shentu Nantian slightly sighed and spoke to Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng, "What you say does make sense. You must rid the roots of everything to prevent any future trouble. You can enter the chamber and kill Yi Yun!"

"W... We?"

When Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng heard this, they were dumbfounded. They had originally thought that Shentu Nantian would send someone from the Shentu family clan to finish Yi Yun. They never expected him to send them.

Yi Yun may be a cripple now and nothing to be feared. In fact, they really wished to kill Yi Yun, and do all sorts of terrible things to him, to enjoy the pleasure of revenge.

However, the critical point was that the Shepherd Boy was still up in the sky!

The Shepherd Boy's power was unfathomable. Such an expert had great senses. When he discovered that they entered the array's core, couldn't the Shepherd Boy just blow some air at them to turn them to ash?

Wasn't this courting death?

"Hmph! What a bunch of cowards. The Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's array disk is in my hand. With the array disk, I can send you directly into the array core!"

"There is a barrier in the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's core. Although the Shepherd Boy can ignore the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's laws and still use the Power of Desolates, the array core has a strong shield that separates it from the outside world! No matter what laws are understood, one cannot ignore this energy shield."

"Therefore, if the Shepherd Boy wants to enter the array core, he needs to use brute force. It is not that the Shepherd Boy cannot break through the barrier, but the crux of the issue is that he still needs to face the Myriad Empyrean King!"

"The Myriad Empyreal King is not necessarily weaker than the Shepherd Boy, so how would the Shepherd Boy dare divert his attention to break through the barrier while in battle? Even with the Shepherd Boy's strength, he will need several seconds to break through this barrier! And these few seconds are enough for a powerful person like the Myriad Empyreal King to do several things!"

Shentu Nantian explanation seemed reasonable.

Although Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng were still afraid, they did not feel like it was something that would be certain to send them to their deaths.

In fact, Yang Dingkun even wanted to ask, since it is so safe, why do you not do it yourself?

Of course, he absolutely did not have the guts to say that.

"What are you waiting for? Do you want me to personally kill the ant-like Yi Yun?"

Shentu Nantian's voice turned cold, causing Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng to jump up with fright. They did not dare act against Shentu Nantian's orders.

At that moment, they were lamenting in their hearts. They hoped that whatever Shentu Nantian said was true and that he had

not deceived them. They really had nothing better to do but to give themselves something to do.

Even if Yi Yun might one day recover from his injuries, it was still better than facing the Shepherd Boy now.

"Do not worry. I will not send you to your deaths. The Shepherd Boy and Myriad Empyreal King are going to fight soon. I will send you into the array core when their battle is at its greatest intensity!"

"At that moment, the Shepherd Boy will have absolutely no time to attend to other things, otherwise, it would just be suicide!"

Shentu Nantian confidently said. Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng looked at each other, lamenting in their hearts. At that moment, it seemed like they could only bite down hard and do it.

Chapter 366: Settling Scores

In the sky, the Shepherd Boy and the Myriad Empyreal King had finally begun fighting. The sealing laws of the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array were not effective. At the same time, the Shentu family clan's elders joined in the battle against the Shepherd Boy.

With the Myriad Empyreal King as their leader, Elder Su and Elder Mo, together with the other legendary experts formed a large array to aid him.

When the Myriad Empyreal King used his Ghost Dao laws, a ghastly wail resounded in the sky over a radius of 50 kilometers.

A sea of blood emerged, covering the full moon with a bloody shadow.

Against the Myriad Empyreal King who was going all out, the Shepherd Boy brandished the beast bone sword. Nine runes on the sword lit up one after the other.

"Now is the time!"

A few kilometers away from the battle scene, Shentu Nantian noticed that the Myriad Empyreal King and the Shepherd Boy were about to start their intense battle. He suddenly grabbed Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng and at the same time, the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array's array disk flew up into the air and spun above Shentu Nantian's head.

The array began shimmering. Shentu Nantian threw both Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng into the array.

At that moment, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng's hearts went tight, "Young Master Nantian, hold on! The Shepherd Boy hasn't made his move yet, now is not the time!"

Before Yang Yuefeng could finish his sentence, he had been thrown into the array's light. In front of Shentu Nantian, how could Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng have the ability to resist ?

"Ah!"

The two brothers let out a scream and felt space distort. They were being warped into the array.

Behind them, Shentu Nantian sneered, "Good luck to the two of you. If you can alert the Shepherd Boy and force him to kill the two of you, then it will be a worthy death."

Although the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array's core had a protective barrier and the Shepherd Boy was busy fighting the Myriad Empyreal King, it was still a question of what the Shepherd Boy would recklessly do as a result of his rage when Yi Yun was really killed.

Besides, Shentu Nantian himself had a feud with the Shepherd Boy, so he definitely would not take the risk.

However, if it was Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng, then it did not matter. If they could anger the Shepherd Boy and distract him into killing them, then there might be a chance for the Myriad Empyrean King to sneak up on him. It would be putting them to good use.

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng only felt space distort and the next moment, they were already in the Chu royal residence's underground chambers.

...

"Oh?"

High in the sky, the Shepherd Boy noticed something. He swept his perception over the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's core. He clearly knew that people had just entered the core a moment ago.

The Shepherd Boy's perception pierced through the barrier and clung onto Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng's bodies.

Seeing the two of them, the Shepherd Boy turned silent. He did not make any moves, but at that moment, the Myriad Empyrean King in front of him had let out a strange squeal. A palm strike came towards him. That palm formed a black ghastly claw in the sky, as it came flying towards the Shepherd Boy's face.

The Shepherd Boy flew backward and slashed with his sword. A

white flame burned on the white bone sword.

This flame was immaculate and pure. There was not a single trace of any other color, as if it was the Order of Heaven and Earth burning.

Boom!

When the ghastly claw struck the sword beam, a divine beam shot into the sky, and the sounds of wailing ghosts rang. The light of the tumultuous energy poured onto the Chu royal residence from above.

The palaces were built from all kinds of hard and precious stones; however, under the explosive force of the light from the energy, they were destroyed like they were sand castles.

People watched helplessly as the Chu royal residence's main hall was struck by a white beam before it disintegrated. It did not collapse, nor did it crumble, but it turned into dust after being struck by the white light. Later, the dust dissipated away; it was a complete annihilation!

"Terrifying!"

At that moment, King Chu's face was pale. He did not have the time to be concerned about the array-laden palace that he had spent a lot of resources building. Now, lives were at stake. Two Great Emperor realm experts were exchanging blows, so who

knows what would happen?

"Send the command. Evacuate all the commoners of Chu Prefecture City. Evacuate everyone in the royal residence too!"

The Myriad Empyreal King was definitely not someone who was kindhearted. As the Shepherd Boy said, he had cultivated an ancient evil cultivation technique, so it was impossible to wish that he was a kindhearted person.

As for the other person, the Shepherd Boy, he may look handsome, but he was after all a member of the Desolate race. He would not show any mercy when he killed humans, just like how humans slaughtered desolate beasts mercilessly!

"Boom!"

The Shepherd Boy and the Myriad Empyreal King exchanged blows once again. The ground in the center of the Chu royal residence had completely collapsed. A huge ghastly claw mark was left imprinted on the ground. Countless palaces collapsed as the earth quaked...

...

"What happened!?"

In the core of the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng slammed heavily into the chamber walls. When

the ghastly claw struck, it had directly hit the barrier of the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's core!

Although the barrier did not explode, the terrifying vibrations had sent Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng, who were within it, flying. They nearly spat out blood from colliding with the wall!

"What the heck is going on? Is the Shepherd Boy attacking the array?"

Once they entered the array, all sound was cut off completely. Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng were completely unaware of what was going on outside.

At that moment, a Yuan Qi transmission from Shentu Nantian entered their ears, "Do not panic! The Shepherd Boy has completely ignored you. He is currently battling the Myriad Empyrean King. You will feel some vibrations due to the fallout from their fighting."

Shentu Nantian did not know what was going on in the array, but he guessed that the aftermath of the Myriad Empyrean King's ghastly claw would definitely make Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng suffer. Hence, he used his Yuan Qi transmission to inform them.

What? The fallout was that powerful?

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng looked at each other and they

were secretly alarmed. However, as long as the Shepherd Boy ignored them, then everything would be fine.

"Let's first get rid of Yi Yun!"

"Yes, since we are in here, killing Yi Yun is of utmost importance. I have long hoped to place that kid under my feet and stomp on him until he becomes a muddy mess!"

The two sneered. Just thinking of them facing Yi Yun whose cultivation level had been wasted made them excited.

They dashed to the chamber where Yi Yun was imprisoned in one breath.

"Peng!"

The chamber's door was kicked open violently by Yang Dingkun.

"Hahaha! Yi Yun, you must not have imagined that this day would come!?"

In the chamber, Yi Yun's body was chained up. He was huddled up in the corner of the walls. His face and hair were veiled with a layer of frost. His clothes were mostly torn and stained with blood. Those stains were from the blood that he had bled when Shentu Nantian wounded him. Now, the blood had dried up, turning black.

Yi Yun's current state looked no different to a beggar.

"Yi Yun, to think you have already turned into such a state after not seeing you for a few days. If I did not know that you were the only person locked up in here, I would really not be able to recognize you. Is this really the proud son of Heaven from the Tai Ah Divine City of yesteryear? Keke, life sure is unpredictable."

Yang Dingkun felt very happy seeing Yi Yun in such a state. He suddenly felt that it was worth it to risk his life to enter the chamber.

To be able to ravage a genius who had previously been praised by the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord and idolized by countless numbers of Tai Ah Divine City cultivators was indescribable!

"Yi Yun, you must not be too smug as a person. The higher you stand, the harder you fall. You fell from Heaven into Hell. I really feel sad for you. However, don't worry, we are here to end your suffering. For a person like you to become a cripple, living itself is a suffering, isn't it?"

Yang Yuefeng also mocked.

Yi Yun looked up and his gaze pierced through his messy hair and landed on Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng.

"It is you two..."

A cold beam flashed in Yi Yun's eyes.

When Jiang Xiaorou's identity was revealed, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng had diligently offered to prepare an alchemy lab for Shentu Nantian. They had also sent a voice transmission to Yi Yun saying how great it would be if they were given some elixirs.

Yi Yun had a strong murderous intent towards the two of them!

"Keke, your gaze looks fearsome, but what can you do? In a while, it will be me brutally killing you. Your gaze is not bad. I will dig your eyes out and soak them in herbal liquid to store them properly. After that, you can keep staring at me. It would definitely be very interesting."

Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng laughed without restraint as they walked towards Yi Yun.

Yang Yuefeng flipped his hand and retrieved a dagger from his interspatial ring. The dagger reflected a cold beam. He brandished the dagger tip in front of Yi Yun's eyes as he simulated the act of digging Yi Yun's eyes out.

On the other hand, Yang Dingkun stopped in front of Yi Yun and raised his foot. He was preparing to step on Yi Yun's face.

"So what if you are a proud son of Heaven?! Stepping on you now is no different from stepping on a dog!"

To step on Yi Yun's face gave a great sense of achievement.

However, just as Yang Dingkun raised his foot to step downwards, Yi Yun who was in the corner, suddenly sprang up like a leopard.

"Crash!"

The chains on Yi Yun's body tightened!

Phew—

Yuan Qi surged out from Yi Yun's body as it burned!

The sudden turn of events greatly alarmed Yang Dingkun. He had no time to react before Yi Yun grabbed his neck. Yi Yun pressed Yang Dingkun's entire body on the ground.

"You!"

Yang Dingkun screamed. At that moment, Yi Yun had already used a hand to hold Yang Dingkun's calf down, and he took a brick out from his interspatial ring with his other hand.

The black metallic brick was suffused with a cold beam. This was the brick that Yi Yun used when he traversed the Divine Wilderness. Yi Yun's eyes looked ferocious as he aimed the brick

towards Yang Dingkun's ankle before slamming it down with full force.

How could using the Sonic Deathblade to chop off a foot be more joyous than smashing it into a pulp with a metallic brick?

"Peng!"

An explosive sound rang as Yang Dingkun squealed like a pig being slaughtered. Yi Yun's brick had slammed onto Yang Dingkun's foot. The chamber's floor was made of specially constructed metal and it was extremely hard. The metallic brick along with Yi Yun's brutal force, together with the hard metallic ground caused Yang Dingkun's entire foot to become meat pulp!

The foot's bones were crushed into dust and the flesh into bits.

Yang Dingkun screamed crazily as if his throat was filled with glass. His face was white as he sweated profusely.

He had never expected that the Yi Yun, who was half-dead, would suddenly become so terrifying!

Chapter 367: Returning It To You

Yang Dingkun stared widely at Yi Yun with fear as he grabbed his calf that no longer had a foot.

"You...you..."

His voice trembled. He could not even complete a sentence.

To Yuan Foundation realm warriors, if their foot was cut off, the foot could be joined back with good medicine. It could completely recover in a few months.

However, if the foot was smashed into meat pulp, then there was no way of recovering it. Only top-grade medicines could regrow a lost limb. However, with Yang Dingkun's status and wealth, it was practically impossible for him to obtain such medicine.

Hence, Yang Dingkun's foot was equivalent to being completely disabled!

A warrior whose foot was disabled was worse than a warrior missing a hand. The despair Yang Dingkun now felt was obvious!

Yi Yun held the brick stained with meat pulp and blood while looking at Yang Dingkun. He said calmly, "You do not need to feel despair. Today, you will die here. Having one foot less or not does not matter."

Yi Yun's voice may sound calm, but it was filled with murderous intent.

Yang Yuefeng, who was beside Yang Dingkun, still held a dagger in his hand. A drop of cold sweat cr down his forehead.

"How... How is this possible? Your cultivation was clearly crippled!"

Previously, when Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng entered the chamber, they had clearly seen Yi Yun covered in ice crystals, as if he was poisoned by frost toxins.

However, in a blink of an eye, all the ice crystals disappeared and Yi Yun's Yuan Qi had exploded!

"Crippled cultivation?" Yi Yun sneered, "Whatever you do to me, and whatever you wanted to do to me but have not done, I will return all of them to the both of you identically! Regardless whether it is you, or the Shentu family clan!"

When Yi Yun said this, his body emitted an unlimited amount of murderous intent. A phantom image of a corpse mountain and blood sea appeared behind him.

This was the Saber Truth's 32 Words – Killing At Its Core!

While Yi Yun's understanding of the Saber Truth's 32 Words grew deeper by the day, the phantom image of the corpse

mountain and blood sea would appear automatically whenever he was filled with killing intent.

When they saw the phantom image behind Yi Yun, Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng's faces paled in fright. Cold sweat dripped down their foreheads. "Your... Your cultivation hasn't been crippled? How can that be!?"

The two of them acted like their souls had left their bodies.

A few months ago, when Yi Yun was at the peak of the Purple Blood realm, he had won the alliance tournament by defeating Bai after beating Feng Lin!

Back then, Feng Lin and Bai may have suppressed their cultivation levels, but they were still people that Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng had no methods to deal with!

And at that moment, Yi Yun had already broken through to the Yuan Foundation realm. His cultivation level was similar to theirs. With Yi Yun's extraordinary battle prowess, they lacked the courage to resist against Yi Yun.

"He still has chains on his body!"

Yang Yuefeng saw that some of the chains on Yi Yun's body were broken, but there were still some that were connected.

These chains were engraved with runes and they were extremely

strong. It was not easy to break them.

Yang Yuefeng slowly retreated. He used the corner of his eyes to look at the chamber's door. He felt hatred towards Yang Dingkun who had closed the metallic door after entering the chamber.

He calculated in his mind that the time it takes to open the metallic door was the time it took to snap one's fingers. As Yi Yun was restrained by chains, he could only attack from a distance, and might not be able to harm him.

And behind him, there was also Yang Dingkun.

At that moment, the idea of brotherly love was just a joke. Why would Yang Yuefeng care if Yang Dingkun lived?

Yi Yun touched his interspatial ring and sneered, "Are you thinking of escaping!?"

Yang Yuefeng's face sank. He knew that the moment he moved, Yi Yun would attack him!

For a Yuan Foundation realm warrior, there was no need to make bodily contact. The power from Saber Qi or Sword Qi cutting through the air was also powerful!

Yang Yuefeng watched Yi Yun's movements carefully. He said coldly, "Do you think you can keep me here? You are being bound by chains and the power of the moves you use will be limited.

Besides, you only have the time to strike once, so what can you do to me?"

"If you want to break the chains, you need to waste a lot of energy. The chains you have broken must have wasted a lot of your energy, right!?"

As Yang Yuefeng spoke, he slowly retreated.

He could not turn around and flee as that would open his body to attack. Then, Yi Yun could mortally wound him easily with one strike.

Yi Yun chuckled, as he flipped his palm. He took a old broken sword out from his interspatial ring.

This broken sword was covered in rust. It looked like a relic that had been unearthed.

"Oh?"

Yang Yuefeng was surprised. He did not know why Yi Yun pulled out such a useless sword.

As he was still wondering why, something that made his eyes pop out had happened. He saw Yi Yun casually wave his hand, slashing at the chain.

Following that, with a clear snap, the runes on the chains suddenly shimmered for a while. After they had finished shimmering, the broken sword had completely cut through the chain!

"What!?"

Yang Dingkun stared widely. His face was gloomy as his soul began to separate from his body.

How could this be possible? That was a chain made by a master blacksmith in the Chu royal residence. How could it break so easily?

The broken sword that looked like it was almost going to rot away had cut through the chains as if it was cutting grass!

"What you said previously was well-said." Yi Yun casually threw the useless chains away and said coldly, "You said that one must not be too smug as a person. Or else, you will fall from Heaven into Hell. That is indeed true..."

As Yi Yun spoke, he began walking towards Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng.

At that moment, the chamber's door was still closed. With Yi Yun's strength, Yang Yuefeng had no hope of opening the door with Yi Yun attacking.

"We will go all out and fight you!"

Yang Dingkun was holding onto his calf as he spoke in a threatening manner but he lacked courage deep down. With only one foot, there was no way he could escape from Yi Yun's sword.

And at that moment, he suddenly felt a push on his back. His cousin, Yang Yuefeng had pushed him, who had only one leg, towards Yi Yun!

"Brother, help me block him for a while!"

As Yang Yuefeng said that, he frantically rushed out of the chamber.

"You!"

Yang Dingkun was greatly shocked. He had only one leg left, so how could he withstand the full force of Yang Yuefeng's push? His body flew towards Yi Yun.

Yi Yun sneered as he took a step forward.

"Ah!"

Yang Dingkun screamed in despair. He stabbed his sword at Yi Yun!

However, at the same time, Yi Yun had kept the broken sword. For a despicable person like Yang Dingkun, how could he be worthy of being killed by the companion sword of the Pure Yang Sword Palace's owner?

It was a complete insult to the sword. This sword could only taste the blood of gods and demons like the bronze giant!

With the broken sword put away, Yi Yun entered the battle unarmed. He directed a punch towards Yang Dingkun's face!

"Ah!"

Yang Dingkun screamed as he was punched in the face by Yi Yun. His facial bones sank in, and an eyeball popped out of its sockets. Yi Yun had completely smashed his facial features into a mess!

Yi Yun turned his fist into the shape of a claw. Taking advantage of the momentum, he grabbed Yang Dingkun's face as he rushed forward, slamming the back of Yang Dingkun's head onto the metallic chamber walls.

"Peng!"

With a loud sound, the back of Yang Dingkun's head cracked open and blood splattered out!

Yang Dingkun was left with one eye. There was no eyeball left, leaving an empty socket. His face was also gone. The back of his

head was bleeding.

The difference in strength between him and Yi Yun was too great!

At that moment, Yi Yun turned his head and saw the scene of Yang Yuefeng closing the door!

Once the chamber's door was closed, then it could only be opened from outside. And this door was constructed of the same metal as the chains. The two foot thick metallic door was many times stronger than the chains. It was not that easy to tear the door down even with the Pure Yang Sword Palace's owner's broken sword.

"Farewell Yi Yun! Although I do not know how you recovered your cultivation, that does not matter. Young Master Nantian will finish you off!"

Yang Yuefeng used his Yuan Qi transmission to pass the message into Yi Yun's ears in a split second.

He believed that Yi Yun could not break down the door. Even if he could do so, he definitely needed some time. And this time was sufficient for him to escape.

"Pa!"

The door closed. The sound of the metal locking was music to his

ears.

Yang Yuefeng let out a long sigh. He could not stay here for long. He had to leave at once, and report everything that had happened to Shentu Nantian.

Shentu Nantian could transmit his voice into the chamber as he had the array disk in hand, but Yang Yuefeng had no way of sending the message out.

However... when Yang Yuefeng turned around, his blood froze!

He saw that three feet away from him, Yi Yun was standing there like a ghost. His gaze was that of looking at a dead man.

How could he... be this quick?

Yang Yuefeng felt his world fall apart. He originally thought that he had seen a chance at living, but in the blink of an eye, he had entered Hell once again!

When Yi Yun was in the Purple Blood realm, his Minute Subtlety had given him speed that exceeded several Yuan Foundation realm elites.

Furthermore, with Yi Yun already breaking through to the Yuan Foundation realm, his speed at travelling short distances could be described like teleportation!

"It is the end." Yi Yun said calmly, as if he was the judge of fate.

"Ah Ah Ah Ah!" Yang Yuefeng shouted wildly. He retaliated by stabbing at Yi Yun with a dagger.

Yi Yun's Yuan Qi surged out, and he reached out his hand. With the advantage of power, he grabbed Yang Yuefeng's wrist!

Yuan Qi circulated as Yi Yun's energy increased.

"Ka-cha!"

With the sound of a bone snapping, Yang Yuefeng's hand was twisted and broken by Yi Yun!

Yang Yuefeng's hand was twisted at an odd angle giving him heartfelt pain. He gritted his teeth as he sent a punch towards Yi Yun's dantian!

However, Yi Yun's other hand shot out like lightning, catching Yang Yuefeng's other hand.

With a repeat of events, another "Ka-cha" was heard!

The pain caused Yang Yuefeng's face to distort. Both his hands had been twisted and broken by Yi Yun!

The dagger in his hand dropped before Yi Yun caught it.

"You... you will die a horrible death."

Yang Yuefeng felt newborn despair as he stared venomously at Yi Yun and maliciously cursed him.

However, Yi Yun only sneered. With a flick of his hand, the dagger pierced one of Yang Yuefeng's wide-staring eyes.

"Puah!"

His eyeball burst. Yi Yun had pierced the dagger deep into Yang Yuefeng's eye socket

A powerful force completely surged through Yang Yuefeng's brain. Yang Yuefeng's body twitched as blood and brain juices flowed out from his eye socket.

Yi Yun did not feel a thing from such a bloody scene.

He was not a bloodthirsty man, but when his heart was filled with hatred, seeing such a bloody scene, it gave him a thrill that was difficult to be described with words.

"I had previously said: whatever you wanted to do to me, I would return to you identically!"

Chapter 368: Killing All Together

After killing Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng, Yi Yun gathered their corpses together and shot a pure Yang flame at the bodies. The two corpses crumbled into ashes immediately, completely disappearing.

The high temperature from the pure Yang flames could even vaporize ash. One could say that the corpses literally disappeared into thin air.

Yi Yun destroyed everything that was Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng. It really was wiping all evidence by destroying the corpses.

This was the first time Yi Yun had killed someone in this and his previous life!

Maybe, he was slowly growing accustomed to this world where martial arts was placed above all. Maybe, it was because he had gone through slaughtering desolate beasts in the Divine Wilderness, resulting in him slowly getting used to it. Or maybe it was because of his hatred for Yang Dingkun and Yang Yuefeng. At that moment, Yi Yun did not feel any remorse for killing them.

On the contrary, he felt like he had released the discomfort he had suppressed and accumulated over the past few days!

These ten days was first marked by the pain of him nearly losing Jiang Xiaorou, and how he nearly lost his life. This came from the

despair of being brutally beaten and nearly slaughtered.

One could not rid themselves of their natural intentions. After suppressing all the feelings of being oppressed and tortured, a brutal streak had begun growing in him. The experience from the past few days could be considered a turning point in Yi Yun's life.

In such desperate situations, a person could change a lot.

Yi Yun looked up towards the sky. His gaze and perception had no way of seeing through the chamber's ceiling. He also did not know what was happening outside. He was waiting... waiting for the judgment of Fate.

He swore that this was the last time he was leaving it up to Fate, where he would allow others to decide his survival.

From today onwards, his fate would be controlled by him!

If it was said that only mighty figures in this world had the ability to control their own fate, then he would become a might figure. If the Great Emperor realm was insufficient, then he would exceed a Great Emperor!

...

At that moment in the night sky, the Illusionary Bone sword was being brandished. The sharp sword Qi split the starlight apart, and what was remaining was the bright color of blood that smeared the

air. A Shentu family clan Elder had been split in half by the sword Qi!

The Elder screamed before his body was ground to bits by the sword Qi!

Another Shentu family clan Elder had died.

Up till now, five Elders from the Shentu family clan had died!

Those Elders, whose cultivation level was not in the realm of the Emperor realm, had no way of defending themselves from the Shepherd Boy. Once the Shepherd Boy grabbed an opportunity, the outcome would be their deaths in one strike!

The thought of retreating arose in those normal Elder's minds. Although they were part of the Shentu family clan and had worked hard for it, they were not at the stage where they would not mind giving their lives up.

To them, living was much more important than anything else.

"Oh?"

Realizing that the Shepherd Boy was approaching, the legendary figures hurriedly retreated. The Myriad Empyreal King frowned, "What are you afraid of!? He was hit by the Ancestor's Death Heavenly Revolution a decade ago. It is impossible that he has recovered by now. I don't believe he can last all the way to the

end!"

The Myriad Empyreal King put his hand out, and behind him, the large floating bell flew towards his hand.

"Dang!"

The bell rang. In the Chu Prefecture City, even though the citizens had been evacuated, those who heard it from tens of kilometers away felt their ears buzz and their hearts heavy. Those who were lower in cultivation level spat blood out from the tremors.

"Dang!"

The large bell rang again. As the sound waves approached, those mortals who were nearer to it could not withstand the surge of the sound wave. With a scream, they turned into a bloody mist as a result of the sound wave.

"Ah!"

Some people let out shocking cries. After two consecutive sound waves were sent surging, now there was so much blood that it nearly formed a river!

King Chu was on a mountain peak far into the distance. When he saw this scene, he let out a long sigh.

There was an indescribable feeling in his heart. Ever since he heard the Shepherd Boy call out the Myriad Empyrean King's title, he had guessed that the exchange of blows between Great Emperor realm rivals would definitely harm the Chu Prefecture City, thus he evacuated the residents early on.

However, there were too many people in the Chu Prefecture City, so there was no way to complete an evacuation in time. This resulted in many innocent commoners dying!

And what was tragic about this was that they did not die under the hands of the Desolate race expert, the Shepherd Boy, rather they were killed by the Myriad Empyrean King who was human.

Be it the Desolate race or mighty figures from the Human race, they treated commoners like ants.

The large black bell floated in front of the Myriad Empyrean King. There were ghostly runes engraved on the large bell, making it look sinister and savage.

"My Ten Thousand Ghost Bell was strengthened using the souls of ten thousand Human Lords. However, it still lacks a person at the Emperor realm to be its main soul. A thousand years ago, you killed my only son. Today, I will use your soul as my Ten Thousand Bell's main soul, so as to commemorate my only son's spirit!"

"Oh? That is really tragic. Your body is impotent, and you do not

have any descendants. What other meaning is there to life?" The Shepherd Boy sneered in a mocking fashion.

The Empyrean King's had a long life, and he would usually have several wives and concubines, resulting in countless numbers of descendants. However, the Myriad Empyrean King had cultivated an ancient evil cultivation technique and had gone astray. He also cultivated the Ghost Dao Death Spirit skills, so he had already lost his potency.

It was very difficult for a deathly body to create life-giving essence; hence, when his only son was killed, this created an irreconcilable feud!

"Courting death!" The Shepherd Boy had touched a sore spot, resulting in the Myriad Empyrean King's eyes turning blood red. "Dong!"

He rang the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell and sent terrifying sound waves out. The tremors had split the earth open below them. Due to the resonance from the sound wave, the ground became like a water's surface. Ripples in the ground appeared like water ripples.

Muddy waves spread out in a circular manner. It caused the Chu royal residence, which was mostly destroyed, to collapse completely!

Countless numbers of pavilions, rockeries, and flowing water bodies turned into ruins. The ground caved in, causing even the foundations of the towers to completely churn upwards.

This was just the fallout. In fact, the highly condensed sound waves from the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell had been directed at the Shepherd Boy.

A soul attack was embedded in the sound waves!

Against the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell's sound waves, the Shepherd Boy gently flipped his hand, and a short bamboo flute appeared in his hand. He carried this bamboo flute everywhere. Even when he led the beast horde, he would use this bamboo flute to transmit his intentions.

A sweet and melodious tune came out of the flute. It clashed with the extensive Bell sound waves!

"Boom!"

The sound wave explosion shook the surroundings. The strongest attacks hidden in the sound waves were their own Sword of the Soul!

Soul attacks were the most dangerous. If a backlash happened, there would be extremely serious consequences.

The two people's souls crossed. Illusions flooded their minds as they reached a stalemate.

In the sky, the Myriad Empyrean King's soul formed into a burning blood-colored skull, which looked like an evil demon entering the world. It was infinitely oppressive.

And behind the Shepherd Boy, it was a scene of the vast wilderness. In the vast wilderness, there were divine dragons and phoenixes flying about. They may not be real divine beasts, but even if they weren't, they were Primitive Sacred Desolate Beasts whose bloodline was extremely close!

The phantom images of the two Great Emperors appeared at the same time. This battle had reached its hottest point!

"The Shepherd Boy and the Myriad Empyrean King are fighting with their souls. Now they are in a deadlock, it is the best opportunity to kill him!"

About ten kilometers away, Shentu Nantian shouted!

However, the few Shentu family clan Elders were hesitant. Previously, their companions had died horribly!

"Move! If you kill the Shepherd Boy and use his blood to refine a divine elixir, I will give one to each of you! If you retreat without fighting, there will be punishments once the Ancestor gets wind of this!"

Shentu Nantian even used the Shentu Patriarch as a threat.

Under this threat, and with the temptation of the Shepherd Boy's blood elixir, a total of seven people consisting of the remaining five Elders, along with Elder Su and Elder Mo, charged at the Shepherd Boy.

They all used their best moves, in a bid to kill the Shepherd Boy in one strike!

At that moment, the Shepherd Boy and the Myriad Empyreal King were in a deadlock, so he was the perfect target!

The divine beams formed into one, like a rainbow cloud that covered the sky, and situated in the middle of the cloud was the Shepherd Boy!

At that moment, everyone held their breaths. Was the battle ending?

Boom!

All the attacks exploded in the night sky at the same time. The air was like a picture scroll that was torn apart by the terrifying impact!

Blinding lights from the energy made everyone shut their eyes. And the powerful energy formed a force field that formed an isolation barrier, which prevented others from using their perception to probe what was going on within it. They did not know what the outcome of the battle in the sky was.

The seven legendary figures had teamed up to attack him, and at that moment, the Shepherd Boy was resisting the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell's ringing. Under this situation, there was no one who could withstand it!

"Is the battle over?"

"The Shepherd Boy is dead!?"

The light slowly dissipated as people focused their eyes upwards. They realized that the empty air had disappeared. What was in front of their eyes was like an immortal paradise in the sky.

It was a vast blue sea that sparkled.

And above the sea, there was an island!

A sea that floated in the sky, and a small island within the sea.

That island was covered with spiritual fountains, and was Spring-like, forming an idyllic scene. There were peach trees that had grown healthily on this land for thousands of years.

At that moment, the peach blossoms went into full bloom. As the petals fell, it formed a rain of flowers. And as light dispersed through this rain, a green cow could be seen walking amongst the flowers...

Green cow, peach blossoms, paradise island!

The green-dressed Shepherd Boy was standing in this paradise. His green clothes were stained with blood while he held his bamboo flute!

The Shepherd Boy was injured!

The silver blood slowly flowed down the Shepherd Boy's fingers before it began dripping...

The pink peach blossoms, the silver blood suddenly formed a beautiful picture.

Chapter 369: The Blood Of The Desolate Race

The Shepherd Boy's silver blood flowed down, landing on the paradise's soil beneath his feet before being absorbed by the paradise's ground. It did not drop onto normal ground.

Seeing this divine paradise soil, the hearts of the Shentu family clan Elders tightened.

"Domain!"

This single island immortal paradise was the Shepherd Boy's domain.

Many warriors had their own domains, so it was not uncommon. However, the Shepherd Boy's domain was clearly extraordinary. He had used this domain to withstand the combined attack of the seven experts and the Myriad Empyreal King!

"He is injured and bleeding... The blood of the Desolate race is much more precious than our human blood. Once they bleed, it means that they are seriously injured!"

The blood of the Desolate race could be refined into elixirs, which illustrated how precious their blood was.

The Myriad Empyreal King looked at the blood flowing out of the

Shepherd Boy's mouth and grinned, "If I'm not wrong, our combined attack has made the Death Heavenly Revolution stir up in his body. And my Ten Thousand Ghost Bell should have hurt his soul!"

The Myriad Empyreal King was very confident about the effects of his Ten Thousand Bell attack. He refused to believe that even the Shepherd Boy could remain unharmed after being attacked while in a deadlock with him.

"It's the end, let us all attack!"

"Break his domain apart, and we can kill him. Then we shall have his Desolate blood and refine elixirs from it, so we can share them!"

A few Shentu family clan Elders looked each other in the eye as they made their minds up.

The Desolate race's blood elixirs were extremely precious. Even if it could not let them have a break through, it could catalyze their bodies' potential, thus extending their lifespan.

The 7 Elders attacked together, and used all sorts of laws. The divine powers rushed into the sky like a rainbow tidal wave surging towards the Shepherd Boy's domain.

"Boom!"

All the attacks landed on the paradise island domain.

The domain shook violently. On the paradise island, the petals of the peach blossoms fell like bloody rain. The Shepherd Boy was standing below a ten thousand-year-old peach tree, looking indifferent.

When the powerful forces tore the paradise island apart, a shocking crack appeared on the ground.

People believed that they were on the brink of splitting the domain apart; however, at that moment, the Shepherd Boy suddenly held his Illusionary Bone sword and wiped his palm over it, staining it with his silver blood.

"Chi Chi!"

The silver blood burned and it transformed into a spotless white flame.

This flame had been used by the Shepherd Boy previously. However, this time, he had used his blood as fuel, so the power of the flame could no longer be compared to last time!

Roar!

Behind the Shepherd Boy, a earth-shattering roar that sounded like a Primitive Sacred Desolate Beast spread out. This power was imbued into the Shepherd Boy's body. He slashed with his sword, causing the Order of Heaven and Earth to collapse. The combined

efforts of the Elders released a Yuan Qi divine force, but it could not block the Shepherd Boy's attack at all.

The divine beam collapsed as all the attacks disappeared. As for the Shepherd Boy's flaming sword, it pierced forward without any resistance!

"Cha!"

A Shentu family clan Elder screamed. He was split apart from the hip down!

The white flame swallowed him, burning the Elder's blood and his mind into ash!

"What!?"

When the other Elders saw this scene, they were terror-stricken. They had thought that the Shepherd Boy was a spent force, so they had combined forces to attack him again. Now, with a look, his strength had become even more terrifying after being injured!

Against the Shepherd Boy, they felt a fear in their hearts. This Desolate race Great Emperor was simply unfathomable!

The Shepherd Boy sent a stab at the Myriad Empyrean King with his Illusionary Bone sword.

The Myriad Empyrean King was alarmed, "You actually don't mind spending your Desolate blood to fight me!? Is this just to save a human? Is it even worth it!?"

The Shepherd Boy remained quiet. White flames surged from the sword, burning the emptiness. These flames seemed to spontaneously form runic lines.

This was the array runic lines formed when one's fire laws reached an extreme. It represented the origins of the Heaven and Earth Great Dao!

"The Successor has promised me something. So in return, I definitely have to uphold my promise!" The Shepherd Boy said calmly.

The Shepherd Boy had used all his strength with this attack. The white beam was like jade as it lit up the entire night sky. It stretched all the way to the horizon and it seemed infinite. Even the arm of the galaxy in the sky disappeared as it was overpowered by the divine light.

The white flames burned, forming a wispy sound as it resounded in the heavens. It was as if the ancient river of time had been reversed.

Against this tsunami-like attack, the Myriad Empyrean King's face displayed a ferocious expression. He knew that he had to go all out, otherwise, the Shepherd Boy would kill him!

"Roar!"

A beast-like roar came from within his body. His rotting, dried up skin swelled up. In an instance, a deathly aura exploded as ten thousand ghosts wailed. From within the Myriad Empyrean King's body, a red skeleton rushed forward. As the skeleton howled, it charged at the Shepherd Boy.

At the same time, the Myriad Empyrean King threw the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell at the Shepherd Boy.

As the bell gave a deafening sound, it was like a mountain of Hell flying towards the Shepherd Boy!

The Myriad Empyrean King's Aspect Totem, which had his soul attack embedded in it, left his body, and at the same time, all of his Yuan Qi was injected into the large bell. The two combined into one and this was the strongest attack the Myriad Empyrean King could use!

He believed that no matter how sharp the Shepherd Boy's sword was, the Shepherd Boy had no way of breaking through this killer attack.

Seeing the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell and the bloody skeleton attacking him, a cold expression flashed on the Shepherd Boy's face. He attacked with his palm, and at the same time, injected the Power of Desolates into his palm, rupturing his blood vessels, which caused some of his blood to splatter!

The Shepherd Boy's palm had turned into a bloody palm!

"Dang!"

With a tumultuous explosion, the palm made a direct impact on the large bell.

The weight could not be estimated. The Ghost Bell, that had ten thousand Lord-realm souls in it, quaked. A depression immediately appeared on the thick and heavy bell, it was a clear and visible palm print!

The Shepherd Boy's silver blood was left behind on the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell as well. The metal that was used to construct the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell actually melted turning into molten metal under the burning blood.

The Shepherd Boy's blood had burned a hole through the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell!

There were unfathomable powers in the Desolate race Great Emperor's blood.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

The flames burned as the souls began to howl in pain. These were the tortured souls that were sealed in the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell. They were burned by the white flames, turning into ash instantaneously!

Although the process was painful, it was a form of release for them.

As the wails increased, an unknown number of souls had been burned to ash in the blink of an eye.

"You burnt the souls in my Ten Thousand Ghost Bell!?"

The Myriad Empyreal King's eyes turned red. However at that moment, his energy had been emptied out and he was powerless to stop it.

The Shepherd Boy roared and pushed the Ten Thousand Ghost Bell away from him with one hand. He raised his Illusionary Bone sword and carried on slashing.

"Roar!"

The bloody skeleton roared as it bit at the Shepherd Boy.

This bloody skeleton was the Myriad Empyreal King's Aspect Totem. It could swallow a person's soul. If it was allowed free reign in a crowd, the people who were devoured by it would lose their souls, turning into walking zombies.

However, against this bloody skeleton, the Shepherd Boy did not dodge it. He charged forward together with his sword.

His entire person had transformed into a sword beam. At that moment, it was as if he himself had turned into a peerless divine sword.

That terrifying sword intent had protected the Shepherd Boy's soul. With his flesh as the sword, and his soul also as a sword, his sword Dao didn't meet any resistance as it surpassed everything under the sky!

"Break!"

The Shepherd Boy let out a long cry. His blood burned on the Illusionary Bone sword as the surrounding flames condensed into runic lines of the Great Dao origins. At that moment, all of them reversed and injected themselves into the sword.

"Cha!"

The sword pierced all the way through the blood-colored skeleton, till it reached the Myriad Empyreal King!

The bone sword's blade shone with white light that resembled jade and it was no more than 3 feet away than the Myriad Empyreal King.

"You burst through my blood skeleton head on!?"

The Myriad Empyreal King's expression twisted. Seeing that he had no way to avoid it, he put his dried up claws out to grab the Shepherd Boy's neck.

He wanted to force the Shepherd Boy to retract his attack and defend by the threat of exchanging injuries.

However, when the Shepherd Boy stabbed with his sword, he had no intentions to dodge again. Once his sword was unsheathed, it had to taste blood!

The Illusionary Bone sword pierced straight ahead. He did not defend!

"Puah!"

The sword stabbed into the Myriad Empyreal King's left chest, piercing through his heart!

The white blood flame seeped into the Myriad Empyreal King's body, and began to spread out like an explosion. From his heart, it spread to all the neighboring blood vessels. It burned all his blood into ash.

However, at the same time, the Myriad Empyreal King let out a strange cry as his ghastly claws had pierced the Shepherd Boy's chest.

Ten bloody holes were left on the Shepherd Boy's body and black

gas surged around like plumes of black smoke being released. The Myriad Empyreal King's claws were poisonous!

However, the claws had not managed to grab the Shepherd Boy's heart. The Desolate blood flame on the Shepherd Boy's sword burned the Myriad Empyreal King's Yuan Qi away, destroying all possibility of survival! It also prevented him from breaking through the Shepherd Boy's protective Power of Desolates.

Chi!

The sword swept ahead and the Myriad Empyreal King was split into two by the Shepherd Boy!

After the Myriad Empyreal King's corpse was split apart, it lost its Yuan Qi protection. Hence, it no longer had the ability to withstand the Shepherd Boy's Desolate blood flame. It was reduced to ashes in the air.

A ghastly Emperor had been annihilated in such a manner!

Seeing the ashes spreading down and slowly disappearing in the sky, the Shentu family clan Elders were fear stricken.

It was too terrifying!

This was the blood of a Desolate race's Great Emperor, just the power of the blood was so terrifying. This was also why many members of the Human race were desperate for the blood of the

Desolate race.

However, the blood of the Desolate race was not only used to refine elixirs, it could also be used to kill someone!

The Shepherd Boy's face was pale. There were ten bloody holes on his chest and silver blood flowed out from the holes, and at that moment, his silver blood was slightly contaminated.

The poison that the Myriad Empyreal King used was not common. It had been condensed and refined from toxin laws. Even if it was the blood of a Desolate race's Great Emperor, the poison would still corrode it.

"The Shepherd Boy has killed a human Great Emperor!"

On the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's side, King Chu and company were frightened and distraught.

This was such a terrifying matter. For the Chu Prefecture City today, it was destined to be a day that was going to be remembered. A Great Emperor had actually died in their Chu Prefecture City!

A human Great Emperor was a legend to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

It was rare to meet one, but now, one of them had died!

Furthermore, they had witnessed the death of this Great Emperor with their own eyes!

Looking back at the Shepherd Boy, his green clothes were stained with blood and he looked pale. He was also poisoned, and seemed to be at his limit, like a candle flickering in the wind!

Could he still fight?

Such a question flashed in King Chu's mind. Although it was a opposing force, the Shepherd Boy's peerless grandeur had completely impressed King Chu.

It was all because of his peerless talent!

Chapter 370: Finally Leaving Tai Ah

The divine lights of the laws began to slowly fade in the vast sky. The arm of the galaxy once again began to shimmer in the sky, and now, the entire Chu Prefecture City was in complete ruins. With the Chu royal residence as the core, it seemed to have been attacked by a terrible storm. All the nearby buildings had completely collapsed, while the Chu royal residence had been reduced to dust, not even leaving behind any wreckage.

The Shepherd Boy stood under the bright moon, holding the Illusionary Bone sword in one hand and the bamboo flute in the other.

A breeze blew, fluttering his green clothes. His elegance and talent seemed peerless.

His pair of eyes stared at the Shentu family clan Elders. That deep stare seemed to resemble the endless starry sky above his head.

"He's injured, and should be very seriously injured at that. He should be on the verge of his limits!"

"Ignoring the Death Heavenly Revolution left in his body, even the wound on his chest has been infected by toxins. He is bleeding black blood!"

The Shepherd Boy's condition was clear to everyone, but even then, no one dared to go forward.

The Shepherd Boy had previously killed 6 of the Shentu family clan Elders, and then the Myriad Empyreal King. This was too great a shock for them. Furthermore, every time they thought they could kill him, they were killed by him instead!

Hence, even if they knew that he had damaged his life force, none of the Shentu family clan Elders dared to make a move.

Even Elder Su and Elder Mo did not go forth. The pressure was too great.

Maybe if they all piled on, maybe then they would be able to prevent the heavily injured Shepherd Boy from leaving. However, there was no doubt that they would only be left with a few people in the end. They might even all die together with the Shepherd Boy.

No one was willing to make such a sacrifice.

At that moment, people saw that a black mist was emerging from the 10 claw wounds on the Shepherd Boy's chest.

"Chi! Chi! Chi!"

After the black mist left the wounds, it burned in the air, quickly being reduced to ash.

When people saw this, their hearts tightened, "He is using the Power of Desolates to force the toxins out of his body!"

"This is not good, we cannot let him force the poison out. If he completely recovers, we will be even less of a match for him. We might even all die here today!"

The Shepherd Boy was unexpectedly healing himself in the air, completely ignoring them. This made many of the Shentu Elders aggrieved. It was as if they did not exist.

They knew that if they did not attack the Shepherd Boy now, they would lose their greatest advantage in battle.

However, no one dared to make a move against him. Everyone knew that the first few who went forward would definitely end up dead.

While they looked on, the black mist being emitted out of the Shepherd Boy increased, with a "Chi Chi Chi" sound, a pure white flame started to burn on the Shepherd Boy's chest.

If this went on, they would not stand a chance if they only remained motionless!

"Si!"

The Illusionary Bone sword flashed a cold beam. Under the moonlight, the white bone sword the Shepherd Boy held looked

like an elephant's white tusk.

"What do we do?"

A Shentu family clan Elder asked Elder Su and Elder Mo.

Elder Su and Elder Mo's expressions were ugly as they felt irrevocably committed.

"What else can we do? We cannot really wait for him to recover and let him kill all of us? Let's protect the young master and leave."

Hearing Elder Mo's words, the Shentu family clan's other Elders felt aggrieved. Although they, in name, were leaving to protect Shentu Nantian, they were in fact, escaping.

They had the numbers advantage, and had even set up the Heaven Earth Empyreal Array. Even with the addition of the Myriad Empyreal King, they had still been sent scurrying away by the Shepherd Boy. This had turned into a huge joke.

However, now, if they did not take the opportunity to escape while the Shepherd Boy was still recovering from the poisoning, they had no other methods.

"Evacuate the Chu Prefecture City!"

When Elder Su said this, the Elders looked at each other and

reluctantly accepted reality. They kept their guard up and retreated in the air bit by bit, to the point of them being several kilometers away. Only then did they take Shentu Nantian along with them to rapidly evacuate.

From the beginning to the end, the Shepherd Boy looked on indifferently. He did not attack again.

He was indeed on the verge of his limits. It was not because of the toxins from the Myriad Empyreal King, but because of the Death Heavenly Revolution left within his body by the Shentu Patriarch a decade ago!

Just now, he had used the blood of the Desolate race to kill the Myriad Empyreal King, but that had caused the Death Heavenly Revolution in his body to begin moving. He was almost on the verge of being unable to repress it.

Under this situation, if he had forcefully killed the Shentu family clan Elders, he would have to pay a terrible price. Not only would he have to enter a recovery phase again, but he would also have to hurt his life force.

If he really hurt his life force, then it would be very difficult to recover, even if he nursed himself back to health for decades.

...

"The Shentu family clan has retreated!"

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors looked as the Shentu family clan retreated to a distance of tens of kilometers away from the Chu Prefecture City before they turned and fled. Soon, they disappeared into the night...

This scene made many of their hearts go cold.

The Shepherd Boy had sent the Shentu family clan running single-handedly. From the contents of their past conversations, the Shepherd Boy's strength did not decrease but actually increased, although he was hit by the Death Heavenly Revolution in the huge battle a decade ago!

As such, the Shentu family clan had severely underestimated the Shepherd Boy's strength.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors were extremely nervous. They were afraid that the Shepherd Boy would suddenly attack them. If he was angered, the Chu Prefecture City would be pulled in. Once the huge slaughter began, only a few amongst them would live on.

It was a very easy matter for a Great Emperor to destroy a city.

However at that moment, the Shepherd Boy's focus was not on the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors. After he forced out the last toxins in his body, he held the Illusionary Bone sword and hovered above the Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's core.

The Illusionary bone sent out 3 flashing beams, and these three waterfall-like sword beams streaked across the ground.

Chi La!

It was as if white lightning had struck. The Heaven Earth Empyrean Array's barrier violently trembled and completely burst open the next moment.

Following that, the Shepherd Boy sent out another slash. The Chu royal residence's chamber had been split open by his attack!

...

In the chamber, Yi Yun heard a rumbling of energy explosions. He looked up and saw a sword beam split open the chamber's dome. A ray of moonlight spilled down from the huge crack and into the dome, lighting up his face.

Ever since he was locked in the dark chamber, where day and night could not be distinguished, he had not seen the long-absent sight of moonlight.

And now, bathing in the moonlight, Yi Yun felt as if he had reincarnated.

He seemed to have died once in the past day ten days.

And today, he was reborn. He would make every effort to explore the highest realms of martial arts. He wanted to control his own fate, and control the fates of the people around him.

Under the moon, the Shepherd Boy's green clothes were stained with blood. He looked like a pristine piece of jade.

With the Illusionary Bone sword in hand, he looked at Yi Yun without any emotions. There was no emotions in his voice as he said, "Follow me."

After saying that, the Shepherd Boy spoke no more. He turned around and left, not giving Yi Yun another glance.

Yi Yun felt an invisible force wrap around his body as his body began to fly.

Under the moon, the Shepherd Boy kept his sword in hand as he flew towards the starry sky. His black hair fluttered in the wind, giving him an extreme charm.

And behind him, Yi Yun was following closely behind.

The Shepherd Boy did not speak a word, Yi Yun too remained silent. He never expected that such a day would happen. He had been imprisoned by a large human faction, yet it was the Desolate race's Shepherd Boy who saved him.

Thinking back to the first encounter, of him meeting the Shepherd Boy in the Divine Wilderness, the Shepherd Boy was then riding a green cow, crossing the Blackwater Swamp. That scene seemed like a dream...

Back then, Yi Yun had never expected the Shepherd Boy to have such an identity.

The two of them flew silently, with one before the other. They slowly disappeared into the horizon, hidden by the bright light of the moon.

Only when the two of them completely disappeared did the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's warriors exhale.

The backs of many of them were drenched with cold sweat.

The Shepherd Boy had given them too great a pressure.

"Maybe we were too tiny, so the Shepherd Boy did not even bother killing us."

An old man smiled bitterly. The Shepherd Boy had passed by the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and saved Yi Yun, those who were watching by the sides were probably nothing more than a bunch of ants to the Shepherd Boy. When a person encountered a group of ants while walking, except for naughty children, probably no one would purposely walk over to step the ants to death.

"He has saved Yi Yun, but Yi Yun has already become a cripple." A Human Lord sighed. Many people from the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom felt pity for Yi Yun. Many of them felt sorry that Yi Yun had been crippled.

"That might not be so! The Shepherd Boy's powers are godly. He might have a way to recover Yi Yun's cultivation!" Another Human Lord said.

However, many of them shook their heads when they heard it. "With the frost toxins in his body, and his meridians destroyed, who knows what sorts of treasures are needed to join back his meridians. Furthermore, ignoring the fact that the Desolate race might not use such treasures on Yi Yun, Yi Yun might also not be able to handle such medicine."

"Even if we took 10,000 steps back and all those conditions were fulfilled, and it great amounts of time will be lost to join back Yi Yun's meridians. And the meridians that are joined back might not be as good as they originally were. There might be some hidden injuries left behind. If that happened, then Yi Yun might only become a peak-Human Lord. Becoming a Sage would be difficult, let alone becoming a Great Emperor."

In the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's history, there was no lack of geniuses who were peerless. However, due to sudden severe injuries, they bodies and talents were no longer the same after they recovered. Their cultivation was slowly caught up to by their peers, and finally their potential was exhausted, in the end they just vanished in the crowd.

There were too many examples of this. People suspected that Yi Yun would end up the same.

Just thinking about it made them sigh.

A proud son of heaven had fallen just like that. Although he was still alive, he had lost the halo around him.

The higher one fell from, the greater the tragedy.

One had to live on a grayed life in hatred and despair after suddenly losing everything overnight. For one, who was originally used to being cheered on by others and being admired by all around him, to carry on living in a weak state with all one's powers gone, with no chances of revenge, death would probably be more than blissful.

"Everything is predestined. When the Shentu family clan came, we thought we had seen hope. However, who knew that such an outcome would occur. With them now retreated, who knows if they will return..." King Chu looked at the Chu Prefecture City's wreckage with a heavy heart.

Although they were extremely disappointed with the Shentu family clan and were very unhappy, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom warriors still were still afraid that the Shentu family clan would just leave.

If the Shepherd Boy went back, he could likely make a return. He

could then set off another beast horde and destroy the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

As for the Shentu family clan, although they were overbearing and cruel, they were at least on the side of humans.

To expect a bunch of tigers, leopards, wolves and other beasts of prey to help them, was a tragedy brought forth from their weakness...

Chapter 371: Humans And Desolates Have Different Paths

Yi Yun flew behind the Shepherd Boy for an unknown period of time.

While flying, Yi Yun did not find the speed to be fast, nor did the wind, blowing at him, feel forceful. In fact, it could be said to be gentle.

However, the scene of the ground beneath him was quickly changing, as if space was being distorted.

"Senior Shepherd Boy, where is my sister?" Yi Yun could not help but ask after flying for two hours. He was currently most worried about Jiang Xiaorou's whereabouts.

The Shepherd Boy did not respond until he landed Yi Yun on the top of a mountain. Looking around, it was desolate lands and canyons. There were several hundred meter tall ancient trees around, towering into the sky.

Yi Yun recognized that this was the Cloud Wilderness!

Standing on a mountain peak of the Cloud Wilderness, the strong winds blew coldly. Yi Yun brushed away the hair that had covered his eyes, and cupped his hands, "Senior Shepherd Boy, Yi Yun will remember the debt of you saving me. I will definitely repay you in the future!"

The Shepherd Boy was silent and had his back facing Yi Yun.

Yi Yun hesitated for a while before asking again, "Senior, I want to ask... Where is my sister?"

The Shepherd Boy looked at the endless expanse of land from the mountain peak as he said calmly, "You do not need to remember this gratitude, neither do I need you to repay this gratitude. I saved you because I agreed to Her Grace's request, as for Her Grace, she has promised under certain conditions. So, you do not owe me anything."

"Now, I have saved you, and you can leave..."

Leave?

Yi Yun's eyebrows ticked. How could he leave just like this? He had not even seen Jiang Xiaorou.

"Senior, I wish to meet my sister," Yi Yun said earnestly.

The Shepherd Boy sighed and shook his head, "The Human race and the Desolate race were originally two separate worlds. There is animosity between the two. You do not need to meet Her Grace, besides... She is not your sister. The fate between the two of you shall end here..."

Hearing the Shepherd Boy's words, Yi Yun's heart tightened. Will their fate end?

He and Jiang Xiaorou had relied on one another along the way, going through thick and thin together. However, now with the Shepherd Boy's simple words, their fate was ending?

"Senior Shepherd Boy! If it is as you said, that the Human race and the Desolate race are two completely different worlds, and my fate with her has come to an end, then I want to meet my sister once and hear it from her. If she too thinks that our fate has ended, then I will leave immediately and never again interfere with her life!"

Yi Yun said those words in a deep voice. He did not believe that Jiang Xiaorou would feel like their fate had ended. The relationship between Jiang Xiaorou and him could not be compared to the relationship between Jiang Xiaorou and the Desolate race which she had not interacted before.

The Shepherd Boy turned around and looked at Yi Yun. His hair was flying in the wind as his eyes looked deep like the ocean, "You do not need to meet her, neither will she meet you. This was promised by her at the beginning. It is also one of the conditions I had for saving you."

What?

Hearing this, Yi Yun felt his heart suddenly wrench.

Jiang Xiaorou had gotten the Shepherd Boy to save him under such conditions.

Although he guessed that his sister's status among the Desolate race was phenomenal, she had no strength. She would be restricted in the many things she wanted to do...

Without any questions, when Jiang Xiaorou pleaded the Shepherd Boy to save him, she must have agreed to several conditions.

"What else has she promised?" Yi Yun asked. The Shepherd Boy's words made him feel somewhat depressed.

"As for the rest... they deal with her cultivation and the Desolate race... These things, you do not have to know, nor do you need to worry about them. Although the things I made the Her Grace agree to are things she is not willing to do now, it is all for her own good. It is also for the Desolate race's future. Humans and Desolates have different paths, so it is best that you forget her!"

"Let me give you another word of advice. Quickly grow up. The peaceful years might not last for long. The next time we meet, we might be enemies."

When the Shepherd Boy said this, he turned around and was about to leave. Yi Yun shouted from behind him, "Hold on!"

"What else is there?"

The Shepherd Boy's back faced Yi Yun as he had no intention to turn around again.

"The peaceful years might not last for long... Is your Desolate race going to go to war with the Human race?"

The Shepherd Boy said, "Not necessarily, but... it is possible that we have to."

"Originally, destroying Tai Ah was the prelude to this battle. The orders from the Lord was to make a way through Tai Ah, Yun Long, and the other surrounding countries so that the Divine Wilderness would annex the territories of those countries, leaving the Divine Wilderness to spread all the way to the Tian Yuan world. The Tian Yuan world is also what you call the Western Regions."

"However, by accident, we found Her Grace and are no longer in a hurry to do so. Besides, Her Grace is kind, she does not wish to see Tai Ah turn into a river of blood..."

Open up the Divine Wilderness all the way to the Tian Yuan world?

When Yi Yun heard this, his mind trembled. Yi Yun did not know of the Tian Yuan world. Originally, Tian Yuan was the center point of a Go board. With Yuan marking the beginnings or the origins.

It seemed that the Tian Yuan world was the center of this world. As for the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, it was a country that was far from the world's center. As the Tian Yuan world was to the West of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would generally call the area the Western Regions.

As for the Divine Wilderness, it was situated to the north of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. If the Shepherd Boy set off a beast horde and swallowed the entire Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, then all the cities would turn into ruins. The land would become the land of the desolate beasts. Then the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom would really become a part of the Divine Wilderness!

If the Divine Wilderness and the Tian Yuan world were connected, then, with the Divine Wilderness as the base, the Desolate race could set off a beast horde to attack the Tian Yuan world directly.

And the Shentu family clan was located in the Tian Yuan world!

Yi Yun knew that the Desolate race had a feud with the Shentu family clan. Previously, the Desolate race had set off a beast horde in a bid to destroy the Shentu family clan, but they ultimately failed.

However, during that time, the Shepherd Boy had set off a beast horde deep within enemy territory, without backup. He could not rely on the Divine Wilderness.

If a channel to the Divine Wilderness was opened up, then there

could be endless hordes of desolate beasts that could come from the Divine Wilderness, straight into the Tian Yuan world. When that happened, the outcome of the war would probably change...

"Can I know the identity of my sister? She was originally a high-ranking member of the Desolate race, yet she ended up in the Cloud Wilderness. Then how did Shentu Nantian recognize her identity with a glance? Why do the Desolate race and the Shentu family clan have such an irreconcilable feud?"

Yi Yun always wanted to know the secrets behind this matter and understand Jiang Xiaorou's childhood.

However, the Shepherd Boy had no intention of explaining. He lightly said, "You do not need to know."

After he said that, the Shepherd Boy flew away.

His green figure quickly disappeared into the night, leaving Yi Yun standing on the high mountain. He was currently lost in thoughts.

The Shepherd Boy had left. The desolate plains were quiet. Only the sound of the wind could be heard. Yi Yun was for a while, confused.

Although he had escaped danger, he had not managed to meet Jiang Xiaorou. In the future, it would be extremely difficult to meet her again.

If they met again, she was one of the Desolate race, while he was of the Human race, what would happen?

He naturally could not return to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. So, where should he go?

The Divine Wilderness... With his strength, it was unlikely that he could cross it. Then... Should he cross the Cloud Wilderness?

For a moment, Yi Yun did not know where he should go.

He was urgently in need of improving his strength.

...

After separating from Yi Yun, the Shepherd Boy flew extremely fast.

His goal was the Tai Ah Divine City.

To save Yi Yun, he had been delayed for too long. He had even been wounded.

While flying, the Shepherd Boy suddenly felt something in his mind. A distant voice rang in his mind. The message was short. It said.

"The seal has diminished. Slow down."

The Shepherd Boy took a deep breath when he heard that the seal diminished. In his eyes, which had always seemed carefree, a rare glimmer of expectation and hope now appeared.

It was finally beginning. Everything was going according to plan.

And an unexpected surprise was the return of Her Grace.

Her Grace, who had disappeared for several years, had not died. With this, maybe he could be able to open up a new era for the Desolate race!

Chapter 372: Seal

In the vast Divine Wilderness, at the Tai Ah Divine City.

In the gray night sky, the Shepherd Boy had just landed in the divine city like a wisp of green smoke.

"Lord Qing Kui, Grand Magus Xuan Yin requests your presence as soon as possible."

A Desolate race warrior, dressed in light armor, bowed to him as a form of salutation as the Shepherd Boy landed.

Qing Kui was the Shepherd Boy's real name. When he traversed the human countries, he had never used his own name, hence the humans only called him Shepherd Boy.

Qing Kui nodded and walked towards the Tai Ah Divine City's central divine tower.

When he entered the central divine tower, Qing Kui walked straight underground, only stopping when he finally reached the sword and saber tombs.

Now, the sword and saber tombs looked completely different. If the Tai Ah Divine City's City Lord was here, he would be inexplicably surprised.

The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom had used the sword and saber tombs as the foundation for the Tai Ah Divine City. They had used the divine city for several years, but every generation's City Lord never knew that the sword and saber tombs hid such a secret.

Now, the two tombs had been opened.

Below the sword and saber tombs, a huge, black, spatial dimension had appeared. This space seemed to lead to an infinitely deep abyss. On the surface of the deep abyss, there was a light purple whirlpool which was slowly swirling.

Qing Kui stood before the whirlpool with a serious expression.

"Do you need to rest for a while? Your condition is not very good."

At that moment, an old woman with a walking stick made of peach treewood appeared behind him.

"Xuan Yin, you have worked hard. You have been taking care of this place during the days I was not here." The Shepherd Boy said to the old woman. "I do not need to rest. On the way back, I took some medicine. My injuries have basically recovered, and I have once again managed to suppress the Death Heavenly Revolution in my body."

"Qing Kui..." The old woman shook her head. "This time, you went deep into Tai Ah alone, and you battled the Shentu family

clan alone. This was too risky. If anything happened to you, it would greatly impact our plans!"

"I am cognizant of that."

The Shepherd Boy answered simply as he was reluctant about making a fuss of the matter. "Let us begin!"

"Good!"

As Grand Magus Xuan Yin said that, she stood opposite the Shepherd Boy. They hovered in the air and below their feet was the black swirl below the sword and saber tombs.

...

That night in the Divine Wilderness, across the vast land, a divine purple beam shot up into the sky. This divine purple beam was like a huge divine sword that shot upwards to split apart the nine heavens!

This divine beam lasted for longer than several hours and lit up an area of 50,000 kilometers in radius.

Even those in the remote Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, on the Divine Kingdom's boundary, could see this divine beam surging into the sky. It connected the heaven and earth like a path to reach the divine realm of the nine heavens.

Only when the Sun rose from the East did the divine beam slowly weaken before disappearing completely...

After the divine beam disappeared, an infinite amount of purple clouds gathered together.

There were more and more purple clouds gathering, in the end, the entire Divine Wilderness was covered.

In the boundary of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, people were shocked speechless upon seeing such a phenomenon.

Endless amounts of purple clouds covered a radius of 50,000 kilometers, obscuring the sky and covering the earth, it was an extremely spectacular sight!

"Purple Clouds' Birth, it is the Purple Clouds' Birth again..."

In a border city of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, an old man dressed in a dragon robe was filled with mixed emotions upon seeing this scene.

The dragon robe he wore was made of black gold threads, embroidered into it was nine golden dragons. All the nine golden dragons had 5 claws.

The nine five-clawed golden dragons combined to represent the

imperial throne.

He was the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's current ruler, the Divine Emperor!

The Tai Ah Divine City had fallen and the beast horde was about to flood into the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. The Divine Emperor had personally come to fight against the beast horde. He and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Sages were all situated in the Divine Kingdom's border city.

However, after the Shepherd Boy led the beast horde and took over the Tai Ah Divine City, he did not carry on moving South. Instead, he stayed in the Tai Ah Divine City for a long time.

It was only until today that a purple beam shot up into the sky. Purple Clouds' Birth!

The old Divine Emperor thought of the scene that had happened two years ago in the Cloud Wilderness.

The purple clouds that covered the sky blotted out the Cloud Wilderness. Back then, the upper echelons of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom thought that it was the birth of a special treasure. They had sent the Jin Long Wei to search for it. Even their national treasure, the Tai Ah Compass was used. However, they still returned empty handed.

Once in the Cloud Wilderness and once again in the Divine

Wilderness. The two Purple Clouds' Births were separated by two years, and this naturally had a connection that no one knew of!

The Divine Emperor looked into the distance. His gaze pierced through the endless lands of the Divine Wilderness. It seemed like he could see the ethereal image of the Tai Ah Divine City...

"Purple Clouds' Birth... it turns out to be related to the Desolate race. Two years ago, when I first saw the Purple Clouds' Birth, I never expected that it was because of them..."

"It is such a joke that I thought a special treasure had appeared in the Cloud Wilderness, and even deployed troops to search for it. In the end... Hai!"

The old Divine Emperor let out a long sigh and kept shaking his head. He could feel a sense of lifelessness in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's fate. Could this Divine Kingdom, which had been passed down for such a long time, eventually fall under his hands?

The Purple Clouds' Birth appeared in the Divine Wilderness. Far away, in the Cloud Wilderness, Yi Yun was alone.

The Divine Wilderness was too far away so he had no idea what was happening there.

He was currently planning his own future.

He wanted to leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

North of The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was the Divine Wilderness, to the East was the Cloud Wilderness. To the West was the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and in the South were the 10 Southern countries.

Yi Yun was now in the Cloud Wilderness, east of the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. He wanted to leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom as fast as possible. He could only head into the deep depths of the Cloud Wilderness, because if Shentu Nantian used some method to find him, he would definitely die.

The Cloud Wilderness may not be as vast when compared to the Divine Wilderness, but there was nearly no one in the deep depths of the Cloud Wilderness.

Yi Yun did not know what he would meet if he kept heading deeper into the Cloud Wilderness.

And if he really crossed the Cloud Wilderness, what scene would he see on the other side?

Would there be other human countries there? If so, would those countries be stronger or weaker than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?

This route would definitely be fraught with danger. Yi Yun also had no idea of how vast the Cloud Wilderness was. It might take him a year, however, this was also a training experience for him.

He needed to rapidly increase his own strength. He needed power!

The Shepherd Boy had said that Humans and Desolates have different paths. If he had absolute power, then he could set the rules himself. So what if Humans and Desolates had different paths?

Just as Yi Yun was planning his future, he suddenly saw a purple beam fly up into the sky, far into the distance. The ground then began to gently rumble!

This purple beam shot straight into the clouds. It was blinding and did not dissipate for a long time.

Yi Yun thought for a moment, what was going on?

After hesitating slightly, he began to rapidly move towards the blinding purple beam.

On the way, Yi Yun controlled his breathing as he kept himself on alert of his surroundings.

For there to be such a sudden phenomenon might be a fortuitous opportunity. It could also be an immense danger. Now, he lacked strength, and from how powerful the purple beam seemed, any tiny bit of danger from it could be too much for him. If that was the case, then he had to quickly leave.

After running for a long time, Yi Yun suddenly heard a loud boom. In a distant mountain valley, the ground exploded. Yi Yun then saw a human figure, shooting out from the pile of rocks on the ground.

This figure had dishevelled hair and a dirty face, his clothes were tattered and he looked like a beggar.

Yi Yun quickly hid. As he focused on it, he saw that the figure that had appeared was an old man.

This old man seemed crazy, as if he had been greatly provoked. As he ran, he cursed, "*****", this damn place, it is killing me! Really killing me!"

"After being trapped in there for so long, I have finally come out! It really was not ***** easy!"

As the old man cursed, he casually wiped his face. However, his hands were originally blackened, so he only dirtied his face even more. This wipe only made his old face even uglier.

However, even so, after he wiped his face, Yi Yun could still see it clearly...

That familiar face and those wretched facial features...

This old man, wasn't he Su Jie?

Old Man Su!

When Yi Yun was cultivating in the Cloud Wilderness's Lian tribal clan, he had met Lin Xintong and Old Man Su.

Old Man Su was miserly and greedy for food. He never seemed decent, but he had given Yi Yun a protective charm. In Fallen Star Gate, Yi Yun had used that protective charm to get out of the jaws of danger, killing the Golden Crow species instead. If not for it, he would probably have died in Fallen Star Gate.

Later on, during the Jin Long Wei's selection, Yi Yun had met Old Man Su once again in the Tao tribal clan. Old Man Su had said that he was going to explore some mystic realm, and with Lin Xintong saying she had some family matters to tend to, they bid farewell with each other.

As such,, they had not seen each other since the three of them split up.

Surprisingly, today he actually met Su Jie again in the Cloud Wilderness!

And it could be seen that this old man had gone through a miserable period.

Yi Yun hid behind some rocks. However, after Su Jie ran a few steps, he suddenly felt something and discovered Yi Yun.

Yi Yun decided to just stand up.

When Old Man Su saw Yi Yun, he was stunned.

Yi Yun was now much taller than he was 2 years ago. Although his looks had slightly changed, Old Man Su could still recognize him in a glance.

Can there be a mistake, it is this kid?

Old Man Su had estimated that he had been trapped in that darn mystic realm for two years.

In those two years, he had been locked in a purple seal. He had tried all sorts of methods but failed to break through the seal.

This seal could isolate Heaven Earth Yuan Qi and at the same time, gather the Power of Desolates.

As such, there were extremely rich Power of Desolates in the seal, but extremely thin Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. For a person like Old Man Su, he could choose to not eat a long time ago, and did not need food or drinks to survive, however, he could not go without Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

Without eating and without any Heaven Earth Yuan Qi to absorb, Old Man Su had nearly become a flickering candle in the wind over

the years.

He originally thought that he had failed miserably at an easy task, but he never expected that the purple seal would suddenly turned into a purple beam and surged into the sky, that was until it disappeared today.

As such, he finally managed to get out of that mystic realm!

Then, under such circumstances, he saw Yi Yun.

After being trapped for two years, and managing to finally come out, how could he see Yi Yun? According to Old Man Su's estimation, Yi Yun should have long since have been admitted by the Jin Long Wei, and should have left the Cloud Wilderness after that, right?

"How is it you?"

Su Jie and Yi Yun said that at the same moment. The two of them had never expected that they would meet each other here.

Chapter 373: Heading To Tian Yuan

In the last two years, Yi Yun had left the Cloud Wilderness and he had experienced a lot. Yi Yun's psychological state had changed greatly especially after the bitter experiences he suffered through over the past few days.

Now, with him returning back to the Cloud Wilderness, and meeting Su Jie again, it felt like everything had returned to the beginning. It filled Yi Yun with mixed emotions.

"Kid, it cannot be that you never left the Cloud Wilderness?"

Su Jie blinked his eyes. He found it hard to believe that, after entering the mystic realm two years ago, he would meet Yi Yun again right after he came out!

"I left, but because of some reasons, I have returned." Yi Yun's experience was a long story. "What about Senior? Why are you still in the Cloud Wilderness? Did you just come out of that mystic realm?"

Before they separated in the Cloud Wilderness, Yi Yun knew that Su Jie had gone in search of fortuitous opportunities.

Hearing Yi Yun's question, Su Jie went into a daze for a while. He blinked his small black eyes and seemed to turn dumb.

However, he was still quick to react. He calmly touched his dirty

beard and pretended to be mysterious, "Indeed, I had gone into a mystic realm. It was awesome, and there were plenty of fortuitous opportunities! In there, I gained a lot, but some of the opportunities were too difficult to obtain. I tried all sorts of methods, resulting in me being delayed by a bit."

Uh...

Hearing the words of Old Man Su, Yi Yun was stunned for quite a while. This old man still bragged well, even in such a pathetic state. Only a ghost would believe him!

However, since Su Jie did not want to mention the mishaps in the mystic realms, Yi Yun did not probe further.

"Kid, you were in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's Jin Long Wei campgrounds, so why did you come out to the Cloud Wilderness? To do a mission?"

Old Man Su looked at Yi Yun from top to bottom. Actually, Yi Yun was not looking great at present. After being locked in prison for ten days, his clothes had become covered in dirt and they were completely tattered.

With the two of them together, it was as if an old beggar had met a young beggar.

"It is a long story. I am leaving the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom." Yi Yun sighed.

"Leaving the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom? That cannot be..."

Old Man Su was stunned. In Yi Yun's situation, joining the Jin Long Wei and using the Jin Long Wei's resources to cultivate would be the best of outcomes. Why did he suddenly want to leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?

"Oh? How did you... break through to the Yuan Foundation?"

Su Jie found it incredulous that Yi Yun's cultivation level had already crossed the Purple Blood realm, breaking through to the Yuan Foundation in just two short years.

The Yuan Foundation realm was the most important realm for a warrior's path. It was the foundation of martial arts and should not be rushed.

"Breaking through too soon results in a shaky foundation. It will cause hidden consequences." Su Jie advised Yi Yun. As he wanted to say some more, a sudden "Gu" sound was heard. It was Su Jie's stomach calling...

Yi Yun was dumbfounded for a while as he looked at Su Jie. He found it amazing that an expert like Su Jie would be so hungry that his stomach growled.

Su Jie's face turned red. It was all because of that darn mystic realm. After being trapped for so long, and being isolated from

Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, he still needed the energy to sustain his life no matter how high his cultivation level was.

In that mystic realm, Su Jie only depleted energy. As such, he had no way to abstain from eating or drinking. Furthermore, Su Jie was originally a person who loved eating. Over the last two years, he had become extremely hungry.

In the mystic realm, he had decided that if he was able to get out, the first thing he did would be to eat a sumptuous feast.

Now, whatever Old Man Su saw looked like roasted meat. He rubbed his belly and coughed dryly, "The mystic realm was fraught with danger and it was thin in Yuan Qi. This old man has greatly expended his energy, and all his elixirs were consumed, so I am a bit hungry..."

Yi Yun found it funny, but he resisted the urge to expose the old man. He began collecting firewood to light a fire.

Thirty minutes later, a fire began to burn as a crackling sound could be heard from the burning wood.

A greasy leg of a beast was being roasted over the fire. Beside the fire, there was a crock pot that brewed bone soup.

Old Man Su watched at the meat in Yi Yun's hands. He rubbed his hands and asked, "Is it done roasting?"

Old Man Su had already asked this question several times. It was as if Yi Yun was seeing an old refugee. Helplessly, he took out a dagger and sliced off the cooked meat from the exterior parts of the beast leg. He then passed the meat along with the dagger to Old Man Su.

With the roasted meat in his hands, Old Man Su could not help but rip out a piece and fill his mouth.

The moment he bit down, the meat that was soft on the inside and crispy on the outside filled his mouth with oil. It was so delicious that he even wanted to swallow his own tongue.

After being trapped for so long, finally being given new life and eating roasted meat that had been absent from his life for so long, Old Man Su was truly in tears.

This was life. This was how one should live! No matter what darn mystic realms there are in the future, I would rather die than enter them!

As Old Man Su shouted out in his heart, he voraciously ate the meat.

He nearly thought that he would die of hunger in that mystic realm. Even with his cultivation level, he would slowly weaken if he had to stay in such an environment for a few decades. He would then have to enter a state of hibernation.

If no one saved him by taking him out of it, then he would never wake up.

"I say, kid. Why are you leaving the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom? Where are you going?"

Old Man Su casually asked Yi Yin while he was focused on destroying the roasted meat in his hands.

Yi Yun sighed and said, "I have nowhere to go..."

"Oh?" Su Jie was stunned for a moment. He knew something was unusual. Since Yi Yun had nowhere to go and had to leave the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, then he was probably forced to do so.

"You got chased out by the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom?"

Yi Yun smiled bitterly and said, "You can say that..."

After thinking through his words, Yi Yun narrated the main points of the recent events to Su Jie.

As for matters regarding Jiang Xiaorou, Yi Yun did not wish to mention much regarding those. Su Jie was after all, human, he might have some hatred for the Desolate race, so Yi Yun did not wish to mention matters regarding Jiang Xiaorou.

"The Shentu family clan? That is a family clan in the Tian Yuan

world... To offend the Shentu family clan, that sure is not a good situation to be in..."

Su Jie wiped the oil off his mouth and looked at the roasted meat in his hands. He then looked at Yi Yun and with a roll of his eyes, he said, "Kid, if you have nowhere to go, why not follow me?"

Su Jie did not care about the feud Yi Yun had with the Shentu family clan. What he cared about was being able to eat the roasted meat Yi Yun cooked daily.

Eating was the most important thing in life.

"Follow you?" Yi Yun looked up at Su Jie, "Where are you going?"

Su Jie smiled with a "Hehe" and said, "To the Lin family to look for my disciple! Speaking of which, the Lin family is also in the Tian Yuan world."

Find Lin Xintong?

Yi Yun's mind began churning as a white dressed figure, holding a long sword, appeared in his mind.

He had not seen Lin Xintong for a long time...

Su Jie finished his roasted meat and, as if it ought to be, took the uneaten roasted meat in Yi Yun's hands, before munching on it as

well.

His mouth was filled with meat as he unclearly said, "The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom is my hometown, so I brought Xintong here for training. Xintong's family is actually in the Tian Yuan world."

"What you call the Tian Yuan world is the Western Regions. And in fact, that is the central lands of the Human race. There are all sorts of powerful family clans gathered there as well as numerous experts! In comparison, this place is just a remote place in the east. How about it? Kid, do you want to broaden your horizons with me in the Tian Yuan world?"

Su Jie's words were tempting for Yi Yun.

The Tian Yuan world, the central lands of the Human race!

With more experts, it meant there would be greater opportunities for him there.

If he went to the Tian Yuan world, then his growth would be even faster, and his horizons would broaden.

Of course, he would be closer to the Shentu family clan. Eventually, he would collide with them!

Against such a colossus entity, Yi Yun's strength was incomparable. However, he felt the fighting spirit within him silently rise.

He had sworn to kill Shentu Nantian, making him pay ten times the price.

The Tian Yuan world would be his opportunity and would be a tremendous challenge.

To the Tian Yuan world? Thinking about it made Yi Yun's blood boil.

At that moment, Su Jie added on, "This old man has the official title of a guest in the Lin family with little else to do. Usually, if there is nothing, I too would not go to the Lin family. However, in this trip to the mystic realm, I have expended too much, so I will need to recuperate in the Lin family for a while. You can follow this old man. I will make do and take you in as an in-name disciple." Su Jie said casually.

When warriors taught disciples, there were personal disciples, normal disciples, and in-name disciples. Without a doubt, in-name disciples were the worst.

A lot of the time, in-name disciples was just a title, as nothing would be taught to them.

This was similar to a warrior having a quasi-master.

Yi Yun rolled his eyes. This old fellow clearly had no intentions of taking him in as a disciple.

Even if it was an official disciple, I might not even want it!

Yi Yun had such thoughts.

Su Jie could read Yi Yun's mind as he moaned, "Rotten kid, you sure think highly of yourself. In the Tian Yuan world, I am a famous Desolate Heaven Master. There are tons of young masters of different family clans who want to be my in-name disciples. You should be happy that I am taking you in as a disciple!"

Taking in Yi Yun as a quasi-disciple was just a sudden whim Su Jie had. If he took in such a disciple, then he would get to eat all sorts of good food daily, wouldn't that be a good deal?

As for teaching Yi Yun the Desolate Heaven technique, Su Jie never thought of it. After all, learning the Desolate Heaven technique was too tough. Those who had the talent needed were less than one in a million.

Chapter 374: Tian Yuan World

After taking Yi Yun in as an in-name disciple, Su Jie did not immediately rush to the Tian Yuan world, instead, he searched around the Cloud Wilderness. He wanted to find the people who had previously entered the mystic realm with him. However, those people had disappeared.

This made Su Jie sigh. Amongst those people, there was Marquis Wenyun, Li Wenyun, who was an old friend of his.

He and Li Wenyun had traveled the Tian Yuan world together and explored numerous mystic realms until Li Wenyun was conferred the title of Marquis in the Tian Yuan world. As for Su Jie, he had been made a guest Desolate Heaven Master in the many large factions in the Tian Yuan world. The both of them were quite successful.

And because Marquis Wenyun was injured, and due to his old age, he had returned to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom for his retirement. As a result, they had not met each other for several hundred years until the Purple Clouds' Birth two years ago. Marquis Wenyun had then invited Su Jie to explore the mystic realm, but who would have guessed that this mystic realm was a forbidden land.

Su Jie guessed that it was a land with ancient seals. As for what was sealed within it, he had no idea.

After Su Jie entered the mystic realm, he was quickly separated

from his old friend. Later on, he ended up being trapped in the purple seal and only just managed to escape.

As for whether his friends were alive or not, Su Jie had no way of knowing.

"Let us go!"

Su Jie sighed. When one's cultivation level reached a realm like his, it made life and death no longer be that big of a deal after having lived for tens of thousands of years.

Yi Yun remained silent. At that moment, he did not know what to say.

Su Jie took out an airship from his interspatial ring. After he activated the array, the airship shot up into the sky.

They then flew towards Tian Yuan, and even though there were several long distance teleportation arrays on the way, it would still take them several months.

On the way, Su Jie stopped every now and then. When he did, he got to learn many things.

Last night, there were many placed in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, the Yun Long Divine Kingdom and the surrounding small countries where purple beams had shot up into the sky.

And amongst those beams, the Divine Wilderness's purple beam was the most terrifying. It looked like a path to the sky and illuminated the world around it. It was especially stunning.

After the purple beam, the Purple Clouds' Birth appeared in the Divine Wilderness. The area it covered was much wider than the Purple Clouds' Birth that occurred in the Cloud Wilderness back then.

As such, Su Jie also came to understand that the mystic realm he had entered back then had something to do with the phenomenon he saw the previous night.

Not only the Cloud Wilderness had a mystic realm, there were mystic realms in several other places as well. And these mystic realms were all connected to one another.

The Desolate race had done something unknown in the Tai Ah Divine City to set off this phenomenon. Even several mystic realms, millions of kilometers away, had been activated, responding from afar.

And it too was the cause of the purple beam that shot up to the sky from the mystic realm that had trapped Su Jie. As the purple seal disappeared, he was freed.

As for the Shepherd Boy, he had saved Yi Yun in the Chu Prefecture City and then left him in the Cloud Wilderness. After that, he rushed to the Tai Ah Divine City to prepare matters

regarding the phenomenon.

By activating this phenomenon, Su Jie was released and met Yi Yun, who was also in the Cloud Wilderness and had been lured there by the purple beam.

All of these incidents seemed both likely, and unlikely, to be mere coincidences.

...

The airship traveled at a fast speed while Yi Yun stood quietly beside the airship's window. The airship traversed past vast lands of wilderness and forests until it arrived over a sea.

Yi Yun had naturally seen the sea in his previous life. However, the sea Yi Yun had seen was completely different from the sea he saw in this world.

The sea in his previous life frequently had storms. Even if there was no wind, there would always be undying waves.

However, this sea was completely different. It was too calm. There was not even the tiniest wave, the calmness of this sea made it seem eerie.

And the seawater was light red in color. It was the color of blood mixed with water, which was quite shocking.

"This sea is called the 'Untraversable Sea'" Su Jie said behind Yi Yun. "The reason why it is called the 'Untraversable Sea' is that no one has ever crossed it. Although we are currently flying above it, what we are seeing is just a small section in the middle of the straits between the Divine Wilderness and the Tian Yuan world."

"Going north, it will really be an Untraversable Sea. This sea is boundless without end. It is also dead still and has very little marine life in it. There are some mutated desolate beasts lurking deep in the Untraversable Sea. The rank of these desolate beasts is hard to estimate. Even if it was me who entered the depths of the Untraversable Sea, I would still find it very dangerous."

"Previously, there has been a Great Emperor from the Human race who tried to fly across the Untraversable Sea to figure it out. However, as he flew for seven to eight years, the further he went, the thinner Heaven Earth Yuan Qi became. Without Heaven Earth Yuan Qi, even a Great Emperor will slowly weaken. Eventually, he had no choice but to turn back midway..."

As Su Jie spoke about the legends of the Untraversable Sea, he added, "South of the Untraversable Sea, there is a land bridge that connects to the Divine Wilderness. As for countries like the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and the Yun Long Divine Kingdom, they are situated on this land bridge..."

When Su Jie said this, Yi Yun was alarmed. It was now clear why the Shepherd Boy wanted to destroy the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom to connect the Divine Wilderness and the Tian Yuan world.

It was hard to imagine how big the Divine Wilderness was. The Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, which was millions of kilometers in radius, was just a part of the land bridge that connected the Divine Wilderness with the Tian Yuan world.

En route, Su Jie told Yi Yun about several rumors regarding this world. As for the introduction of the Tian Yuan world, it shocked Yi Yun greatly.

The reason for the Tian Yuan world being called a "world", and not the Tian Yuan continent, was because the Tian Yuan world was very different from the area where the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom was situated.

Although the Tian Yuan world and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom were situated in the same world and were even connected by a large land bridge, the natural laws governing the Tian Yuan world and the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom were in fact very different.

The Tian Yuan world had its own independent system. In the Tian Yuan world, the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was much thicker, but also much more violent. The Yuan Qi was not easy to control there.

In the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, a warrior who could slash a sword Qi hundred feet out could only do so for fifty feet in the Tian Yuan world. It was the same with perception. Even a warrior who had opened Heaven's Eye would find that their perception of their surroundings would be much smaller in scope compared to when in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"Why is there such strange laws?" Yi Yun found it hard to believe. How could there be such a huge difference in the same world?

"I do not know." Su Jie shook his head. "Actually, the Tian Yuan world did not exist from the beginning, it was formed later on. The spatial-temporal aspects of the Tian Yuan world are also much stronger than other places. The violent Yuan Qi also gives birth to much more valuable treasures."

"Over there, it is like a higher ranked world. Warriors who cultivate in the Tian Yuan world will bear the pressure from the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi over a long period of time. There are better resources and much better heritages. Hence, the Tian Yuan world is the core of Human warriors. There are many experts over there, experts which other lands cannot compare to."

"Like a land area like the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, once a family clan grows strong enough, they can establish a country and make themselves a royal household and rule their lands. However, that cannot happen in the Tian Yuan world."

"The Tian Yuan world has no countries as there are too many strong family clans. For example, a powerful family clan like the Shentu family clan are only able to occupy a small region."

"The competition between the large factions is intense. Hence, in the Tian Yuan world, we end up with a situation where we have multiple family clans. Many of the family clans would compete against one another for their own interests, but they can also form

alliances through marriage."

"By splitting it in this way, where some live and some die, a new family clan will be born while an old family clan will perish. Some super family clans would be able to continue on amongst these battles. Their heritages are extremely profound, however, even such a family clan is not able to establish a country. Once you establish a country and try to make yourself emperor in the Tian Yuan world, then you will most likely be attacked by the other families."

With Su Jie's explanation, Yi Yun finally felt enlightened. So this was why... That was the reason why when the Tian Yuan world was mentioned, it would be the Shentu family clan or the Lin family, etc. The name of a family clan naturally sounds weaker than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

However, in terms of strength, these family clans far exceeded the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom.

"Kid!" Su Jie patted Yi Yun on the shoulder and said, "The Lin family is situated actually very close to the Shentu family clan. These two families have been fighting against each other over the recent years. However, they had previously formed an alliance due to common interests. If you were to go to the Lin family, it will definitely be fun."

Su Jie said this half-jokingly but Yi Yun became speechless when he heard this. Before he had even begun his travels through the Tian Yuan world, he was already fated to experience challenges and hardships, but of course, this was also an opportunity!

"Look, the sea is beginning to become less calm. We are slowly approaching the Tian Yuan world."

Yi Yun looked down from the airship's window and saw that there were ripples in the red seawater that looked like sea waves.

"Below the Tian Yuan world, there is a large, black whirlpool named the God Burial Abyss! This name isn't without reason. If a god really went there, he would not be able to return."

"The God Burial Abyss is situated in the deep depths of the Untraversable Sea. The whirlpool is extremely terrifying and it is pitch black deep down. It seems like it is a spatial-temporal door to another world. It continuously engulfs seawater, but it is unknown where the seawater goes."

"The whirlpool has a terrifying suction strength. If a Great Emperor goes too close to it, he will also be sucked in. And once you fall into that seemingly endless abyss, there is no way of returning!"

"That is how the God Burial Abyss got its name!"

"As for what is in the God Burial Abyss, that is still unknown. We have no idea if those who have entered the God Burial Abyss are alive or dead."

"Some people believe that the God Burial Abyss is not some land

of the dead, but a passage of no return. By passing through it, one would enter another alternate world. Hence, there have been some Great Emperors, who were nearing the end of their lives, who would enter the God Burial Abyss to probe it. They also wanted to see if it was some form of opportunity that could extend their lives."

When Su Jie said this, Yi Yun became greatly alarmed.

Untraversable Sea... God Burial Abyss...

Yi Yun's original impression was that a Great Emperor was an existence that was beyond one's reach, but from what Su Jie just said, there were even mystic realms that Great Emperors were helpless against in this world.

This was the power of the Creator, or the natural laws, that made people have to respect it!

As the airship proceeded, the Untraversable Sea became increasingly rough. This was clearly caused by the God Burial Abyss. It was clear how frightening the huge whirlpool was to create such tidal waves.

And at that moment, through the sea fog, Yi Yun saw a towering cliff in the distance.

This cliff was 100,000 feet tall and was like a divine wall that stood in the middle of the sky and the sea.

"That is the Tian Yuan world! The Tian Yuan world is just above the God Burial Abyss. A portion of the land you see is floating above the sea surface. No one knows what sort of power is supporting the Tian Yuan world and preventing it from sinking..."

Chapter 375: Unforeseen Situation

In the southern regions of the Tian Yuan world, there was a mountain range named the Jade Spirit Mountains.

The Heaven Earth Yuan Qi was thick here, giving birth to all sorts of treasures. Large family clans in the Tian Yuan world would always vie for this land.

However, though many families fought over the Jade Spirit Mountains for generations, a foreign family clan suddenly appeared, defeating all the other family clans, before they began thriving in the Jade Spirit Mountains. This family was the Lin family!

The Jade Spirit Mountains had a total of 324 mountain peaks. The Lin family's main branch occupied 18 mountain peaks, while its other branches scattered among the remaining 306 mountain peaks.

As for the exterior perimeter of the Jade Spirit Mountain, there was a vast plain. The exterior branch of the Lin family stayed in this plain, where they grew spirit grains and vegetables, reared spirit beasts and did business.

If any of the main branch's children lacked talent, the subsequent generation would end up in the side branches.

If the children of the side branches were inept, they would end up in the exterior branches of the Lin family the next generation,

becoming the grass roots of the Lin family.

A thriving and self-sufficient large family clan would need a large number of grass roots to provide them with the basic necessities of life.

When Yi Yun flew towards the Jade Spirit Mountain, he was extremely shocked seeing the Lin family.

The first thing he saw was the exterior perimeter of the Lin family area. There were numerous houses and palaces neatly erected on the plains. All of these buildings were made out of granite, which would remain steadfast for 100,000 years.

Buildings along with bricks and tiles stretched out endlessly into the horizon.

There were shops, a bustling city square, large areas of farmland and a wide open pasture...

Yi Yun previously found it hard to believe that a family clan's size could reach such a scale.

"Right in front of us is the Jade Spirit Mountains. I'll take you there, and in the future, you will be my in-name disciple. When you see me, you need to call me master."

Su Jie chuckled while Yi Yun rolled his eyes. To call this old man master was such a joke. Does he even look like someone with the

airs of a master?

They flew past stretches of mountains where fabulous palaces covered in mist stood on each mountain peak.

After seeing so much, Yi Yun felt numbed until he saw the 18 main peaks of the Jade Spirit Mountain.

The 18 main peaks were incredible tall and majestic. The clouds that covered the sky only covered the foot of the mountains.

When the airship began flying higher and higher, it broke through the white clouds, and what Yi Yun saw gave him an inexplicable shock. A 10 kilometer long head was floating in the clouds silently. When the airship Yi Yun was on flew past it, the huge head's large eyes that were the size of a lake stared at the airship.

The amber pupils of the pair of eyes were like towering trees. Above its head, there was a hill-like horn. Its body was covered in silver-white scales and each scale was about the size of a house.

In front of this gigantic head, Su Jie's airship looked like a minuscule bird.

Yi Yun was so shocked that his mouth turned agape. He looked at the back of the head and saw that behind the gigantic head, there was a huge silver-white body that resembled a python. It stretched out several hundred kilometers and it was extremely thick like a

mighty river.

The huge python's body was coiled around the main mountain peak. The 100,000 foot mountain was wrapped by it from the foot to the summit.

"Haha, it's big, right? That is the Lin family's guardian spirit beast, the Dragon Transforming Silver Python. Spirit beasts are different to desolate beasts. A desolate beast's strength comes from the Power of Desolates, while a spirit beast's strength comes from Heaven Earth Yuan Qi. Just this guardian spirit beast takes up one of the 18 main peaks!"

Legend said that a Silver Python could transform into a dragon. First, horns were grown, then four claws. Following that, a heaven calamity would befall the Silver Python, and once it survived it, it could fly into the sky and become a real dragon!

Now this Silver Python had a single horn growing on its head, and it was on the path to transforming into a dragon!

Of course, it was still far from becoming a real dragon. However, it was still shocking!

The heritage of the Lin family was really terrifying.

The only huge beast at the same rank that Yi Yun had previously seen was the Shepherd Boy's Long Gui.

That Long Gui was not as long as the large Silver Python, but the Long Gui was most likely heavier than the Silver Python.

"These ancient family clans are indeed extraordinary. No wonder when the Shepherd Boy's army attacked, he did not manage to destroy the Shentu family clan..."

Yi Yun spoke to himself as Su Jie eavesdropped. He laughed, "After that battle, the Shentu family clan's standing has been greatly reduced. Originally, the Shentu family clan was pretty overbearing, but now with their Ancestor injured, they are seeking alliances with other family clans. For example, they wish to form an alliance with the Lin family."

"Oh? Form an alliance with the Lin family?"

Yi Yun frowned. This was something he did not wish to see happen.

"Haha, don't be alarmed. It is just wishful thinking on their part. Tens of thousands of years ago, the Lin family did form an alliance with the Shentu family clan, but as they had various conflicts due to different interests, you can say that they are hostile."

"After the beast horde 10 years ago, the Shentu family clan began to mollify the conflict with the Lin family in an attempt to build an alliance. If you were the family head, would you agree?"

Su Jie's rhetorical question made Yi Yun shake his head.

Obviously, no one would agree to it.

When you were strong, you fought hard to vie for resources and suppress the Lin family. But now with the Ancestor injured, and your standing weakened, you want to mollify conflicts, and protect the interests at hand, how could there be such a good thing in this world?

If the Lin family was hostile to the Shentu family clan, it would be fine. Yi Yun would be much safer.

However, if the two sides formed an alliance, Yi Yun would have to consider going somewhere else.

"We are here!"

As Su Jie said, the airship landed on one of the 18 main peaks of the Jade Spirit Mountain.

There was a huge square built on the summit, and it was about a hundred acres in size. Bronze furnaces stood on the square. In the bronze furnaces, flames burned, emitting a fragrant smell, top grade sandalwood was being burnt in them.

"This main peak is specially for the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Masters to use. My house is at the foot of the mountain. Originally, Xintong also stayed on this mountain peak, however, I have no idea why that girl was summoned back by the family in such a hurry or for what..."

Su Jie rubbed his chin and was finding it strange. On the way, when he was nearing the Lin family, he had used a voice transmission charm to inform Lin Xintong of his return. However, there was no response.

Such situations were limited to Lin Xintong being away or she was in reclusive training.

Lin Xintong's standing in the Lin family was quite special. Although she was the most talented girl in over the past thousand years in the Lin family, due to her Yin Meridians, she was destined to not live beyond 500 years. Also, the higher her cultivation realm was, the harder the bottleneck would be.

There was nothing they could really do about it. As Lin Xintong was too perfect, and the Heavens were jealous, she was destined to have something taken away from her by the Heavens.

"Elder Su, you came back?"

When Su Jie walked out of the square, a person came welcoming him. When Su Jie flew into the Jade Spirit Mountains, the Lin family was informed.

Yi Yun looked at the person who was a middle-aged man. He was dressed like a steward, and he was probably an administrator of this main peak.

Yi Yun eyed the steward while the steward looked at Yi Yun, curious of Yi Yun's identity.

"This is an in-name disciple I took in." Old Man Su said it casually. When the steward heard this, he no longer paid attention to Yi Yun. Typically, a in-name disciple was not much different from a companion medicine boy.

"Is my room still there?" Su Jie asked.

"Elder Su sure likes to joke. Your room is definitely there and has been regularly cleaned." The steward hurriedly responded in a very respectful manner. "However, the courtyards beside Elder Su's residence have being occupied by some people..."

Just as the steward said this, a few people came walking over.

There was an old man dressed in green Desolate Heaven Master robes. Behind him were several young people who were most likely his disciples.

When the green-robed elder appeared, Yi Yun immediately held his breath.

This was because, he saw a very familiar logo on the elder's Desolate Heaven Master robe, the Shentu family clan's coat of arms!

Previously, when Yi Yun flew past the Shentu family clan's

airship, Yi Yun had seen this coat of arms. Later on, when Shentu Nantian wanted to kill him and Jiang Xiaorou, this coat of arms was unforgettable for Yi Yun!

How could it be someone from the Shentu family clan?

Yi Yun's mind began churning as his expression turned ugly. Was it possible that the Shentu family clan had formed an alliance with the Lin family?

If that was the case, this was extremely bad news for him!

And if that was true, then he had to leave the Lin family immediately. He had to go as far as possible before the Shentu family clan discovered him!

Yi Yun hid behind Su Jie's back and lowered his head slightly, hoping the other party would not notice him. He never expected such an unforeseen situation would happen. If not, he would have gotten Su Jie to help disguise him!

However, it was not easy to deceive such people with disguise techniques. If it was not well done, then it be giving himself away by such an conspicuous act, resulting in more suspicion!

"This Shentu family clan old man can't know me. He probably doesn't know the feud between me and Shentu Nantian in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. As long as I don't attract attention to myself, I should be fine..."

Many thoughts flashed past Yi Yun's mind. As he calmed his mind, his expression returned to normal.

"This is..." Su Jie also frowned. He had never expected to meet someone from the Shentu family clan. Also, from the steward's attitude, he was extremely friendly to these people. Was an alliance really formed? What was the Lin family's family head thinking, why did he form an alliance with the Shentu family clan now!?

Similarly, Su Jie did not have a good impression of the Shentu family clan. When you were strong, you plundered everything, but when your family clan's Ancestor was injured, you want to form an alliance, how could there be such a good thing in this world?

"Elder Su, let me do the introductions. This is Elder Shen Tu, who is a guest of the Lin family. The Shentu family clan's have extraordinary accomplishments in the Desolate Heaven technique. And Elder Shentu is an even greater expert at the Desolate Heaven technique!"

After that, the steward turned around and introduced Su Jie to the green-robed elder, "This is Elder Su, who is also a top Desolate Heaven Master. With the two of you staying together, you can learn a lot from each other in the future."

The steward clearly did not take notice of Su Jie's attitude as he introduced him eagerly.

Su Jie did not like the Shentu family clan, as for Elder Shen Tu, he too did not have a good impression of the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Masters.

People in the same line were enemies. When two top Desolate Heaven Masters gathered together, neither would accept the other, and there was always a need to compete.

The Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique level was always better than the Lin family's.

This made the Desolate Heaven Master in the Shentu family have a superiority complex. However, under such a situation, Su Jie's reputation in the Tian Yuan world was bigger than the green-robed elder, which made him unwilling to accept it.

Besides, they came to the Lin family under the orders of the family head. Other than showing they meant well, the Shentu family head had also said that they were to demonstrate the heritage of the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique to convince the Lin family of their greatness.

This would aid them greatly in what they wanted to do.

For this, the Shentu family clan had prepared a lot and failure was not an option.

So be it for personal or official matters, the green-robed elder wanted to vie with Su Jie.

The green-robed elder glanced at Su Jie and said, "You are Su Jie? I've heard of you. People have given you the nickname, 'Sacred Hands Su'! I have always wanted to meet you!"

The green-robed elder came straight to the point and the first words he said to Su Jie indicated his intentions to challenge him.

"It's just some praises by martial arts practitioners. You can't treat it seriously." Su Jie casually replied, but the green-robed elder clearly was unsatisfied with Su Jie's attitude as he said, "Praises? Then, is it right to say that Elder Su thinks he does not live up to the name?"

Su Jie chuckled, "Why? Are you planning on stealing that nickname from me? Speaking of this, who are you? I have never heard of you before..."

Su Jie was not someone to be messed with either. Su Jie was not afraid even though this green-robed elder was so testy in their first encounter.

"Heh!" the green robed elder sneered. He did not respond to Su Jie's words and instead tilted his head to look at Su Jie's back, before saying lightly, "Is that your disciple behind you?"

The green-robed elder's gaze landed on Yi Yun as he sized him up.

Yi Yun tensed up and began swearing in his mind. How did he

gain the attention of the old man when he was lacking so much in presence!?

Not only did the elder notice him, even the young men, who looked like disciples, behind the elder had all looked at Yi Yun. Their gazes were filled with provocation as if they wanted to compete with him.

Master against master, disciple against disciple.

Yi Yun really felt speechless. He had decided, "If the Lin family has formed an alliance with the Shentu family clan, then I'll immediately leave the Lin family. As for the provocation from these people, I can't even be bothered with them. If I did, then I'll definitely lose my life."

"Interesting, we will meet again very soon. We shall see who has the real qualities!"

After the green-robed elder said this, he brought his disciples to walk past Su Jie. As those young people walked, their gazes were still pinned onto Yi Yun. From their looks, they were clearly hoping to fight it out with Yi Yun, and then brutally beat him up.

"Kid, my name is Shentu Guang, remember it well!"

As they walked, a youth about the same age as Yi Yun left his name.

Yi Yun could not be bothered with such a trivial person. His only current thought was the possibility of the Lin family and the Shentu family having formed an alliance.

Only after those people left did Su Jie ask the steward beside him in a sullen manner, "Why are the people from the Shentu family clan here? Has the Lin family formed an alliance with the Shentu family clan?"

When Su Jie asked this, Yi Yun also held his breath. This was very important for himself.

Author's Note: 4000 character chapter. This sequence of events was foreshadowed when 300,000 characters (approximately Chapter 11x) were written. I've finally reached it.

Chapter 376: Evil Yi Yun

"About the alliance..." The steward began to think through his words, "Now, the family is indeed facing such a choice, and there is quite a number of upper echelon elders who are leaning towards it..."

When the steward said this, Yi Yun's heart sank. They were really going into an alliance!

He had just come to the Tian Yuan world, and his strength was still relatively tiny in this world. Did he have to travel the world by himself? If he did, he might even have to face the possibility of the Shentu family clan's deathly pursuits!

"They are leaning towards it? What are those old fools thinking? The Shentu family clan is not any good. Is allying with them not the equivalent of asking a tiger for its skin?"

Su Jie immediately cursed.

The steward smiled bitterly, "Elder Su, let me say my piece. Actually, this matter is related to you..."

"Oh? Related to me?" Su Jie was shocked.

"To be precise, it has to do with your disciple, Miss Xintong..."

Lin Xintong?

Yi Yun's heart thumped, was this related to Lin Xintong previously being summoned home?

And following that, the steward's next words verified Yi Yun's guesses.

"Elder Su, you naturally know the matter of Miss Xintong's meridians..."

The steward glanced at Yi Yun, intending to mince his words. He did not want to discuss Lin Xintong's problem in front of Yi Yun. However, Su Jie only waved his hand, indicating that he need not worry about Yi Yun, "Just say it directly."

"Oh... Having natural Yin Meridians means that one will die within 500 years of age. It is effectively the end of one's martial path, and it is an incurable disease."

"This meridian state is a curse from Heaven, however... Once someone is able to defy heaven and join up the natural Yin Meridians, then an incredible metamorphosis will occur. In ancient times, there was a peerless Great Empress who managed to reverse the situation of her natural Yin Meridians, and her cultivation level skyrocketed, becoming the number one person of her generation. Her strength was unfathomable... It was rumored that the Great Empress was much stronger than our Lin family's grand elder and the Shen Tu's Ancestor of our time..."

"And about two years ago, the Shentu family clan found an ancient Desolate Heaven technique in a mystic realm, and it is suspected of being related to the peerless Great Empress..."

"The Shentu family clan believes that this ancient Desolate Heaven technique is able to join up Miss Xintong's terminated meridians. Thus the upper echelons of the family summoned her back."

"However, the family's upper echelons are still doubtful of this technique. Although it is really an ancient Desolate Heaven technique recipe, it cannot be confirmed that it was left behind by that peerless Great Empress. And... even if the recipe really can cure the natural Yin Meridians the family's upper echelons do not believe that the Shentu family clan has the ability to guarantee that they will be able to refine this desolate bone relic..."

When the steward said this, Su Jie was stunned.

Over the past few years, he had brought Lin Xintong around to many places, but he had failed to find a way to join up her natural Yin Meridians.

Now, the Shentu family clan had declared that they found a Desolate Heaven technique recipe related to the ancient Great Empress, how could this not surprise Su Jie?

Previously, Lin Xintong may have been a direct child of the Lin family and a genius not seen in a thousand years, she was greatly loved by the Matriarch. However, because of her naturally

terminated meridians, her status in the Lin family was not high.

For the Lin family, with their great heritage, everything went in accordance with the rules. And these rules could only be described as being cold and heartless.

The children of large family clans were always in a state of competition. As Lin Xintong was greatly loved by the Matriarch, it was bound to cause a lot of jealousy. Furthermore with Lin Xintong being destined to a short life, she was essentially a cripple. Hence, she did not live a happy life within the family clan, which was why she went out on training expeditions with Su Jie.

However... if Lin Xintong's terminated meridians were to be joined up, then her status would be completely different. Once the natural Yin Meridians metamorphosed, Lin Xintong's future would be limitless. This would definitely be a great event for the Lin family's history!

"What are the conditions?"

Su Jie asked in a deep voice. He already had a bad premonition about this. Since the Shentu family clan had such a Desolate Heaven technique recipe, they would not join up Lin Xintong's terminated meridians for nothing. There had to be conditions attached to it.

And there was probably only one condition that would gain the Shentu family clan's trust...

"The condition is to marry Miss Xintong into the Shentu family clan. With that, the Shentu family clan will reap great benefits. As Miss Xintong's body is special, intercourse with a man will be a great opportunity. Especially after Miss Xintong's terminated meridians are joined up, the man that gain's Miss Xintong's primordial Yin will greatly increase his strength by one realm. He may even instantly gain the insight into the laws Miss Xintong knows..."

"As such, the Shentu family clan will have one more peerless expert at the level of the Shentu Patriarch. Under normal circumstances, that person's future would be even stronger than that of the Shentu Patriarch..."

"Furthermore, with Miss Xintong marrying into the Shentu family clan, she would become one of the Shentu family clan. So, the Shentu family clan will then immediately have two peerless experts."

I see...

Yi Yun understood. The ploy the Shentu family clan had was brilliant.

Now the Shentu family clan was vulnerable, once it formed an alliance with the Lin family, it would be able to ride out this period of vulnerability.

And following that, they would have one more child who was at least at the level of the Shentu Patriarch, as well as another

peerless Great Empress. With that, the Shentu family clan would probably become the number one family in the Tian Yuan world!

"Who is Miss Lin's marriage partner?"

Yi Yun suddenly asked.

Seeing Yi Yun ask him, the steward frowned. He naturally did not feel happy about it. As a main peak's steward, his status was naturally quite high.

He was speaking with Su Jie, yet a young in-name disciple suddenly interjected. Did he not know his manners?

Furthermore, he had called Miss Xintong Miss Lin, was she someone he could address freely like this?

As Su Jie was around, he did not immediately reprimand Yi Yun, but he used an unpleasant tone when he harshly replied, "Of course it's the Shentu family clan's number one hero, Shentu Nantian. Only he is worthy of Miss Xintong."

It was indeed that rascal, Shentu Nantian!

Yi Yun took in a deep breath. Indeed, enemies often cross each other's paths. Although he knew that he would definitely clash with Shentu Nantian when coming to the Tian Yuan world, he never expected for it to be this fast. He had just arrived in the Tian Yuan world and had not even warmed the ground with his steps,

but already he ended up being connected with Shentu Nantian again.

"Marrying Lin Xintong, gaining the purest primordial Yin of her pure Yin body, breaking through one huge realm and gaining Lin Xintong's insights into the laws. At the same time, he will gain a peerless Great Empress as a wife, becoming the person in power of the number one family clan in the Tian Yuan world..."

"All of these good things befalling you. If that were to happen, will I not just die from anger?"

Yi Yun's face turned gloomy. He was never a generous man.

He and Jiang Xiaorou had nearly been killed by Shentu Nantian. He had then separated from Jiang Xiaorou because of Shentu Nantian. With this great feud between them, how could Yi Yun watch on helplessly as Shentu Nantian gain all of these benefits and make a meteoric rise?

"It really is that son of a bitch!" Su Jie began swearing. "That kid Shentu Nantian is a wolf in sheep's clothes. He is not a good person, how can Xintong marry him? What is the decision of the Lin family, have they already agreed?"

Su Jie's face was gloomy as he did not have any good impressions of Shentu Nantian.

The steward said, "It has not been decided... but several elders of

the upper echelon are leaning towards agreeing to it. As for the elders who are not agreeing to it, they need to see proof of the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven techniques. They have to first prove that they have the ability to heal Miss Xintong of her naturally terminated meridians."

The steward's answer was within Su Jie's expectations.

A large family clan has to follow some unreasonable family rules to exist in the Tian Yuan world. And the first family rule was that everything had to place the family's interest at its forefront!

If the family clan could produce a peerless Great Empress, then the Lin family would give up anything to pursue the matter. And the final decision of the Lin family's elders was the highest command which no one could defy!

If the Shentu family clan could really prove that they could heal Lin Xintong of her naturally terminated meridians, then the Lin family would definitely agree to the marriage. It was pointless for anyone to object to it.

Not even ten Su Jies would be enough, let alone one.

Thinking of this, Su Jie sighed. He too was helpless.

He inadvertently glanced back at Yi Yun. He saw that Yi Yun's face was gloomy, but his eyes were sparkling as if he was thinking of something.

"This poor child... He is probably thinking of how to escape..."

Su Jie empathized with Yi Yun. Yi Yun was really unlucky. He was doing well in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom and would have enjoyed immense riches in the future, but the sudden beast horde placed the country on the brink of destruction. It was not easy to have the Shentu family clan come to their rescue, but when they did, he was locked on by Shentu Nantian and barely escaped from the claws of death.

Now, he had come to the Lin family and could have stayed in the Lin family to cultivate safely. He could have relied on the Lin family and not been afraid of Shentu Nantian, after all, the two families were in conflict.

However, he had been placed in a situation where the Lin family was considering allying themselves with the Shentu family clan!

The two family clans had been in conflict for so many years, yet they seemed to have turned into allies over the past two years. When one was unlucky, one could even have one's teeth stuffed from drinking cold water.

His enemy was about to gain endless amounts of benefits with a large scale opportunity, breaking through in his cultivation and gaining a beauty, he might even one day become the master of the entire Tian Yuan world.

As for Yi Yun, he would become a fugitive again, and would have

to endure being endlessly hunted. This was probably one of the worst tragedies of life!

Su Jie sighed. He really found Yi Yun to be pitiful. The current Yi Yun was too weak and had no opportunities to grow.

Under such circumstances, even if Yi Yun had tenacity and perseverance, Su Jie did not believe that Yi Yun would have the ability to change anything.

Even Su Jie himself could not change anything. The decision of the upper echelons of the Lin family was final. This was a matter that directly influenced the future of the Lin family.

Su Jie shook his head and no longer looked at Yi Yun. As for Yi Yun, his eyes were moving as a sinister thought appeared in his mind.

He did not wish to run again. He had had enough of living the life of a fugitive.

For now, not every Lin family elder had agreed, so he still had time.

"Shentu Nantian... If I do not cause trouble for you, then I might as well cripple my own cultivation and become a monk!"

With this thought in mind, several ideas popped up in Yi Yun's head. Even an extremely evil thought suddenly popped up in Yi

Yun's mind.

What if I made Shentu Nantian a cuckold?

Chapter 377: Taking Revenge If There Was Any, And Stabbing One In The Back

If he really succeeded in making Shentu Nantian a cuckold, then wouldn't all the benefits awaiting Shentu Nantian become his?

This thought flashed past Yi Yun's mind. He was rather taken aback as he frowned. He spoke to himself, "When did I become so evil? Although I don't think I have been a gentleman all this time."

Yi Yun recalled the experiences over the past two years. Be it Lian Chengyu, Tao Yunxiao or Yang Haoran, Yi Yun had always been meddling with things in secret. Even the narcissistic and crazy Luo Huo'er had been pranked by Yi Yun when she wanted to prank him, and Luo Huo'er was still clueless over who had caused her embarrassment back then.

Taking revenge if there was any, and stabbing one in the back was Yi Yun's *modus operandi*.

Against Shentu Nantian, Yi Yun had already suffered greatly. It was enough to be vexed by him once if he was vexed a second time, then he might even suffer from internal injuries due to his anger.

The Shentu family clan had taken an ancient Desolate Heaven technique recipe out with great fanfare this time. Other than the value of the recipe, just the materials used for the recipe would probably be invaluable.

To gain her hand for such a huge price, they would probably announce it to the world. They would then receive all sorts of marital gifts from all powers. And if, at that moment, Shentu Nantian was made a cuckold... wouldn't he vomit blood from the anger?

A warrior needed a good mental state to practice martial arts. Sometimes, they would go into reclusive training for decades. During this period, the person would sit alone and his mind would be as still as water.

Sometimes, when breaking through a realm, one needed a good frame of mind to endure the harassments of mental demons.

However, if the pangs of anger remained in one's heart, then it would be over. It would be hard to still one's mind in reclusive training. It could easily cause the pangs of anger to flare up.

If a person was affected by one's mental demons while breaking through, they might even lose themselves to the demons.

Mortals could die from anger. Stifling one's anger for long periods of time could shorten one's life. Anger would not affect a warrior's lifespan, but it would affect one's martial heart, slowing down one's cultivation speed.

If Shentu Nantian got wind that he was made a cuckold, and the person who took away all his benefits was the ant that he looked down on and could easily kill, it would be a wonder what Shentu Nantian's thoughts would be...

These thoughts flashed past Yi Yun's mind. Although he had thought through these clearly, Yi Yun eventually shook his head. Although he really wished to anger Shentu Nantian greatly to create a mental demon, he did not want to make use of Lin Xintong to seek revenge on Shentu Nantian.

Of course, Yi Yun did not consider himself as a man of integrity, but he had his bottom line. In Yi Yun's heart, Lin Xintong was pure like a fairy from the heavens.

She was calm and gave off the demeanor of a light breeze, but in fact, she was a very determined person. Her martial heart was not to be shaken.

That day when Yi Yun met Lin Xintong under the moon, Lin Xintong had said that everyone had their own fate. Although her meridians were cursed to be terminated, and she was not accepted by the heavens, she had not given up even a glimmer of hope. She wanted to use her short life span to fight till the very end.

How could such a determined girl have a casual temperament?

"Let nature take its course... I will do my best to destroy the marriage plans between the Shentu family clan and the Lin family... Also, other than healing Lin Xintong of her natural terminated meridians, there is nothing left that needs to be considered."

Yi Yun was indebted to Lin Xintong. When Yi Yun knew of Lin

Xintong's naturally terminated meridians, he was previously determined to seek a cure for Lin Xintong's condition.

Back then, Lin Xintong had previously said that when she made contact with Yi Yun, she could feel her terminated meridians undergo a strange change. Although it was not obvious, it definitely happened.

Back then, Yi Yun didn't have a pure Yang body. And even if he had, he did not believe that his body would result in Lin Xintong's terminated meridians having any reaction. That strange change could only happen due to the Purple Crystal.

The Purple Crystal was extremely mysterious. Its origin was bizarre and Yi Yun found it difficult to estimate the realm of the Purple Crystal. In these two years, the Purple Crystal had created one miracle after another. Be it mystic realms like the sword and saber tomb or even the Pure Yang Sword Palace's mysteries they had all been successfully opened up by Yi Yun using the Purple Crystal.

And even a mighty figure like the Shepherd Boy had not discovered anything about the Purple Crystal.

For such a divine item, Yi Yun believed that the Purple Crystal's realm far exceeded the ancient Great Empress from back then. Furthermore, Lin Xintong's terminated meridians had reacted to the Purple Crystal, so under these circumstances, Yi Yun was confident that the Purple Crystal was able to heal Lin Xintong. This was the greatest thing he could rely on to destroy Shentu Nantian's hopes.

Would joining up terminated meridians with the Purple Crystal be difficult... probably not!

When Yi Yun was thinking this through, Su Jie suddenly asked, "Where is Xintong? I want to see her!"

Although Su Jie was powerless against overturning the decisions of the family's upper echelon, he could at least meet his own disciple and understand her actual thoughts. If possible, he could help fight for her, and obtain some tiny concessions.

Any child's interests could be sacrificed when pitted against a family's interest. It was even more so for the females of the Lin family.

Su Jie felt pain for Lin Xintong.

"Miss Xintong is currently in reclusive training. When Miss Xintong learned of this matter two years ago, she went into reclusive training without coming out. Some elders wanted to meet her, but they were rejected on grounds of her reclusive training..."

"Reclusive training... as expected..."

Su Jie shook his head. Previously, he had failed to contact Lin Xintong when he used a voice transmission charm. Thus, he had felt that something had happened.

Actually, now Lin Xintong's position in the Lin family had become special. Originally, Lin Xintong was just a beloved child of the Matriarch, and she was destined not to amount to greatness. The elders would not hesitate to sacrifice Lin Xintong for the interests of the family.

However, now it was different. If Lin Xintong's naturally terminated meridians were healed, and she became a peerless Great Empress, then her status would become prominent.

Even the Lin family's grand elder would have to be careful with his attitude towards Lin Xintong.

Although the final say was subjected to the elders, no one dared to force Lin Xintong. This was because the Lin family wanted a Great Empress that had a sense of belonging to the Lin family. In such a future, Lin Xintong could become a pillar of support for the Lin family to allow it to prosper.

On the other hand, if Lin Xintong felt resentment towards the Lin family in the future, then she would not be of any help to the Lin family when she became a peerless Great Empress. Even helping the Lin family once twice because of past sentiments would be all that one could wish for.

This was not the outcome the Lin family wanted.

Hence, this matter had been dragged on. Now, it has been two years, and the situation was unlikely to drag on any further.

"Tell Xintong that her master is back and wants to meet her." Su Jie told the steward. Lin Xintong could reject meeting her family's elders, but she would definitely meet Su Jie.

"Yes, Elder Su." The steward replied respectfully. After some thinking, he exhorted, "Elder Su, currently, almost half of the Elders have agreed to the marriage proposal. As for the other half, they are not against it but are taking a wait-and-see attitude. Elder Su, I would hope that you would note..."

The steward halted his speech midway. It was evident what he meant. He had euphemistically informed Su Jie not to fan the flames for Lin Xintong to make her oppose the matter.

In these two years, it was not easy for the Lin family's elders to give Lin Xintong the time to think over matters.

However, Su Jie grunted and said, "I don't even know the veracity of the Great Empress's recipe. And the Shentu family clan might not even be able to refine it! Who knows if the Shentu family clan is actually cheating us!?"

How could the Great Empress recipe be easily refined? Even Su Jie did not dare to say that he was capable of refining the ancient recipe.

"Oh? You said that we won't be able to refine it?" At that moment, an old voice called out. Yi Yun looked up and saw an old woman with silver hair. She held a walking stick as she walked

over slowly.

And behind this silver-haired old woman, there were a few people dressed in Desolate Heaven Master robes. They were people of all ages and genders.

The green-robed elder who had provoked Su Jie and Shentu Guang, who had provoked Yi Yun, were also there.

There were about 30-40 people from a rough count. These people were no doubt Desolate Heaven technique experts of the Shentu family clan and their disciples.

Seeing this silver-haired old woman, Su Jie's heart jumped. He knew this old granny. She was the elder sister of the current head of the Shentu family clan. She was very famous in the Desolate Heaven technique circles, and people called her the Thousand Hand Granny.

She was definitely much better than the green-robed elder from before!

"Two years..." The old woman stopped and suddenly slammed her walking stick on the granite tiles on the ground, resulting in a dull thud.

"My Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven Masters have stayed in the Lin family for two years. In the past two years, we have shown our good faith and even used the Gloriosa Superba Spirit Mountain

as a dowry for Lin Xintong's marriage. Yet, you have been delaying to accept this marriage proposal."

"Now, even an ignorant person has come here and questioned the standard of my Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique. What a joke!"

When the Thousand Hand Granny said this, she glanced coldly at Su Jie.

Su Jie's face sank. This old woman dared to point him out as an ignorant person?

Previously when he exchanged words with the green-robed elder, the other party was just being provocative and did not make it as clear like the old woman was verbally attacking him. This was really breaking all ties.

"Darn old granny, did you not wash your mouth after going to the toilet? Or else, why is your mouth so smelly?" Su Jie was not any proper old man. If he did not respond with something worse when he was scolded, how could he endure it?

"Oh?"

A murderous intent flashed in the Thousand Hand Granny's eyes, "Su Jie! You are courting death!"

"Ha! Do you want to make a move?" Su Jie laughed. He was not

afraid to make a big commotion. This was the turf of the Lin family. Although the Lin family had the intention of accepting the Shentu family clan's conditions, that was all because of their interests. However, if he and the Shentu family clan turned hostile, then the Lin family would definitely not ignore it and make the Shentu family clan account for it.

If things came to blows, then the Thousand Hand Granny would definitely be the one to suffer.

Naturally, the Thousand Hand Granny knew this. Her wrinkled face turned gloomy like an ancient corpse that had been unearthed from a tomb. It looked horrific.

"So what if you win the battle of tongues? At such an age, you still have the temperament of a child!"

"This time, the Shentu family clan has invited some Desolate Heaven Masters from the Tian Yuan world and their close disciples. In two months, there will be a Desolate Heaven technique tea session at the Tian Hua peak. There, we will let you see if the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique meets the mark! Elder Su, you will not lack the courage to attend it, right?"

Chapter 378: Desolate Heaven Technique Tea Session

"Desolate Heaven technique tea session?" Su Jie sneered, "How can I lack the courage to attend?"

A Desolate Heaven technique tea session was actually just a gathering of a bunch of old guys, where they would discuss the Desolate Heaven technique while they ate and drank. Also, they would also brag about their achievements in the Desolate Heaven technique.

While bragging, it was also common for them to show off some of their techniques.

Typically, there was no real need for a competition, as they only needed to display some of their best techniques to gain the praise of others.

Su Jie knew the old men of the Tian Yuan world well. Once they were complimented, they would immediately say false niceties like "wrongfully praised", "exaggeration", or "this old man only has an empty name".

In fact, these people were ridiculously vain. They would immediately rage the moment anyone belittled them. They would roll up their sleeves and fight it out with you.

Hence, hearing all these extremely arrogant and self-important

people saying all sorts of words filled with false modesty, one's goose bumps would pop up so much that they would fall off.

However, the theme of the Desolate Heaven technique tea session that the Thousand Hand Granny mentioned was not about complimenting each other or boasting.

Those who participated in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session would be part of their own camp. Before the tea session, both sides would be easily agitated, and during the actual tea session, they would show off all sorts of skills.

Previously, it was mostly disciples who flaunted their skills in these kinds of tea sessions. After all, the old fellows treasured their reputations greatly. If right after they flaunted a technique, someone even better appeared, embarrassing them, then it would be awkward.

And it was fine if the disciples lost.

However, for this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, it was clearly not a competition amongst disciples. Those old fellows would probably gear up to flaunt their skills.

After all, the Shentu family clan was taking this opportunity to let the Elders, who were unwilling to agree to the alliance, see their strength in the Desolate Heaven technique.

"Don't be full of yourself, or it might turn ugly when it comes to

it!" The Thousand Hand Granny snorted before she flicked her sleeves and left.

The other people from the Shentu family clan were all confident. The older generation looked at Su Jie, while the younger generation looked at Yi Yun.

They believed that this kid beside Su Jie was definitely his disciple.

At the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, those older masters would definitely be the stars of the show, but their disciples would also be dazzling. The younger generation represented the future. A genius, who had extraordinary talent in the Desolate Heaven technique, was an invaluable fortune to a large family clan.

After the Thousand Hand Granny and company left, Su Jie brought Yi Yun to his residence. Just before they entered, Su Jie suddenly turned his head and said, "I say, kid. Don't stay in the Lin family. I'm foreseeing bad signs. You might lose your life if you carry on staying here. This old man will stay in the Lin family for a while to take a look. If Xintong agrees to it, and the sons of a bitches from the Shentu family clan can really heal Xintong, then once Xintong is healed, I will also leave the Lin family."

Su Jie was originally not from the Lin family, and he was a guest with a different family name. He was free to come and go, and he was not under the jurisdiction of the Lin family.

If Lin Xintong agreed to the marriage, and her terminated meridians were healed, then that would be a great thing for Lin Xintong.

As for Shentu Nantian, as long as Lin Xintong's strength was strong, she could be completely independent.

Also, Lin Xintong was not some weak woman. Even if she married into the wrong household, it would not be anything horrible. In the future, when Lin Xintong becomes a peerless Great Empress, it would be very easy for her to take control of her own destiny.

Hence, Su Jie felt that he should also leave. If his disciple had a bright future, he would definitely be happy, as long as it was her choice.

"Kid, us meeting is also a form of fate. I have some old friends in the Tian Yuan world. I'll write a letter for you. If you take it with you to them, they will probably take you in."

Su Jie sat down on a chair and took out a pen and paper.

Yi Yun looked at the old man. Su Jie's hair was already white, and his body was slightly hunching.

Looking at the back of Su Jie writing a letter, Yi Yun suddenly felt touched. If it was not for this old man, he would probably have died inside the Fallen Star Gate. And now, Su Jie was sending him

away, and giving him a letter. If Yi Yun did not have the Purple Crystal as his hope, then he would definitely have left. And this letter would be of timely help.

This old man had been most kind to him.

"Senior Su Jie." Yi Yun said softly, "This junior wants to ask if you have any advanced means of disguising one's appearance such as a tool or skill, which can prevent people with very high cultivation levels to not be able to see my original looks..."

Yi Yun's question stunned Su Jie. He stopped writing and said, "You are afraid of being recognized? Although it's good to be careful... it shouldn't matter. The Tian Yuan world is too big. Shentu Nantian also doesn't know that you have come to the Tian Yuan world, so the probability of him finding you is tiny. You can at most change your name."

"I don't want to leave." Yi Yun shook his head. "I want to take a look at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session in two months time."

"Oh? Not leaving?" Su Jie was shocked. "Staying in the Lin family is dangerous. Although the Lin family and Shentu family clan have yet to make an alliance, who knows what will happen in the future?"

"Besides, why do you want to take a look at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session for? Today, although I was tough with my words against that old hag, I actually do not have much

confidence."

Su Jie sighed as he shook his head. "In terms of the Desolate Heaven technique, the Lin family is indeed inferior to the Shentu family clan. Furthermore, this time, the Shentu family clan has invited many Desolate Heaven technique masters from the Tian Yuan world to hold the ground. In two months, the Shentu family clan will probably steal the show at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session."

"For such an important occasion, Shentu Nantian would definitely be present. Do you want to see your enemy riding on the crest of success?"

Su Jie looked at Yi Yun in a puzzled fashion. Was Yi Yun a masochist? If it was him, he would have ran as far as he could, for everything was clean as long as the eyes did not see it.

Yi Yun said, "It's because I also want to participate in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, which is why I'm thinking of disguising myself. Also... Senior Su Jie, can you teach me the Desolate Heaven technique in these two months?"

What?

Su Jie was shocked and looked incredulously at Yi Yun.

"You want to learn the Desolate Heaven technique? To participate in the tea session in two months? Don't tell me you

want to pit your Desolate Heaven technique against the Shentu family clan's younger generation!?"

Su Jie was completely speechless. This was only because the person who said it was Yi Yun, if it was anyone else, he would have thought that the person was an idiot.

However, even if it was Yi Yun, Su Jie still found him abnormal. The Desolate Heaven technique was not something that could be learned overnight. Yi Yun had not practiced martial arts for a long time, so how could a Desolate Heaven technique that was learned at the last minute be qualified to participate in the tea session? Wouldn't that just end up with him being ridiculed by the Shentu family clan?

Yi Yun said, "This junior has previously come into contact with the Desolate Heaven technique while in the Tai Ah Divine City. You can say that I'm at the introductory stage."

"How long was the contact?" Su Jie looked at Yi Yun in a speechless manner. Yi Yun had not practiced martial arts for more than two years. Even if he had begun learning the Desolate Heaven technique ever since they had separated, what could he do now? He would still be brutally defeated by others.

"A few months... Previously, I had learned with Grandmaster Yuehua for some time." Yi Yun knew that Su Jie would definitely think lowly of his standards if he only said that he had learnt the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months. Hence, he had to tout Grandmaster Yuehua's name, to give Su Jie some confidence.

However, Su Jie still looked at Yi Yun as if he was looking at a mad man, "Kid, don't tell me you have suffered too many setbacks, resulting in depression, so now, you are just amusing yourself by using this old man?"

"Since you have come into contact with the Desolate Heaven technique, you should know that there are three big steps of the Desolate Heaven technique. The first step, extraction of the Power of Desolates. The second step, controlling the Power of Desolates seal. The third step, forming the relic."

"For this, just the extraction of the Power of Desolates needs several years of hard work to barely pass. If you are not thorough with extracting the Power of Desolates, then it would be a waste of materials. The desolate bone relic would also not be refined properly."

"Following that, controlling the Power of Desolates seal. That is even more complex as there are thousands of hand seal techniques. Different elemental Power of Desolates require different hand seal techniques. If you are not careful, you can easily dissipate the Power of Desolates that you extracted through painstaking means, resulting in an explosion."

"I have more than 3000 hand seal techniques alone! Learning every one of them requires a lot of practice. One also needs to have good perception and one can only slowly grasp them through the accumulation of time."

"As for the third step, forming the relic. It is easier than the first two steps. However, it is just slightly easier. There are also thousands of techniques used to form the relic. Without being able to grasp more than a hundred techniques, you can't even call yourself a Desolate Heaven Master without blushing."

Yi Yun was naturally aware of the things Su Jie said. He had gone through systematic lessons for the Desolate Heaven technique.

To Yi Yun, extracting the Power of Desolates was extremely easy. With the Purple Crystal, Yi Yun was much better than Su Jie in this aspect.

The problem lied in the hand seal techniques.

The Purple Crystal could allow Yi Yun to control energy as he wished, however, it could not increase Yi Yun's perception.

Learning the seals required time!

Although Yi Yun's perception was great, he could not learn many hand seal techniques in two months time. This was also the greatest difficulty for Yi Yun to quickly master the Desolate Heaven technique.

Chapter 379: Mystic Crystal Hand And Small Thousand Seal

When Yi Yun was in the Cloud Wilderness, he had trained together with Lin Xintong, and when he saw Lin Xintong use the Desolate Heaven technique, Yi Yun suddenly had the thought of becoming a Desolate Heaven Master.

Now, this thought was still rooted in Yi Yun's heart. With the Desolate Heaven technique, not only could it supplement his cultivation, he could also rely on the Desolate Heaven technique to earn resources.

Yi Yun had the Purple Crystal to control energy, so he enjoyed an exceptional advantage in learning the Desolate Heaven technique.

However in the past two years, as Yi Yun was too weak, he had been busy cultivating. He had only learnt a tiny bit of the Desolate Heaven technique and he had put it mainly on hold.

Now, Yi Yun wasn't simply thinking of messing up the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. He also wanted to take this opportunity to learn the Desolate Heaven technique properly. This would greatly aid his future cultivation.

"Senior Su Jie, there's only two months left till the tea session. I want to learn the seal for controlling the Power of Desolates and the forming of relics from you."

"You want to learn these two in two months? You think you are learning Pai Gow?" Su Jie blinked with an expression of being defeated by Yi Yun. "There are thousands of hand seal techniques, which one do you want to learn?"

Yi Yun said, "I only want to learn two techniques. One that can control the Power of Desolates and another used to form a relic."

Yi Yun knew himself. Although his perception was good, it was unrealistic for him to learn hundreds of hand seal techniques. Hence, Yi Yun had no alternative but to give up on his first choice, so he chose two!

However, by choosing two techniques, there were several limitations.

As Su Jie had just said, a Desolate Heaven Master of a certain caliber would grasp at least a hundred techniques at the beginning.

Just like a good cook, one could not just have one method of cooking like "stir-fry".

Different dishes would be made in different ways.

There were stir-frying, quick-frying, deep-frying, blanching, smoking, pickling, etc! One had to choose the most suitable cooking method for different ingredients.

It was the same with the Desolate Heaven technique. If a Desolate

Heaven Master's hand seal techniques were too uniform, then he would face numerous restrictions.

For example, some sealing techniques were only suitable for desolate bone relics of the lowest grade. The method was simple, fast, only consumed a little of one's mental strength and it had a good success rate. However, against powerful Power of Desolates, this sort of sealing techniques could not control it at all and they were unuseable.

To refine high-grade desolate bone relics, one had to use more advanced techniques. These techniques were complex, slow and extremely consuming of one's mental strength. Even a good Desolate Master would have to rest after using this technique as it was too draining.

And if this technique was used for refining low-quality desolate bone relics, it would be overkill.

There were other sealing techniques more suitable for particular elemental energies, for example, some were suitable for fire, and others for ice.

If the elemental property was matched, the sealing technique would result in double the results with half the effort. The success rate would also be higher.

In conclusion, if one wanted to refine high-grade, the sealing technique had to be more complex and because of that more difficult to learn. The more techniques a Desolate Heaven Master

had, the more flexible he could be when refining a desolate bone relic. Sometimes, they could combine several techniques to refine a relic. And it was up to the preference of the Desolate Heaven Master as to which technique to use.

If a sealing technique was chosen well, it was already half the battle won.

Since Yi Yun had already made his choice of choosing two techniques, he could only have one each for the Power of Desolates sealing and the forming of relics.

Then, there were a few features the two techniques needed.

First, they had to be widely applicable, and they could not be narrowed to a single elemental energy. They had to be useable for all kinds of elemental energies.

Secondly, these two techniques had to be applicable for the refinement of high-grade desolate bone relics. For the current Yi Yun, low-grade desolate bone relics were no longer useful.

Finally, the two techniques could not be too complicated. If they could not be learnt in two months, they would be useless.

Yi Yun had a good amount of understanding of the Desolate Heaven technique, so before he asked Su Jie if he could learn the Desolate Heaven technique from him, he had already thought of the techniques he wanted to learn.

"Senior Su Jie, the two techniques I want to learn are, the Mystic Crystal Hand sealing technique for the controlling of the Power of Desolates, as well as, the Small Thousand Seal for the forming of relics."

These two techniques had met Yi Yun's requirements.

Not only could they be used to refine high-grade desolate bone relics, they were also easy to learn and widely applicable.

Since these two techniques had such features, it meant that they weren't some extraordinary methods.

It was easy to learn the techniques, then correspondingly, the success rate of these two techniques were very low.

And since they were widely applicable, in the Desolate Heaven technique circles, it meant that they were not specialized for anything.

The Desolate Heaven technique focused on specialization. Every elemental energy had a corresponding technique. For the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal, they were actually common techniques that could be easily found on the street. Any Desolate Heaven Master who had certain accomplishments in the Desolate Heaven technique would never bother using them.

Even the young Desolate Heaven Master disciples, who had

outstanding talent, would not look up to such a one size fits all approach.

Only some Desolate Heaven Masters from small family clans or small sects would haphazardly refine desolate bone relics, which would be a treasure, for the disciples of these small sects. In such a situation, their Desolate Heaven technique did not need to be great, nor did they need to have too much talent. As such, they would choose to learn easy and low-grade techniques.

Despite hearing Yi Yun's choice which "lacked ambition", Su Jie found Yi Yun's choice wise.

Everyone knew that advanced techniques were good, but so what? It was only meaningful if one could learn it. It was pointless if one could not learn it.

It was like everyone knew being a Great Emperor was good, but if anyone said they wanted to become a Great Emperor when they began learning martial arts, they would probably be thought of as crazy.

With Yi Yun's foundation, the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal would be relatively difficult for him. Even learning it would be pretty good.

However... even if Yi Yun mastered the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal, there would be no hope in him joining the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

In the tea session, everyone would show off their skills by choosing the most complicated and most difficult techniques.

If one used the Mystic Crystal Hand or Small Thousand Seal, that would cause the stomachs of others to rupture from laughing.

"Senior Su Jie, how about it? After all, you have taken me in as your in-name disciple. I'm just learning two techniques from you..."

As Yi Yun spoke, Su Jie rolled his eyes at him, "Only now do you remember that you are my in-name disciple? Forget it. I find you pitiful, so it's nothing teaching you two sealing techniques. In the future, if you were to leave the Lin family and live on the streets, this would also be a means of livelihood, right?"

Yi Yun turned speechless hearing Su Jie say such words.

Living on the streets? It shouldn't be that terrible even if he was forced to leave the Lin family, right...?

"Alright, I can teach you, but let me warn you in advance. Forget about the Desolate Heaven technique tea session! At that time, I'll take you to broaden your horizons. As for showing off your techniques, don't throw my face. I still care about my old face, and I want to mess around in the Desolate Heaven technique circles in the future."

"If you were to demonstrate these two techniques that can be

found on the streets, the tortoise grandsons of the Shentu family clan would all die from laughing. Although you are my in-name disciple, an in-name disciple is still a disciple. Everything you do represents me, do you understand!?"

Su Jie earnestly exhorted to Yi Yun. In fact, he felt that Yi Yun had only come into contact with the Desolate Heaven technique for a short period of time and did not know how difficult the Desolate Heaven techniques really were.

Yi Yun would know the difficulty once he taught him the two techniques.

As for the tea session, the Desolate Heaven Masters and geniuses would gather to flaunt their techniques. What they showed would be dazzling and too much for the eye to feast on.

Flaunting of one's skills was not about what the best technique was but it was about what the hardest technique was!

At that moment, Yi Yun will see the gap between the geniuses and himself. He would probably then realize how childish his ideas originally were.

As long as Yi Yun's mind was right, then he would not go on stage to get schooled.

He had a feud with Shentu Nantian, wouldn't he be mad to end up a clown in front of Shentu Nantian?

"Thank you Senior Su."

Yi Yun was delighted. There was no doubt in Su Jie's Desolate Heaven technique level. So with his teachings, it would be double the results with half the effort.

"As for disguising your looks..." Su Jie stroked his chin and said, "It's too difficult to use disguises to bluff the old monsters from the Shentu family clan. However, there is a very simple method and that is to wear a mask."

"There are many rare materials in this world that can completely cut off perception. Even an Empyrean King will not be able to sense anything. And I happen to have such a mask."

"As for changing your voice, that's even easier. Just change the tone of your voice."

Some old monsters who had unfathomable cultivation levels could easily see through disguises. However, one could change one's tone to change their voice. No matter how strong one was, they could not guess what the original voice of the person was after he changed his tone, as the two were completely unrelated.

"That's great." Yi Yun said happily. Wearing a mask was nothing strange. In a warrior's world, there were plenty of people with odd habits.

Furthermore, Shentu Nantian would definitely not guess that he had come to the Tian Yuan world and participated in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

"Then Senior Su Jie, without further ado, if you have time now, please teach me the Mystic Crystal Hand technique and Small Thousand Seal technique!"

As there was only two months left, time was precious, so Yi Yun naturally had to grab every opportunity.

Su Jie pinched his beard as if irritated, "Alright. I'll teach you these two techniques. My time is precious!"

Chapter 380: Mastering The Desolate Heaven Technique Quickly

In Su Jie's residential area there was a large hall meant for practicing the Desolate Heaven technique. This was not Su Jie's dedicated practice room, but a room for the disciples of the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Masters to practice their Desolate Heaven technique.

Yi Yun walked into the middle of the hall and saw Desolate Heaven technique stone benches neatly arranged in the hall. They numbered more than a hundred.

On these benches, there were all sorts of materials and Desolate Heaven technique disk arrays. There were people dressed in Desolate Heaven technique robes around who were busy shuttling through the benches.

There was no shortage of elders and there were also cultured-looking, middle-aged men and women there. These people were obviously the backbone of the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Master force.

Beside these Desolate Heaven Masters, there were also other youths of both genders here. Clearly, they were the disciples.

"Elder Su, you are back!" A middle-aged man, wearing a Desolate Heaven technique robe, greeted Su Jie in a very respectful tone.

"Heaven Master Sun, long time no see." Su Jie nodded.

The middle-aged man glanced at Yi Yun, "Is this Elder Su's new apprentice?" Due to Su Jie, the middle-aged man looked at Yi Yun in a friendly manner.

Yi Yun cupped his fists and politely bowed.

"Haha, a fine-looking man with talent! The apprentice of Elder Su must be outstanding. You must be very gifted in the Desolate Heaven technique."

As the middle-aged man spoke, a 15-year-old girl behind him, who was about the same age as Yi Yun, looked curiously at Yi Yun. It was as if she wanted to know what aspect of this youth was so outstanding that he had been fancied by Su Jie.

However, Su Jie waved his hand and said, "What do you mean gifted? I just took him in as an in-name disciple on a whim. I am just informally teaching him."

Su Jie rushed to clarify his relationship with Yi Yun. This made Yi Yun roll his eyes. This old man sure was afraid of Yi Yun shaming him.

As for the middle-aged man, although he heard that Yi Yun was an in-name disciple, he was still very polite. "Even an in-name disciple of Elder Su should be extraordinary. Haha!"

The Lin family was very respectful to Su Jie. Even more so in the Desolate Heaven Master circles.

Desolate Heaven Masters might not admire the strong, but they would admire those great masters who completely had the Desolate Heaven technique at their fingertips, to the point of prostrating.

Yi Yun did not respond. He naturally knew that the middle-aged man was just being polite. After they separated from the middle-aged man, Yi Yun coughed dryly and said to Su Jie, "Senior Su Jie, my Desolate Heaven technique is quite alright. Although I haven't learned the sealing of the Power of Desolates and the forming of relics, should you not first look at the situation as to teach me according to my aptitude?"

Yi Yun could only do energy extraction now. And that was just the beginning stage for a Desolate Heaven technique apprentice.

Of course, Yi Yun's energy extraction was extremely monstrous. He intended to show Su Jie his real strength, to prevent the old man from thinking that he was inept. If he permitted that impression, the old man would just end up haphazardly teaching him.

However, Su Jie said, "There will be plenty of opportunities for you to show off your strength. In a few days, I will go into reclusive training and begin preparing for the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. Today, I will teach you the two techniques, and tomorrow I will see Xintong."

Su Jie had been trapped in the mystic realm for two years and had not managed to use the Desolate Heaven technique. For the tea session, there would be all sorts of experts gathered, and some of them were even better than Su Jie.

Su Jie also needed to prepare. By going into reclusive training, he could maintain his best condition before the tea session.

"Alright..." Yi Yun shrugged his shoulders helplessly.

Su Jie was currently putting all his thoughts into the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. In addition to the worry for his disciple, Lin Xintong, he was clearly not interested in watching a kid mess around at this point in time.

Su Jie brought Yi Yun to stand in front of a bench.

Coincidentally, the middle-aged man, Desolate Heaven Master Sun, and his female apprentice were standing on the bench right next to them.

This middle-aged man was teaching the little girl the Desolate Heaven technique. There were other Desolate Heaven technique benches nearby, where there were many youths standing around, all learning the Desolate Heaven technique. Occasionally, a Desolate Heaven Master from the Lin family would stop by to give them some pointers.

"The Small Thousand Seal and the Mystic Crystal Hand are relatively lower grade techniques. They are easy to get started with, and neither of them is hard to become proficient in it. However, they are too shallow!"

Su Jie stood in front of the Desolate Heaven technique bench and took out a Desolate Heaven technique disk array. There was a jade-green desolate bone on the disk array.

The desolate bone was about a foot long. It was of good quality, but the Power of Desolates within it was slightly chaotic. It was probably a general-ranked desolate beast's bone.

Su Jie casually tapped his finger and the desolate bone began to tremble violently. The Power of Desolates within it was instantly extracted by Su Jie.

Yi Yun could, with his naked eye, see that the desolate bone begin to change color. It went from its original jade-green color to grayish-white.

And correspondingly, the energy light blob that appeared on Su Jie's fingers were clearly the energy essence extracted from the desolate bone. It had all been gathered onto Su Jie's hand.

This technique of extracting energy made Yi Yun amazed. It was done in a very smooth and simple fashion.

If Yi Yun used the Purple Crystal to do it, he would still not be

able to do it as fast as Su Jie.

Although the Purple Crystal's control of energy was peerless, Yi Yun's control of the Purple Crystal was still far from perfect.

What the Purple Crystal was powerful at, was that it could work with energy from all sorts of levels, be it normal desolate beasts, primordial herbs, the sword and saber tomb's origins energy, or even the sealing energy in the Pure Yang Sword Palace. All of them were on equal footing to the Purple Crystal.

It was very easy for Yi Yun to absorb any of these energies by using the Purple Crystal.

However, what was a bit more difficult for Yi Yun was activating the Purple Crystal and the process of controlling the Purple Crystal.

With Yi Yun's current mental strength, it would not be that easy to control the Purple Crystal. Hence, he was unable to do like Su Jie and easily extract all of the energy from a desolate bone in an instant.

Yi Yun's advantage was that, be it extracting the energy from normal desolate bones or primordial strain desolate bones, it was the same. Probably, to the Purple Crystal, all of these energies were of too low a level, so low that it could not distinguish between them.

This was equivalent to Yi Yun using a sledgehammer to crush a chicken's egg and a quail's egg. Using a sledgehammer to crush them both is simple. However, swinging the sledgehammer is what was most difficult.

Su Jie held the green energy blob in his hand as he glanced at Yi Yun before lazily saying, "Kid, watch well. This is the Mystic Crystal Hand. If you cannot learn it even after I do it a few times, then do not blame me for not teaching you."

As Su Jie said, his fingers began to move. Seals were sent flying as they formed beautiful patterns in the air.

Yi Yun focused as he held his breath.

He opened the Purple Crystal's energy vision. Through the vision, Yi Yun could clearly see the origin energy's flow within every seal that came from Su Jie

It was naturally different to use the energy vision compared to using his naked eye to look at Su Jie's actions.

The naked eye still needed one to gain insight and understanding. However, with the energy vision, he could see the movement of the energy directly.

In fact, the so-called seals were only runic lines condensed from energy. By seeing this energy, one could also see the origin of the laws within the runic lines.

Every Desolate Heaven Master would use their own energy to draw out their own understanding of the energy laws when beginning to refine the desolate bone relic.

The same technique would result in completely different grades of desolate bone relics, based on the practitioner's own understanding of energy.

In the Purple Crystal's energy vision, Yi Yun could see the energy under Su Jie's control move in a beautiful, complete harmony.

Yi Yun knew that Su Jie was very well-versed in his sealing techniques. He could make the Power of Desolates flow in complete accordance with the natural laws. By doing so, a desolate bone relic would naturally be perfect.

At that moment, Su Jie's hands turned crystal clear due to the infusing of tremendous amounts of energy. They nearly became transparent, which was how the "Mystic Crystal Hand" got its name.

To exhibit this phenomenon, that was entirely reliant on a person's mastery of the Mystic Crystal Hand.

Now, Yi Yun saw that Su Jie's hands were like crystals. There was no doubt that his Mystic Crystal Hand was already perfect.

The Power of Desolates within the desolate bones was quickly

controlled by Su Jie as they formed into a runic line seal.

With the Mystic Crystal Hand completed, what followed next was the Small Thousand Seal!

Su Jie changed his technique and in front of him, the Desolate Heaven technique disk array began to spin. The runic line seals, condensed from the Power of Desolates, were all absorbed by the disk array. Under Su Jie's control, they all began to condense into one.

Hundreds up to a thousand seals were sent out by Su Jie. Finally, the energy seals formed together before emitting a sparkling flash.

"Ding!"

In this white glow, a crystal, bead-like desolate bone relic dropped onto the disk array, giving off a crisp sound.

Su Jie turned to look at Yi Yun, "Just now, I lowered the sealing speed by ten times. How much of my technique did you see? To what percentage can you mimic it?"

Chapter 381: A Small Sample Of One's Skill

For the technique Su Jie employed at a speed of ten times slower than normal, Yi Yun saw it clearly by using the Purple Crystal's vision. Furthermore, Yi Yun had always had a good memory, so he managed to memorize about 70-80% of Su Jie's Small Thousand Seal and Mystic Crystal Hand.

However, memorizing Su Jie's techniques was one matter. To completely imitate it was another. Having something memorized did not mean one could emulate it.

Hence, in response to Su Jie's question, Yi Yun conservatively replied, "I have got some idea from the technique Senior used. As for emulating it, I can probably do around 30-40%."

"30-40%? Kid, you sure are confident." Su Jie's voice did not sound serious and had a mocking tone in it. Although the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal were considered low-grade techniques, they were not that easy to learn.

Typically, rookies could only gain a fuzzy understanding of the superficial moves after seeing it once. To follow and be able to slightly emulate them would be pretty good.

With a certain level of skills, an apprentice in the Desolate Heaven technique with 2-3 years of foundation beneath him could be considered a genius if he could emulate more than 20% of it after seeing it once.

Of course, this so-called 20% emulation refers to being able to do 20% of the Small Thousand Seal and Mystic Crystal Hand's sealing motions.

As for doing them right, doing them well and doing them in a masterful manner, there was naturally a gap between the three accomplishments.

It was not easy for a rookie to do it right.

Yi Yun looked at Su Jie's smile that was asking to be beaten. He felt pretty speechless. With this old man as a master, he really felt drunk. The masters of others would have the mannerism of a master in their every move. They would be stern and serious while teaching their disciples or be patient and understanding. After all, they all wished for their disciples to succeed.

However, this old man, he was never serious and seemed to be laughing like a clown all the time. After teaching and asking his disciple, he would even give off the feeling of watching a joke.

Yi Yun could not be bothered to say anything else as he took out a Desolate Heaven technique disk array from his interspatial ring. Just as he was preparing to practice with a high-grade desolate bone, Su Jie took out a normal desolate bone and threw it at Yi Yun.

"Use this?" Yi Yun frowned.

"Of course, you think it is not enough? You must lay a good foundation when practicing the Desolate Heaven technique. First learn to walk before you learn to run. You have not been learning the Desolate Heaven technique for that long. First use a normal desolate bone as practice for a year or two. Refine more than 10,000 desolate bone relics before you start talking about anything else."

"Do not look down on the low quality Power of Desolates that is in a normal desolate bone. Its laws are the still the same. And a normal desolate bone's energy is much easier to control. It will allow you to approach the creation of a perfect law route.

The Desolate Heaven technique focused on one's foundation. Hence when Desolate Heaven Masters practiced, they would begin with the simplest desolate bone. This included Su Jie. When he first practiced the Desolate Heaven technique, he too went through the honest route of refining more than 10,000 normal desolate bone relics.

Yi Yun did not argue with Su Jie. Su Jie naturally had his own thoughts, being his master. It was like the story he had heard before in his previous life, Leonardo da Vinci drawing an egg. Legend has it that when Leonardo da Vinci was learning how to draw, his master made him draw chicken eggs repeatedly. This was probably similar to his current situation.

Yi Yun picked up the normal desolate bone and with the Purple Crystal, he could clearly feel every energy flow within the desolate bone.

And to the side, the middle-aged man that was surnamed Sun and his disciple were also watching Yi Yun.

The middle-aged man surnamed Sun looked at Yi Yun and admired Yi Yun's focused expression. He slowly nodded and said, "Elder Su, your disciple is not distracted and his breathing is composed. He is a good seed. How long has he been learning the Desolate Heaven technique?"

Su Jie said, "He has only been learning it for a few months. I have just recently taken him in as a disciple. Previously, he learnt the Desolate Heaven technique from someone else. If he was taught by me from the beginning, his standards would definitely be much better than they are now.

Su Jie said confidently. Although he had just cursed the old fellows who were joining the Desolate Heaven technique tea session as hypocritical and vain people, who wanted to show off all day, Su Jie had in fact forgotten that he too was one of them.

"Haha, Elder Su is right. With Elder Su's teachings, the standard would be even higher! Elder Su has the ability to turn the foul and rotten into the rare and ethereal." The middle-aged man surnamed Sun echoed while he laughed.

Su Jie accepted the middle-aged man's praise silently. He nonchalantly took a cup of tea. As he drank the tea, he watched Yi Yun perform his Desolate Heaven technique.

Yi Yun took a deep breath and, with the desolate bone in hand,

sank his spiritual energies into the Purple Crystal. A familiar feeling then surged to his mind.

Instantly, in the Purple Crystal's vision, Yi Yun could see every strand and ounce of energy within the desolate bone that rested in his hand.

As long as he willed it, all of the energy within it would be pulled out like harvesting silk.

Yi Yun began to form seals with his hands. For Yi Yun, using the seals were meaningless in the extraction of energy. It was just a form of concealment for him.

The seals Yi Yun used were the one Grandmaster Yuehua had taught him in the past. It was a method rookies used.

"Heaven Moon Seal. His technique is stable and not in a rush. It is pretty well done." The man surnamed Sun evaluated.

Su Jie slightly moved the tea cup from his mouth. He never expected that the kid would have some skill. If he had only learnt the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months, then this standard meant that he had pretty good talent.

At that moment, Su Jie and the middle-aged man could not see the purple light beams that were being emitted from the desolate bone in Yi Yun's hand. Numerous light dots flew out from the desolate bone and spiraled around Yi Yun like pixie elves.

The phenomenon of the Purple Crystal sucking out the energy could only be seen by Yi Yun. It was as if a mysterious law had cut off the ability for others to realize this.

Su Jie and the middle-aged man could only sense that the energy in the desolate bone was being extracted by Yi Yun at a constant pace. The entire process was done very smoothly.

One could not tell Yi Yun's greatness with a low-grade desolate bone, but even so, the perfect energy flows' trajectories surprised the middle-aged man, "Elder Su, how many months did you say that this disciple of yours has been learning the Desolate Heaven technique?"

"Uh..." Su Jie began to pull his beard out of habit. He never expected for Yi Yun to do it in such a profound manner. Could this kid be deceiving me?

He found it hard to believe that Yi Yun was able to accomplish this just by learning the Desolate Heaven technique for two months. If that was the case, then his talent was almost approaching Lin Xintong's.

Lin Xintong was a genius. Having lived to such old age, it was not easy for him to find such a treasured disciple. He had even planned on letting her inherit his mantle.

Although the talent of some Desolate Heaven technique geniuses approached Lin Xintong, that was still quite normal. However, Yi

Yun was a kid he had casually met in the Cloud Wilderness. Back then, he did not seem very special. Under these circumstances, when Su Jie then realized that Yi Yun's Desolate Heaven technique talent was actually comparable to Lin Xintong's, how could he not be shocked?

"The kid said that he learnt the technique for a few months himself. I also do not know if it is true or not. Now he still seems fine, and is about half my standard back when I was first beginning to learn the Desolate Heaven technique."

Su Jie grunted as he spoke. The middle-aged man smiled without a word.

At that moment, after Yi Yun extracted the Power of Desolates from the desolate bone, he began to use the Mystic Crystal Hand. In his mind, he was recalling the motions Su Jie used. The flow of every strand of energy was clearly recalled by him.

"Mystic Crystal Hand... First seal..." Yi Yun began moving his ten fingers as he began forming the seals.

The first seal was sent out by him.

Just mimicking the action was very easy. As warriors have an eidetic memory, they could mimic it very closely after just seeing it once. The difficult part however lied in guiding the Power of Desolates to condense into the seal one wanted.

However, guiding the Power of Desolates was also not a hard thing for Yi Yun to do, as he had the Purple Crystal.

Hence, under Yi Yun's guidance, the Power of Desolates condensed into the first runic seal. It was like a tiny, purple butterfly, fluttering in the air.

Following that, second seal...

Yi Yun imitated what he had seen, and another runic seal was sent out by him. It danced in the air. All of this was done in an effortless and relaxed manner.

When the first runic seal was sent out, Su Jie did not have much of a reaction. However, when he saw that the second runic seal was equally perfect, he was slightly dazed.

Following that, the third and fourth runic seals came forth one after another as they flew in the air.

Slowly, Su Jie's mouth turned agape. This kid, is he serious?

Yi Yun not only succeeded in forming the seals, the energy forms were also very well done. He did not seem in a hurry, or in a confused state, throughout the sealing process. Everything was done in an orderly fashion.

This made Su Jie find it hard to believe that such runic seals came from a Desolate Heaven technique rookie.

Chapter 382: Doubts

Seeing Yi Yun complete more than ten runic seals, with each of them being flawless, the middle-aged man beside Su Jie said in an incredulous manner, "Elder Su, did this disciple of yours truly learn the Desolate Heaven technique for just a few months!?"

He could barely accept it if a Desolate Heaven technique apprentice with a certain foundation accomplished this. It was too great an exaggeration for this to come from a beginner!

Su Jie did not say anything. After a while, Yi Yun had already completed more than 20 runic seals. The Mystic Crystal Hand had approximately a hundred runic seals. This meant that Yi Yun had already completed more than 20% of it, and it had been perfectly done.

"Do not tell me he will really complete it up to 40%..."

Su Jie mumbled to himself. And following that, as it it was to confirm his speculation, one runic seal after another was sent out from Yi Yun's hands like rain.

38, 39, 40...

Although he had reached 40 seals, Yi Yun did not stop.

In fact, one did not have to send out all 100 runic seals from the Mystic Crystal Hand. Just 60-70 of them would be sufficient

enough to refine a desolate bone relic.

Now, Yi Yun had already condensed nearly 50 runic seals. Another dozen or so runic seals would be enough to form the relic!

At that moment, other than the man surnamed Sun and his disciple, there were also a few other Desolate Heaven technique apprentices who were attracted by the commotion. They gathered around to watch.

Just the expressions of Su Jie and the middle-aged man were sufficient to make them wonder about what was going on.

And the disciple of the man surnamed Sun naturally became the person to explain the situation. When she finished describing the situation, everyone of them found it impossible to believe.

Slowly, more and more people gathered around. Yi Yun had already completed 55 Mystic Crystal Hand seals.

However, at that moment, as it was Yi Yun's first contact with the Mystic Crystal Hand, he was unable to perfectly replicate the energy seals Su Jie had sent out earlier despite having seen them clearly. When the 56th runic seal was sent out, flaws and shortcomings began to appear.

Yi Yun's mind churned. In the Purple Crystal's energy vision, he had immediately noticed that the runic energy lines in these few runic seals were not as harmonious as the others.

"There is a mistake..."

Yi Yun slightly frowned. As this was his first time learning the Mystic Crystal Hand, he could not figure out where his error was immediately.

Slowly, Yi Yun's motions slowed down.

Since he had made a mistake, it was meaningless to keep on persisting.

Even if Yi Yun sent out more runic seals and eventually condense a desolate bone relic, he had still made a mistake. The quality of such a desolate bone relic would deteriorate significantly. Even the effects of the relic would be problematic.

Many Desolate Heaven Masters apprentices would carry on even if they made a mistake. This was because completing a relic with flawed runic seals was not easy either. It would still be a proof of their ability.

However, Yi Yun did not want that. He wanted to be able to create a correct and perfect runic seal.

With that, Yi Yun quit.

"Peng!"

With a loud crack, the runic seals burst in the air after losing their binding force. Colorful points of light scattered out, turning the scene into a beautiful one.

Many of the spectators were dazed seeing this.

"To form 56 seals..." The disciple of the man surnamed Sun covered her mouth. This number was too ridiculous.

The youth's talent had far exceeded her imagination.

"Junior Sister Lin Qing, you have been fooled by him." A youth dressed in a green Desolate Heaven technique apprentice robe shook his head. "Just now you said that he has only learned the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months. That must be him lying. He must have had very long contact with the Desolate Heaven technique, if not he would not have such skillful control of energy. He may have good talent, but it is not to such an alarming degree. He lied because he wants to show off his talent."

When the green-robed youth said this, many of the other disciples were enlightened. Right, who could guarantee that this kid was not lying?

In the Lin family, the younger generation that dabbled with the Desolate Heaven technique were always in a state of competition to decide who was better. By competing, and being unwilling to surrender, they would have a driving force. The Lin family itself encouraged such rivalry.

If it was as described by the young girl Lin Qing, where Yi Yun had only learned the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months in the past, and had just now learned the Mystic Crystal Hand, then him completing 56 runic seals meant that calling him a monster was far from sufficient to describe him.

Be it Su Jie, Thousand Hand Granny or anyone else, all of these grandmasters in the Desolate Heaven Master world would be nothing compared to this kid when they were younger.

No matter how awesome you were, it was impossible for you to put these legendary figures underneath your feet. Hence, it was more believable that Yi Yun was lying.

When something could not be explained, people would often be inclined to believe what was most reasonable.

"Fake?"

Lin Qing was slightly shocked and did not immediately react.

"Haha, Young Junior Sister Lin Qing, you are too naive. That kid most likely learned the Mystic Crystal Hand beforehand. He only managed to condense 56 runic seals, if it were me, I could easily condense 90. And I would even say that I learned the Desolate Heaven technique for only 3 days!"

The green-robed youth's mocked. And with him saying that,

many people erupted into laughter with him.

Many of them had already learned the Mystic Crystal Hand and were able to condense 90 runic seals. It was not hard. Some were even able to condense all of the runic seals, which was also nothing worth boasting about.

However, if they lied and said that they had just learned the Desolate Heaven technique, then it would be too ridiculous. It was like meeting a kid on the street who said that he had exceeded a young Great Emperor. Who would believe that?

Even children knew how to make such a lie.

The discussion of these young boys and girls was naturally heard by Yi Yun.

It was normal for people to doubt. Yi Yun had told Su Jie how long he had learned the Desolate Heaven technique because Su Jie had asked him. If it was someone else who asked, he wouldn't have bothered to answer them.

Yi Yun took no heed to what others were thinking.

"Elder Su's disciple sure is a dragon amongst humans!"

The man surnamed Sun stood up and said with a smile. He did not declare whether he believed Yi Yun or not. What he said encompassed both possibilities while avoiding to offend Su Jie.

"Well... it is okay." What else could Su Jie say at that moment. He was inclined to believe what Yi Yun had said. Although the matter was a bit ridiculous, he could not say for sure if it was true or not.

After all, Yi Yun was his in-name disciple. If Yi Yun angled for undeserved fame, he too would not look good.

"Yi Yun, follow me."

Su Jie waved his hand at Yi Yun. Yi Yun followed and walked into a side hall, leaving the group of people behind. They were discussing as they pointed fingers at Yi Yun.

"This kid is Grandmaster Su Jie's in-name disciple?" People managed to get new information from Lin Qing as she was a person who answered questions if she knew the answer.

Su Jie was awesome, but an in-name disciple was of significantly lesser importance. Usually, in-name disciples would not learn skills that had value.

Amongst the spectating disciples, none of them were in-name disciples. In fact, most of them were personal disciples of grandmasters.

Their masters were not that much inferior to Su Jie, so their statuses were greater than Yi Yun's.

"In-name disciples are sometimes worse than a medicine boy... Then there is no doubt. Let us go, let us just treat it as a joke today."

The green-robed youth said as he waved his hands to disperse the crowd. He was like the leader amongst this group of young adults.

"Little Junior sister Lin Qing, if you have any problems with the Desolate Heaven technique, feel free to ask me." The green-robed youth said solicitously as he came to Lin Qing's side.

Pretty female Desolate Heaven technique apprentices very easily attracted older Desolate Heaven Master apprentices for them to appear in the form of "Senior Brother". Of course, those Senior Brothers who had extraordinary abilities, talent and good looks, would easily gain the worship and admiration of many young girls.

Lin Qing was a bit perplexed. At that moment, Yi Yun had followed Su Jie into a chamber.

This was a bone refinement room for Desolate Heaven Masters. It was higher in quality than the previous hall.

There was a 5 meter long Desolate Heaven technique stone bench. There were all sorts of materials and bone refinement disk arrays placed neatly on it.

Under the stone bench, there was even a large, engraved array, which aided the Desolate Heaven technique in condensing the

Power of Desolates.

Also this bone refinement room was independent. Naturally, an independent chamber for practicing the Desolate Heaven technique was much more comfortable than the noisy hall from before.

"Yi Yun, you can use this bone refinement room. There are still two months left until the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. In these two months, I too will need to prepare well. I do not have much time to teach you."

Actually for the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, the competition between the young apprentices was naturally not as important as the competition for Su Jie and other grandmasters. As a result, Su Jie naturally had to prepare for it.

Chapter 383: Lin Xintong Coming Out Of Reclusive Training

"Just now when you were working on the desolate bone, there were some parts where you were inadequate..." As Su Jie spoke, he demonstrated the Mystic Crystal Hand once again. This time, Su Jie was even more serious. Every movement was broken down into parts, as he patiently taught Yi Yun.

Once Su Jie became serious, he was indeed an excellent master. Yi Yun had no problems in energy control, but he needed plenty of time to practice the sealing techniques.

Su Jie did not speak much and demonstrated it again and again for Yi Yun. From the Mystic Crystal Hand to the Small Thousand Seal, every runic seal was broken down into parts for Yi Yun. This carried on through the night, till it was early next morning.

Before they knew it, the two of them had been in the bone refinement room for more than 20 hours.

Yi Yun was covered in sweat as it was very draining to use the Purple Crystal continuously.

On the other hand, the Old Man Su Jie was still as fit as a fiddle.

And at that moment, a spark flashed in front of Su Jie's eyes. It was the beam from a voice transmission charm.

"Oh? Xintong is coming out!"

Su Jie's words made Yi Yun's heart thump. He stopped forming his hand seals. Lin Xintong was coming out?

Previously, Su Jie had passed a message to Lin Xintong. Now, with her coming out, it was obviously to meet Su Jie.

"I'm going to meet Xintong. Right... why don't you come with me?" Su Jie suddenly said to Yi Yun.

Yi Yun was stunned for a while. Can I go too?

For this girl who he was indebted to and not met for two years, Yi Yun really wanted to meet her again.

Yi Yun followed Su Jie and left the Tian Hua peak. They headed to one of the other main peaks, the Jade Bamboo peak.

The Jade Bamboo peak was in the central region of the 18 main peaks. The mountain peak was not very high and it was covered in arrays. Jade bamboo grew throughout the year, despite the seasons. The peak had beautiful scenery.

At that moment, Yi Yun landed on the Jade Bamboo peak. It was early in the morning and it was misty. Looking down, all he saw was a sea of clouds. Above the clouds, there were green bamboo forests. It looked like an immortal paradise.

The Lin family's females mainly lived on the Jade Bamboo peak. Usually, male members of the Lin family could go up the mountain, but males were restricted from the back mountain regions.

Su Jie took Yi Yun to a Jade Bamboo Temple on the mountain peak. The entire Jade Bamboo Temple was built inside a bamboo forest. The tiles used for the temple's dome were made of jade making the entire place look green.

This made the Jade Bamboo Temple appear very harmonious with the Jade Bamboo. It was as if this temple was not man-made, and it was a natural occurrence from the bamboo forest.

A maidservant had been waiting at the door. When Yi Yun and Su Jie arrived, she took them inside.

In the Jade Bamboo Temple, there were pine and cypress trees interweaving with the jade bamboo everywhere.

And what made Yi Yun surprised was that many of the structures inside the Jade Bamboo Temple were made of bamboo or pine. These structures had the scent of bamboo and pine and it made one feel relaxed.

"The Lin family's Matriarch likes bamboo. This Jade Bamboo Temple was also built by Her Aged Reverent."

When Su Jie said this to Yi Yun, Yi Yun was slightly stunned. From Su Jie's tone, this old granny's age was not low. Even Su Jie himself addressed her as Her Aged Reverent. Was she at least 40,000-50,000 years old?

The maidservant took Yi Yun and Su Jie through a yard till they arrived at a newly built bamboo hut.

Yi Yun could see a beautiful girl dressed in white in the distance. She held a long sword in her hand and she was practicing her swordplay amongst the bamboo trees.

Her motions did not seem fast, but they gave a feeling of freely flowing water and floating clouds. Every stab of the sword would cause the surrounding bamboo leaves to fly around. Under the girl's sword, these bamboo leaves seemed to possess some soul as if they were alive.

This girl was the person who Yi Yun had not seen in two years, Lin Xintong.

Su Jie stopped in his footsteps as he watched Lin Xintong practicing her swordplay. His eyes were filled with love. Having not seen her for two years, Lin Xintong's sword skills had greatly improved yet again. A nonchalant brandish of her sword would become one joined with the surrounding environment. If it was described, this realm could be called, "one sword, one scene".

Every sword move would present a different scene to the people watching the swordplay.

"Master!"

Seeing Su Jie, Lin Xintong stopped. A happy smile hung on her face. After separating from Su Jie, she had always been thinking of him. This was because she knew that Su Jie had entered a very dangerous mystic realm. She was naturally worried since she had not heard any news from him for two years.

"Oh? You are...Yi Yun?"

Lin Xintong saw Yi Yun and she was taken aback. Yi Yun had changed so much in these two years. He had gone from a child to a bright teenager.

Lin Xintong was tall. Two years ago, Yi Yun only reached Lin Xintong's nose tip; but now, Yi Yun was slightly taller than Lin Xintong.

"Miss Lin, long time no see." Yi Yun smiled shyly. Having been separated for so long, he had experienced so many things. Now that he met Lin Xintong again, it was natural that he had the feeling of meeting an old friend.

"Oh? Who are you?"

At that moment, a sharp female voice rang out. Yi Yun turned his head and he saw a middle-aged woman dressed in a red palatial gown slowly walking over.

Beside the woman was a white-haired elder.

When Lin Xintong saw those two people, she bowed slightly, "Lin Xintong greets (paternal) grand aunt and sixth grand uncle."

The two of them were Lin Xintong's elders, and they were members of the upper echelons of the Lin family.

The woman in palatial gown gave Yi Yun a deep glance. She was perplexed when Su Jie brought a youth that was either his in-name disciple or medicine boy to the Jade Bamboo Temple. After all, the Jade Bamboo Temple was the women's residence in the Lin family. Typically, Su Jie would not bring an outsider to meet Xintong.

And since he brought him along, then it meant that Su Jie's relationship with the kid was not ordinary. Now, it appeared that even Lin Xintong knew him. This astonished her even more.

"He is a friend of mine." Lin Xintong calmly explained.

"Friend?" The woman repeated the word and frowned slightly. Looking at Yi Yun's appearance, he did not appear to be from a large family clan. Ignoring anything else, just the interspatial rings on Yi Yun's hands were common goods sold on the street. How did Lin Xintong befriend such a person?

Although she was unhappy, the woman did not say anything. Now, Lin Xintong's status was sensitive. Other than that matter,

she would abide by Lin Xintong's intentions for any other matter.

"Grandaunt and sixth grand uncle, what are you doing in my bamboo porch?" Lin Xintong asked without much emotion. It appeared as if the two were not very welcomed.

"We are here to see you, Xintong. Why, do you not wish to see your grand aunt?" The woman said as she cordially held Lin Xintong's hand.

In the Lin family, about half of the elders supported the Shentu family clan's marriage proposal. The woman and the old man beside her were two of them.

To them, the marriage between the Shentu family clan and the Lin family was a win-win situation. Although in recent years, the Shentu family clan and the Lin family had been fighting due to all sorts of interests and had some old scores to settle on both sides, the small grudges were nothing compared to the gains laid in front of them.

The main reason was that a peerless Great Empress was too great a temptation for the Lin family.

Once the natural Yin Meridians were cured, Lin Xintong's future prospects were limitless.

Compared to the ancient Great Empress, the Shentu Patriarch and the Desolate race's Shepherd Boy who had appeared ten years

ago were nothing.

She would definitely be a figure standing on the peak of the world. In this world's vast history, few people could be chosen to match this peerless Great Empress.

Other than the family's interest, this was also a very good thing for Lin Xintong. Lin Xintong's lifespan was originally less than 500 years. She was destined to have her cultivation level capped before reaching the title of Sage. Such a tragic fate could be reversed with this.

Not only would she be the person who could dominate the entire Tian Yuan world, she would also gain several hundreds of thousands of years of lifespan. She could create her own era which was very enviable.

One had to know that for a figure like the Shentu Patriarch, lifespan was more attractive than strength!

That was at least a few hundred thousand years and maybe even millions of years worth of time. Where could one find such a good deal?

The woman in palatial gown only found it a pity that she was aged and lacking natural Yin Meridians, or else, she would have agreed to marry into the Shentu family clan 10,000 times and obtain that great opportunity. And marrying into the Shentu family clan was not an unacceptable matter either. After all, it was a large family clan that was almost equal to the Lin family. There

was no lack of resources or heritage.

As for Shentu Nantian, if Lin Xintong did not like him, then she could maintain a distance. When warriors practiced martial arts, they would usually go into reclusive training for several years or several decades at a time. When Lin Xintong reached the Sage realm, she could go into reclusive training every year. Out of sight, out of mind, what was unacceptable?

Unfortunately, no matter how she persuaded a thousand or ten thousand times, Lin Xintong was unwilling to let her fate be arranged by others. This made the woman find it hard to understand. Would Lin Xintong rather die in 500 years than letting go of her so-called pride and accept this great opportunity that people wished they had?

Although many of the Elders in the family were in favor of this, they could not force her. As such, the matter had been dragged on. Many Elders had tried to enlighten Lin Xintong, but it was useless.

The woman knew that many of the Elders in the family did not have a good relationship with Lin Xintong.

This was because Lin Xintong was born with terminated meridians, which was equivalent to a crippled body. No matter how good her talent was, who would bother caring about a person who could not live for more than 500 years?

Lin Xintong was ignored in the family when she was young, she was even mocked.

However, there were two people who showed additional love to Lin Xintong. One was the Lin family's Matriarch, and the other was Su Jie.

Lin Xintong's relationship with the two of them was the deepest. If the Matriarch was willing to persuade Lin Xintong, then the result would definitely be different.

Alas, it had to be that the Matriarch was indecisive for the past two years. On one hand, the Matriarch was leaning towards letting Lin Xintong accept the Shentu family clan's marriage proposal if they were able to refine that elixir. After all, she did not wish to see her most beloved granddaughter die before the age of 500.

Yet, on the other hand, she did not wish to force Lin Xintong against her will. As such, the Matriarch was indecisive. Besides, two years was nothing for martial artists. She was taking a wait-and-see attitude.

With the Matriarch not committing to it, the other person was Su Jie.

Su Jie's attitude to the matter was vital. The woman knew that Su Jie had come to see Lin Xintong, so she had rushed here early in the morning. She was afraid that Su Jie would say something that he shouldn't say, adding oil to the flames.

Chapter 384: Lin Xintong's Wishes

"Elder Su, it's been a long time since we met." Seeing Su Jie, the woman dressed in palatial attire said smiling.

Obviously, Su Jie knew what these two old fellows were here for. It was to spy on him.

Su Jie tersely responded without any further words.

And at that moment, Su Jie suddenly felt something. He turned around and saw a bevy of girls walk over from a short distance away. Most of them were young, and amongst them, there was a silver haired old granny wearing silk clothes.

This old granny held a dragon-head cane, and her hair was held in a golden jade hair clasp. Although her face was full of wrinkles, it was still a healthy pink in color.

The woman in palatial attire and Lin Xintong's sixth granduncle immediately went forward. Yi Yun naturally understood that this silver-haired old granny in silk clothes was the Lin family's old Matriarch.

Other than a few grand elders, the Matriarch was one of figures who held the most influence in the Lin family. She had even greater influence in matters concerning the internal affairs of the Lin family.

However, although the Matriarch held a high position in the Lin family, she did not give off the slightest bit of imposing pressure. Yi Yun really felt that this Matriarch in front of him was a normal old granny from a rich household that was amiable.

"Xintong, your reclusive retreat has been for so long..."

The Matriarch looked lovingly at Lin Xintong while Lin Xintong smiled sweetly and said, "Originally, I was planning to greet you today, but I never expected you to come here personally."

Lin Xintong was very respectful and loving to the Lin family's Matriarch.

She was the elder who loved her the most back in the day. When Lin Xintong was receiving the cold treatment in the family, the Matriarch had always cared for her.

If the Matriarch had any wish, Lin Xintong would do her best in fulfilling it.

Seeing the Lin family's Matriarch come, Su Jie suddenly felt awkward. He originally planned to speak privately with Lin Xintong, asking for her thoughts. However, before he could even walk into Lin Xintong's bamboo hut's courtyard, all sorts of important figures of the Lin family had come one after another. Even the Matriarch had come.

Although Su Jie was Lin Xintong's master, he was still an

outsider in regards to the Lin family's family affairs. Especially with the Matriarch present, there were words he could not say conveniently.

The Matriarch had guessed Su Jie's thoughts and took the initiative to say, "Xintong, today with your master present, say whatever you want to say. This matter has been dragged on for two years. The old fellows in the elder roundtable have been arguing all this time. The Shentu family has also become increasingly annoying, maybe... it is time to make a decision."

Once Matriarch Lin said these words, Lin Xintong's grandaunt and granduncle immediately perked up their ears. They knew that if Matriarch Lin nodded her head slightly in front of Lin Xintong, that would be much better than them saying a million words.

This old granny's attitude was very important!

At that moment, it was not appropriate for Su Jie to speak, so he could only look at Lin Xintong, leaving the decision up to her.

Su Jie was in dilemma. He wanted Lin Xintong to reject the marriage proposal. For her natural Yin Meridians, he had ran around for years, reading all sorts of ancient manuscripts, but he had never found a method to cure it. Now, the Shentu family clan, whom he never liked had announced that they had found the method. Emotionally, this was a bit unacceptable.

However... He was also worried that if Lin Xintong refused the marriage proposal, and if he could not save her, then Lin Xintong

would die young. Of course, Su Jie did not wish to see such an ending.

Lin Xintong pursed her lips as she turned silent.

Everyone looked at Lin Xintong. Yi Yun also watched Lin Xintong's expression, trying to guess her thoughts.

"Let us go into the yard first." Lin Xintong said nonchalantly while she took the Matriarch, Su Jie and company into the bamboo hut's small yard.

The yard was not large, but it was elegantly furnished. In the middle of the yard, there was an ancient rattan chair. Lin Xintong invited the Matriarch to sit down before Su Jie, sixth granduncle and grandaunt took their seats.

Lin Xintong brewed a pot of tea as she said softly, "Ever since I turned sensible, I knew about my natural terminated meridians and was destined to die young. As the Matriarch has cherished me, I was able to use the best elixirs, relics in the family when I practiced martial arts. At that time, there were older cousins who were unhappy about this. They said that I was destined to die, yet I wasted the family's resources. If they received those items, they would accomplish all sorts of things. Paternal and maternal aunts always looked at me weirdly, saying I was a unlucky and that I was cursed to have such a body behind my back..."

Up to this, Lin Xintong's voice was calm. However, Yi Yun and Su Jie found that the tone had a hint of sadness. Anyone could

imagine what sort of mental scars a young girl, who was at the age when her self-esteem was invaluable, would receive when mocked in such a manner when the Matriarch was not around.

Yi Yun knew that the bitter times Lin Xintong endured while growing up was definitely not limited to what she had said.

When he first met Lin Xintong, he only knew her as a cherished daughter of Heaven that was high above. She was like a snow lotus at the top of a high mountain, unperturbed by worldly affairs. Who would have ever thought that she would have such a childhood?

"Child, it was hard on you." The Matriarch sighed as she lovingly touched Lin Xintong's face.

Lin Xintong gently held the Matriarch's old hand and carried on, "When I was young, the Matriarch would tell me every time I felt hurt that the natural terminated meridians had a cure. She even said that if I were to join up my terminated meridians, then I would become a Great Empress that was strongest in the entire Tian Yuan world."

"From then, I swore in my heart that I would definitely join up my terminated meridians in this life."

"I was unwilling to accept the machinations of fate. I was not willing to let them look at me like that, or letting them looking forward to my death."

"This thought began taking root, sprouting and growing from a very young age. Slowly, it has become the greatest thought and pursuit of my life."

When Lin Xintong said this, Yi Yun recalled the words Lin Xintong said when they were in the Cloud Wilderness's Desolate Human Valley.

Back then, he only found Lin Xintong pure and determined. She was going against all odds, despite knowing they were against, but he never knew why Lin Xintong was behaving like that.

At that moment, Lin Xintong's grandaunt could not resist saying, "Xintong, since you have thought it through, why are you in a dilemma? Now, the chance is right in front of you. As long as you nod your head, wouldn't the thought you had since you were young be accomplished? When you become a peerless Great Empress and live for generations, that would be something countless number of people would envy!"

"When you were young, indeed, I did not care for you enough, but... the family has so many children. Which elder is able to take into account every child's feelings? I gave you the cold treatment when you were young, but now, I have repeatedly appeared before you and persuade you with this old face of mine. I know that you do not have any good feelings for a snobbish person like me. In fact, your heart is filled with contempt and disdain, but you just do not say it."

"However, whatever I say is reasonable. Xintong, I will not mention anything about the family. I know you don't like hearing

about that. Then let me ask you, life and your innocence, which is more important?"

This woman indeed had good intentions and she was honest. Yi Yun had to admit that for her to say those words with her status, she was pretty to the point.

Life and innocence, which was more important?

Probably 99% of girls would choose the former.

Lin Xintong nodded, "Grandaunt, you are right. I already understood all of these reasonings when I returned home two years ago and received the news."

"However... I don't want to. It is not because I dislike the Shentu family clan, and it has nothing to do with the questionable character of Shentu Nantian. But... I do not want to use my own body in exchange for a martial path carefully paved by someone else."

"The goals I set when I was young did not only include joining up the terminated meridians, it also included searching for the pinnacle of martial arts after I joined up my terminated meridians."

"For martial artists, their martial path is embedded in their hearts. Practicing martial arts is to go against the Heavens. It is originally fraught with difficulties!"

"Joining up natural terminated meridians may be difficult, but can it be more difficult than exceeding a peerless Great Emperor? However, up to now, there has not been a person who has gone beyond the realm of peerless Great Emperor."

"The practice of martial arts is perilous, it requires one to open up a new path forcefully on the way up the dangerous peak that has no path. If I were to sell my beliefs and body to exchange for this path, then, even though I become a Great Empress, so what? In my heart, there would be a seed of failure buried in. With my beliefs sold, it would never be restored. Then, I would probably not have any breakthrough after I became a Great Empress. I probably will never reach the realm of the peerless Great Empress from the past."

"This is not what I want. My life has just begun. Although my lifespan may seem very short to you, but to a common mortal, it is already extremely long. Since I am determined to fight for my destiny, then my fight has just begun now. I still have nearly 500 years I can use. Why would I give up now?"

When Lin Xintong said this, everyone turned quiet.

Yi Yun drew in a deep breath. Lin Xintong's words really shocked him. Her determination was something he had never seen throughout his life.

The Matriarch's eyebrows ticked before she finally let out a long sigh, "Xintong, you are still so stubborn. However, sometimes,

some paths cannot be opened up just with faith."

The Matriarch had ultimately experienced a lot. She was very awed of this world.

When people are young, they would often be arrogant and frivolous. They would often wish to challenge everything in the world, believing that they could defy fate. They believed that if they had the perseverance and ability, anything could be done.

However, compared to young people, older people tended to succumb to reality. In the end, the Matriarch still did not believe that by abandoning the opportunity the Shentu family clan provided, Lin Xintong would be able to defy the fatal fate that awaited her.

Often, reality was much more cruel than the ideal.

Beside Su Jie, Yi Yun could tell that the Lin family's Matriarch was most concerned about Lin Xintong's life. She did not wish to see her grandchild die before her.

Hence... she had already leaned towards accepting the Shentu family clan's offer.

Yi Yun suddenly said, "Do you all think that the Shentu family clan can definitely heal Miss Lin?"

Chapter 385: A Mere Acquaintance Should Not Sow Discord Between Two Close People

Yi Yun's comment was very sudden. Instantly, everyone in the yard looked towards Yi Yun.

At that moment, Yi Yun was standing behind Su Jie's seat. He completely looked like a young medicine boy. From the moment Yi Yun appeared, no one had noticed him, other than Lin Xintong's grandaunt from before. She had only spoken to him because Yi Yun knew Lin Xintong.

If Lin Xintong had not greeted Yi Yun, she would have treated him like thin air.

"What are you? Do you know your manners!? Do you even have the right to speak here?"

This was a matter of the Lin family. Even Su Jie did not have much right to speak as he was an outsider. From the beginning to now, Su Jie had been mostly been listening.

And with Su Jie's status, if he really wanted to make a comment, the Lin family would listen. However, how could a follower of Su Jie, who looked like a sidekick youth, have the right to interject while the upper echelons of the Lin family were talking?

Not even the Lin family, even in a big mortal household, if a servant were to suddenly interrupt his master while he was

speaking, he would only end up being smacked in the mouth!

Due to Su Jie, the grandaunt could not do anything to Yi Yun. After all, she had been lowering her status to persuade Lin Xintong today, and she was feeling a burning rage. If Yi Yun was a member of the Lin family, she would have dragged him away to be punished according to the family rules.

Before Su Jie spoke, Yi Yun directly said, "I'm Yun Yantian, Elder Su's in-name disciple."

Yi Yun casually gave himself a name. He used his original name, Yun as his surname. 'Yan' was a homophone, and actually meant concealment. Yun Yantian then meant clouds (Yun) concealing (Yan) the sky (Tian). It also secretly expressed Yi Yun's martial arts goal.

At the same time, Shentu Nantian's name also had a 'Tian', so clouds (Yun) concealing (Yan) the sky (Tian) also meant Yi Yun was concealing Shentu Nantian. This was an evil pun Yi Yun used when giving himself the name.

"In-name disciple?" When the woman in palatial gown heard this, her face turned gloomy. An in-name disciple's status was low, yet he dared to speak to her here?

She was nearly about to go into a rage when Lin Xintong stood up and said, "Grandaunt, he is my friend."

The woman wanted to say something but it got stuck in her throat momentarily, "Friend?"

This word made her feel uncomfortable. What kind of status did the Lin family have? Lin Xintong was also the greatest figure of the Lin family's younger generation. She could become a peerless Great Empress in the future, yet she made friends with such a person?

If it was her granddaughter, she would have reprimanded her. However, against Lin Xintong, she did not dare do so. She could only tone down her expression and said patiently, "Xintong, it is your prerogative to make friends, but you must see what sort of person someone is. You have a dignified background and you will have limitless achievements in the future. If you want to make friends, they have to be people like Shentu Nantian, who come from a large family clan. They are youths who will amount to great things in the future. As for some cats and dogs, or riff-raff, it is best you don't mix around with them, or you would lose your dignity and be ridiculed by others. What do you say, Xintong?"

The woman tried to make her speech sound kind, but even so, her words were filled with superiority. They included referring Yi Yun to cats and dogs or riff-raff, and this angered Lin Xintong.

Lin Xintong's eyebrows frowned as she spoke coldly, "Grandaunt, he is my friend. As for you, you can only be considered my elder. You have lived a long time, and have seen numerous people and encountered numerous matters. You should understand the meaning of how a mere acquaintance should not sow discord between two close people."

The words Lin Xintong did not include any swear words, but it immediately turned the woman's face white!

A mere acquaintance should not sow discord between two close people!

The woman in the palatial gown was Lin Xintong's grandaunt, but as for Yi Yun, what sort of person was he to Lin Xintong?

He was just a friend, and a friend of an unknown closeness at that.

However, Lin Xintong had actually said "Mere acquaintance should not sow discord between two close people!"

This meant that in Lin Xintong's heart, she as the grandaunt was the mere acquaintance. She was dispensable. As for this riff-raff, Yi Yun, he held a greater spot in Lin Xintong's heart than the grandaunt, her!

Previously, Lin Xintong also said that the woman "can only be" considered Lin Xintong's elder.

This also meant that other than the relation of being of the same clan and the elder-junior relationship that could not be wiped off, she as a grandaunt was nothing in Lin Xintong's heart.

With her status as someone who was more distant, she was being presumptuous and being offensive by criticizing the kid who was closer to Lin Xintong.

"You... " The woman's voice trembled slightly. To have those sharp words aimed at her in front of so many people, including the Matriarch and the juniors the Matriarch brought, she had lost all face!

However, she could not refute a word. When Lin Xintong was young and suffered all sorts of abuse from her family, she as a grandaunt had never played a positive role. On the contrary, she had taken on a conniving attitude.

It was only two years ago when Lin Xintong could become a peerless Great Empress and become a transcendent figure of the Shentu family clan and Lin family in the far future, did she try to deepen the ties with Lin Xintong. However, what was the point?

To Lin Xintong, being courteous to her grandaunt was purely out of the respect for one's elders. If it involved her friends or her master, things would completely be different.

"Xintong, how can you be so brazen with your words!?" The Matriarch rebuked, helping the woman in palatial attire to ease the situation.

The grandaunt had lost face as she glanced angrily at Yi Yun, "Matriarch, this kid is young and of lowly status. He doesn't know anything, yet, here he is jumping onto a Shentu family clan and

Lin family matter that only Great Emperors can decide. He really doesn't know his place!"

The Shentu family clan and Lin family's great matter was decided by the upper echelons, so for a junior to join in the discussion, it naturally gave others the feeling that he did not know the rules and that he was immature and ridiculous.

Yi Yun said calmly, "I was only listing a possibility. The Shentu family clan may not be able to cure Miss Lin."

"What a joke. When a large family clan does things, do you think it's children playing House? If they do not even have the slightest confidence, wouldn't they end up being the laughing stock of the world?"

"Besides, our Lin family will verify it ourselves to guarantee complete success. Do you think that the Elders of our Lin family cannot come up with thoughts that you thought of? That their insights are inferior to yours?"

"Do you know the Desolate Heaven technique? Do you know the ancient recipe? You are just Su Jie's in-name disciple!"

"Indeed, lads are ignorant, and their words are hilarious!"

The woman retorted in a sarcastic tone like a cannon. Yi Yun took that in silently, making it seem like he had been dumbfounded by the woman's words.

This finally allowed her to feel a sense of relief. However, Yi Yun's status was after all lowly. To partake in such an exchange still made her feel like she had lowered her status and it was not worth it.

To her, this feeling was like being bitten by a bug. So what if she had trampled the bug? She had still been bitten by the bug.

"Matriarch." The woman was afraid the Matriarch would hesitate on this matter, so she turned to the Matriarch and said, "The Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique has extraordinary heritage that has no reason to be doubted. It is indeed a level higher than our Lin family. If the Lin family allies with the Shentu family clan, then when Lin Xintong takes on a commanding role, our Lin family's Desolate Heaven technique heritage would also probably upgrade a level."

"The Desolate Heaven technique tea session organized by the Shentu family clan will be in two months time. At that time, the Shentu family clan should be able to prove their ability to cure Xintong's terminated meridians!"

As the woman in palatial attire said, she glanced at Su Jie with a mocking look. "Elder Su, you must have already prepared for the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, right?"

The woman knew that Su Jie would definitely suffer a defeat at the tea session. Although his Desolate Heaven technique standard was extremely high, he would not be able to resist against the

gurus of the Shentu family clan. No matter how strong Su Jie was, he would probably lose.

The woman was not on good terms with Su Jie, so seeing Su Jie suffer naturally made her delighted. Also, if the Shentu family clan proved their strength, then it would support her position. As no matter how she saw it, this marriage would only benefit the Lin family.

"You do not need to worry about my preparations. Why? You seem to look forward to the Lin family being trampled on?"

Since he did not have a good impression of her and had been targeted by her mean words, Su Jie naturally would not take it sitting down. He immediately attacked back verbally.

"Elder Su, you don't need to imply that I'm helping others secretly. Of course I wish the Lin family to be in the limelight, but I would not blindly dream. Does it mean you will win just because I wish you will win?"

Seeing the woman about to quarrel with Su Jie, the Matriarch's face sank and reprimanded the woman, "Quiet! Have some decency!"

Su Jie was the Lin family's in-house guest, so he naturally had to be treated respectfully or he could easily just leave. The Matriarch would naturally reprimand the woman in palatial attire if she argued with Su Jie.

The woman stayed silent. She had said those words on a whim.

The Matriarch leaned on her dragon-head cane and stood up, "Elder Su, the original intention of the tea session is for the Shentu family clan to showcase their Desolate Heaven technique standard. However, they have prepared well in advance, and we did not have much time to prepare as well as our comparatively lower heritage, we might be suppressed."

"Having said so, our Lin family should not lose too badly. I hope I can rely on Elder Su for this matter! You must uphold the Lin family's reputation."

The Matriarch's voice was sincere as Su Jie nodded, "I will do my best. May the Matriarch be at ease!"

"Alright." The Matriarch nodded and turned towards Lin Xintong, "Xintong, I will not force you. You should walk down your own path. You still have a long life ahead."

"I have lived so long and have seen too many people and things. Having experienced so much, I only want to tell you that you are still young. Whatever you are thinking of now, and what you are insisting on now might be childish and ridiculous when you really grow up a few thousand years in the future."

"What you hold deeply might not be what you want... You might rather die now, but eventually, you might accept it despite the humiliation. Maybe one day, you might even celebrate that you had given in... "

After the Matriarch finished speaking, she used her cane and under the companionship of the group of girls, left.

Chapter 386: Soul Nurturing Relic

After separating from Lin Xintong, Su Jie began his two-month reclusive training period. Regardless of anything, he could not make any mistakes for the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

As for Yi Yun, he also began his Desolate Heaven technique training. Yi Yun had already received everything from the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal techniques that Su Jie could teach him. The remaining training only depended on himself.

Yi Yun locked himself in the independent bone refinement room Su Jie had prepared for him. In front of him were all kinds of desolate bone materials. Some of these materials were provided by Su Jie, while the rest were obtained from desolate beasts he killed while he was in the Divine Wilderness.

Originally, all these materials were supposed to be handed over to the Tai Ah Divine City to exchange for glory points, but after the alliance tournament, glory points lost its meaning for Yi Yun. Hence, Yi Yun kept them for himself.

Practicing the Desolate Heaven technique was a very boring process. It also expended his mental powers greatly. Yi Yun would often spend a day and a night in the bone refinement room at a time.

The way he practiced the Desolate Heaven technique was to use the Purple Crystal to extract the Power of Desolates, and by

controlling the Power of Desolates, he would constantly form seals, destroy them, form seals and destroy them again.

One runic seal would usually be repeated a few hundred times. It was done until it was branded in Yi Yun's mind, it was something that became muscle memory.

Originally, after Su Jie taught Yi Yun the Mystic Crystal Hand, Yi Yun was able to perfectly form more than fifty seals with the Mystic Crystal Hand. Very soon, Yi Yun managed to perfectly form the remaining forty runic seals.

However, that was not enough as Yi Yun was using extremely low-grade desolate bones when he was practicing the Mystic Crystal Hand.

Low-grade desolate bones contained very little Power of Desolates and they were easy to control. As the grade of the desolate bones increased, it also became harder to use the Mystic Crystal Hand to control the Power of Desolates to form seals.

Even with Yi Yun's Purple Crystal, he was unable to ignore such a rule.

After all, the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal were 'one-size fits all seals' techniques. The higher the realm one reached in the Desolate Heaven technique, more the inadequate the two seals appeared to be.

"These two techniques are not a long term solution. However, my Desolate Heaven technique is currently limited. I am lacking in cultivation time as well. To complete all these complicated hand seals is not easy. It is even more impossible to master it quickly in two months..."

Yi Yun had already made his plans. The Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal were just used in transition. When a Desolate Heaven Master practiced the Desolate Heaven technique, there was definitely a process of going from simple to difficult. There had to be a transitional process.

As for the next stage, Yi Yun had already chosen a few sealing techniques he had planned on learning. All of these techniques had the feature of being more broad in scope. Yi Yun temporarily did not plan to learn those seals that aimed at a particular type of energy as his time was too precious.

Yi Yun practiced day and night for ten days. He would often practice till his mental strength was depleted. He would meditate for a while before immersing himself in practicing again.

To completely drain his mental strength, and then carry on practicing after a short meditation was also a form of training for his soul.

Knock! Knock! Knock!

At that moment, a knock sounded outside the bone refinement room. Yi Yun stopped what he was doing and frowned slightly.

Typically, when Desolate Heaven Masters practiced, it was taboo to be disturbed as it was easy to cause a seal that was formed to be undone.

"Who is it?"

Yi Yun walked to the stone door and opened the door with a solemn expression. Yi Yun saw a young lady standing at the door.

Currently, Yi Yun's hair was messy and his eyes were bloodshot. He looked ferocious and scary, causing the young lady to be stunned.

"Who are you?" Yi Yun's voice was slightly hoarse. The continuous practicing had caused Yi Yun's mental state to be somewhat suppressed.

"Young Master Yun... Yun." The young lady swallowed a mouthful of saliva. These days, Yi Yun had been using the fake name of Yun Yantian, so she naturally addressed him as Young Master Yun.

Actually, in the entire Lin family, other than Lin Xintong and Su Jie, almost no one cared about Yi Yun. For figures like Lin Xintong's grandaunt, she disliked Yi Yun, but she would not pay much attention to him.

As for the other Desolate Heaven Master apprentices who had seen Yi Yun's performance back then, they could not be bothered

with him as they had the idea that Yi Yun was just a phony who was fishing for fame.

Yi Yun would often be locked in the independent bone refinement room by himself and he would not have any contact with them, so when the young lady in front of him suddenly addressed him as "Young Master Yun", Yi Yun was slightly taken aback.

The young lady took out an interspatial ring timidly, "This... This is given by our family's Miss. Soul... Soul Nurturing relic, and... and the ring, Miss said that... it's for Young Master Yun to... use."

The young lady handed the interspatial ring over to Yi Yun in a fluster before turning to run away. She was really afraid when she saw Yi Yun's bloodshot eyes and ferocious image.

Yi Yun was stunned for a while before recovering. This girl was Lin Xintong's maidservant. Back in Lin Xintong's courtyard, he had seen this maidservant, and he had seen her at random.

So it was sent by Miss Lin.

Yi Yun looked at the interspatial ring in his hand. Probing it with his spiritual energy, he realized the capacity of the interspatial ring was more than ten times the rings he had. It was really a magical item.

It was probably because Lin Xintong felt that Yi Yun was despised

by the woman in palatial attire due to his equipment. His equipment allowed the woman to tell at a glance that Yi Yun was not a rich person and that he had come from a small place.

Taking out the item from the ring, it was a crystal clear jade box. When he opened it, a green desolate bone relic rolled out from the jade box.

It was the Soul Nurturing relic. It was not the name of a relic, but the overall name of a type of relics. Consuming such relics could allow one's mental strength to rapidly recover.

Lin Xintong must have learned from Su Jie that he was practicing the Desolate Heaven technique.

After hesitating for a while, Yi Yun took the green relic and popped it into his mouth.

With the relic in his mouth, Yi Yun gently chewed on it. It was like he was biting on a soft sweet.

Yi Yun swallowed the Soul Nurturing and he felt it turn into a hot stream that entered his soul. Yi Yun felt like he was being cleansed in a pool of spring water. His mind cleared and the headache he was having reduced greatly.

Clearly, this was a very good Soul Nurturing relic.

Indeed, with Lin Xintong's status in the Lin family, the resources

she could use were all top notch.

Yi Yun felt a warm surge in his heart. It was naturally not convenient for him to meet Lin Xintong now. It was not easy for Lin Xintong to still remember that he was practicing the Desolate Heaven technique and send a maidservant to give him a Soul Nurturing relic.

This box of Soul Nurturing relics was a timely gift for Yi Yun. With this, he was able to practice the Desolate Heaven technique more smoothly.

After recovering some mental strength and closing the jade box, Yi Yun began the dry practicing process once again.

When warriors trained in martial arts, they were destined to be lonely. It was also the same when practicing the Desolate Heaven technique!

In front of Yi Yun, there was a long Desolate Heaven technique stone bench. On it was a row of desolate bones. From left to right, these desolate bones were arranged in according to their grade.

The leftmost desolate bones were normal desolate bones. Yi Yun had already perfectly completed the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal on those desolate bones.

In the middle were desolate bones that were from general ranked desolate beasts, as well as king-ranked desolate beasts.

These two types of desolate bones were Yi Yun's training focus.

And on the right side were the highest grade desolate bones. It was the Golden Crow species's bones that Yi Yun had obtained in Fallen Star Gate!

After Yi Yun killed the Golden Crow species, he did not waste any of its body's materials. Yi Yun had nearly finished the Golden Crow blood in the alliance tournament.

Yi Yun still kept the remaining feathers, claws, desolate beast meat and the most precious desolate bones.

Yi Yun quietly turned his gaze on the primordial strain's desolate bones. The dark red desolate bone seemed to be glowing red-hot...

There were still two months left, there... should be enough time.

Chapter 387: Desolate Heaven Technique Tea Session Begins

Time passed by without Yi Yun realizing it as Yi Yun quietly practiced without knowing the time of the day. It was until one day when another person knocked on his door. This time, it was not Lin Xintong's maidservant, but the female Desolate Heaven Master apprentice he met when he first entered the Lin family's Desolate Heaven technique hall. She was the disciple of that middle-aged man whose surname was Sun.

"Senior brother Yun, my master ordered me to tell you that the Desolate Heaven technique tea session will begin tomorrow morning."

"Tomorrow morning?" Yi Yun ruffled his unkempt hair. He gave people the impression of him having just woke up.

Two months have passed... How time flies.

The young lady's gaze looked past Yi Yun's body all the way to what was behind Yi Yun. Seeing this, she covered her mouth in surprise.

There was no other reason other than Yi Yun's bone refinement room being too messy. It looked like it had been swept by bandits.

Four to five Desolate Heaven technique disk arrays were messily placed on the stone benches. There were materials scattered on the

ground. Most of these materials had their energy extracted. Some were cracked, while others broken. Some had even turned to powder.

If one walked into the bone refinement room, there was not even a spot to place one's foot. It was not an exaggeration at all.

"Thank you. What is your name?" Yi Yun casually asked.

"Senior brother Yun, my name is Xiaoqi." The young lady crisply said.

"So, it's Junior sister Xiaoqi! Has my master come out of reclusive training?"

"He's out. Elder Su is now in the hall chatting with my master!"

"I got it. Junior sister Xiaoqi, if you are going back, please inform my master to get someone to clean up this bone refinement room. Since the Desolate Heaven technique tea session is tomorrow, I will need to get some rest."

Saying this, Yi Yun nonchalantly picked up some of the materials that were still useful and stuffed them all into his interspatial ring. Following that, he rubbed his head and walked past the young lady.

After hearing that, the young lady was somewhat dumbstruck. He had asked for her name just to say this?

To get Elder Su to find someone to clean up the bone refinement room?

Xiaoqi felt speechless. This Senior brother Yun, who was just an in-name disciple, had actually ordered Elder Su!

A disciple had ordered his master and said it as if it was something taken for granted. What the heck!?

Elder Su's position in the Lin family was extraordinary. He was even higher in status than her own master, so who could order him around usually? Furthermore, it was ordering him to do some trivial matter.

Seeing Yi Yun walk further away, Xiaoqi wanted to run over to him and drag him back. However, she was introverted, and although she opened her mouth, she did not say a word. At that moment, Yi Yun had already disappeared around the bend of a corridor.

Xiaoqi stood there in a daze for a while. In the end, she did not have the courage to go to Su Jie and get him to order someone to clean up the bone refinement room. If she did so, her master alone would have scolded her, whatmore, Su Jie.

And in the end, her master would definitely order her to clean up the bone refinement room. After all, many of the things in the bone refinement room could only be cleaned by people with knowledge of the Desolate Heaven technique. A normal person

would not do.

Just thinking of this made Xiaoqi feel somewhat pissed.

This person had gone too far. He had used such a good independent practice room that she did not even have the chance to use. It had been messed up by him into such a state. Did he even have a civic mind!?

Xiaoqi was angry but she had no other avail. As she looked at the poor state of the bone refinement room, she stamped her feet and finally tip-toed into the room.

"I'll treat it as if I owe you one!" Xiaoqi gritted her teeth as she said that.

She began cleaning the bone refinement room up. When she approached the Desolate Heaven technique stone bench, the surface was covered in a layer of bone powder. Other places were also messy. She estimated that she would take at least an hour to clean the mess up.

Xiaoqi felt aggrieved. As she cursed Yi Yun, she cleaned up the place. She had ended up cleaning for something that had nothing to do with her.

As she was cleaning the garbage up, Xiaoqi suddenly felt something peculiar. On the corner of the Desolate Heaven technique stone bench, she discovered a very peculiar material

residue.

It was a desolate bone that had already turned into dust.

Typical desolate bones would turn grayish-white in color after having their energy extracted and turn to dust. However, this desolate bone still remained dark red in color even after it became powder. It was very peculiar.

And when Xiaoqi touched the red powder, she could vaguely feel its heat. It was not residue heat from heating the powder, but heat from the powder itself. This was because within it was fire-elemental energy or pure Yang energy.

"He did not even extract the material properly. There is still so much Power of Desolates left. Such a waste."

Xiaoqi mumbled to herself, but she could not recognize what sort of desolate bone it was. After all, its energy had been extracted, and there were too many types of desolate bones. Even a Desolate Heaven Master would not be able to distinguish it easily.

Xiaoqi threw all of the powder into a bag...

...

Yi Yun returned to a room Su Jie had prepared for him. The moment his head hit the bed, he went into a deep sleep.

He was too tired after two months of intense practice.

Usually when Yi Yun rested, he would just meditate, however, this time meditation was not enough.

Yi Yun quickly entered deep sleep. His perception was completely cut off as his soul went into a deep sleep state. All his mental activity stopped.

Yi Yun slept for about 15 hours, for nearly the entire night and half an afternoon.

Only until the sky lit up did Yi Yun faintly wake up.

After he laid in bed for a moment, he suddenly leaped up. The room was dimly lit, but Yi Yun's eyes were sparkling. They were like two beams of ghostly lightning.

Looking into his soul, Yi Yun realized that the Heaven's Eye in his mind had already slowly formed its shape. Now, Yi Yun had completely opened his Heaven's Eye.

This change was brought forth by Yi Yun's strengthening of his mental strength.

Intense practicing of the Desolate Heaven technique had expanded Yi Yun's soul.

Yi Yun took a deep breath and spat out a breath. He saw a visible sword Qi fly out.

Now, Yi Yun felt better than ever before. His brain felt infinitely awake. He was completely aware of everything happening in his surroundings.

It was time to participate in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. Yi Yun took a comfortable shower and changed into dry and clean clothes. Wearing the mask Su Jie left him, he walked out of his residence.

He gently pinched his throat to change his voice. This was not much different from his original voice, but under such circumstances, the Shentu family clan was unlikely to imagine that an ant-like Yi Yun who have been crippled of his cultivation would appear in the Lin family. He had even suddenly transformed into a Desolate Heaven Master of the Lin family, and he was Su Jie's disciple.

The status difference between the two was too great. So, no matter how great the Shentu family clan's imagination was, it was very difficult to connect them together.

From a distance, Yi Yun could see a huge airship land on the Tian Hua peak. There was a symbol Yi Yun was very familiar with engraved on the airship. It was the Shentu family clan's coat of arms!

The Shentu family clan had already arrived.

Chapter 388: Enemies Meet

The Tian Hua peak was one of the 18 main peaks in the Lin family's Jade Spirit Mountains. The Desolate Heaven technique tea session was held in the Tian Hua Garden on the Tian Hua peak.

In contrast to vast expanse of jade bamboo on the Jade Bamboo peak, the garden on Tian Hua's peak reared all sorts of magical herbs. In addition, energy gathering arrays made it so that the Heaven Earth Yuan Qi in the Tian Hua Garden was extremely thick.

Every morning, there would be a thin mountain fog in the Tian Hua Garden, and due to the rich Heaven Earth Yuan Qi mixing with the fog, just taking a deep breath would make one's pores open up. It was extremely comfortable.

In the inner regions of the Tian Hua Garden, there was a lake with clear water. On the lake's surface, there was a green building. In front of the building was a square, and surrounding the square were pavilions made of jade. This was the site where the Desolate Heaven technique tea session was being held at.

"You are Senior brother Yun?"

Lin Qing asked uncertainly as she looked oddly at Yi Yun's mask when he neared his seat.

The reason she asked was because the seats had been arranged for the tea session. When Yi Yun came to the Tian Hua Garden he was

met by a receptionist. To enter, Yi Yun had to show his identity token, which had been made for him earlier.

Yi Yun nodded at Lin Qing and used his original voice, "It is me."

"Why are you wearing a mask?" As she had been forced to clean up Yi Yun's mess, Lin Qing's impression of Yi Yun was no longer as good as before. Now, Yi Yun was even wearing a mask, trying to act cool for the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

Yi Yun's mask was entirely silverish-white in color. At the placement of the eyes there were two blood-red lines. It looked scary at first glance. In the Desolate Heaven Master circles, there were some people who pretended to be mysterious and liked to wear masks. They purposely gave off an enigmatic feeling, but in fact, their skills were not that great.

At that moment, Yi Yun saw the Shentu family clan's airship land by the side of the lake. Many of the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven Masters, and their younger generation, emerged from the airship. Crossing the rainbow bridge over the lake, they walked to the square in the center of it.

These people took turns to be seated. In the world of warriors, there was a hierarchical system. Those who sat closer to the center, where the seats of honor were, they were the important figures from the various large family clans and the top-ranked Desolate Heaven Masters from everywhere. And in the outer regions sat the children from normal family clan members and the disciples of many Desolate Heaven Masters.

Yi Yun naturally sat in the outer regions. As he was about to be seated, Yi Yun's footsteps stopped as his motions slowed down.

He saw that, by the lake, a man dressed in green was disembarking the Shentu family clan's airship. People clustered around him before he stepped onto the rainbow bridge on the lake.

The man held a folding fan in his hand and wore a headband. His green clothes were extremely simple. but since he was surrounded by many people, it was clear that he was someone important. His every move did not feel like he was showing off, and they were in fact gentle and charming. It made those who saw him feel extremely comfortable.

Shentu Nantian!

Yi Yun's eyes flashed.

Meeting Shentu Nantian now was no different from the first time Yi Yun saw him. Back then, Shentu Nantian gave one the feeling of a humble scholar.

Only when Jiang Xiaorou's identity was discovered by Shentu Nantian did he showcase his ferocious side.

"Young Master Nantian, it must have been hard on your to come all the way here."

On the rainbow bridge, a few custodians of the Lin family were responsible for receiving the important figures of the Shentu Nantian for today. Shentu Nantian, who could likely become one of the in-laws of the Lin family and the family head of the Shentu family clan, was naturally one of them.

"Young Master Nantian, this way, please." The Lin family's custodian was very attentive. Once Lin Xintong's terminated meridians were joined up, then as long as Lin Xintong wished it, she would taken over the helm of the Lin family in the future. As for Shentu Nantian, who would become Lin Xintong's fiancée, his status would become even more important. Hence, the custodian had to do his best to treat him well.

"Well, thank you." Shentu Nantian said very politely as he smiled warmly.

Shentu Nantian slowly walked and behind him were three of the top Desolate Heaven Master apprentices from the Shentu family clan. They were all young and had little reputation. However, they followed Shentu Nantian all the way to the seats of honor. Although they did not sit in the first row, and sat in the few rows at the back, those seats were still only spots for outer Elders.

The custodian who was in charge of the reception did not feel good seeing them sit there as if a matter of course. The young generation of the Lin family, other than Lin Xintong, were all seated in the outer seats. The only person from the Lin family's younger generation who could sit in the seats of honor was Lin Xintong herself.

"These three are...?" The custodian asked somewhat awkwardly as he minced his words to indicate that they were not suited to sit there.

Shentu Nantian said without heeding, "They are the most outstanding Desolate Heaven Masters of the Tian Yuan world's younger generation. Shentu Feng, Shentu Hai are from my Shentu family clan, and this is Song Ziyue from the Song family."

The Song family that Shentu Nantian mentioned was a family clan the Shentu family clan had an alliance with. Although they were slightly lacking compared to the Shentu Nantian in terms of power, they were still one of the top family clans in the Tian Yuan world.

Since it was clear that the Shentu family clan was letting Shentu Nantian be the host of the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, the custodian in charge of receiving him decided not to speak any further.

"This Shentu family clan sure is arrogant."

On the Lin family's side, several younger disciples noticed this. The juniors of the Shentu family clan, who had the same qualifications of them, were blatantly sitting near the middle of the square. In contrast, they were all sitting on the pavilions surrounding the center of the lake.

This Desolate Heaven technique tea session was originally a competition between the Shentu family clan and Lin family's

Desolate Heaven Masters, but before it began, the Shentu family clan had already suppressed them with their stance. How could the juniors of the Lin family agree to that?

"These bunch of grandsons of the Shentu family clan really think as if they are some big shots!"

Beside Yi Yun and Lin Qing, a Lin family junior swore. This person's name was Lin Yuan. He was a fellow disciple of Lin Qing as he was also a disciple of the middle-aged man whose surname was Sun.

Lin Yuan was slightly older than Yi Yun, so although it seemed like the Lin family was about to have marriage ties with the Shentu family clan soon, Lin Yuan still did not like the Shentu family clan. He never found the Shentu family clan pleasing to the eye.

"Junior sister, wait and see. When the tea session begins, I will show those bunch of grandsons what strength is!"

Lin Yuan patted himself on the chest as he spoke to Lin Qing. He liked this distant cousin that was a few years younger than him. Showcasing himself in front of her and gaining her adulation would definitely be a joyous matter.

Little Lin Qing nodded her head vigorously, as if she trusted this disciple senior of hers greatly.

And beside Lin Qing, a few 14-15 year old children echoed, "Haha,

Senior brother Lin will definitely show his awesomeness and impress that bunch of Shentu family clan fellows!"

Lin Yuan's status amongst these children was very high. He could be regarded as the leader of this bunch of children.

The small pavilion that Lin Yuan, Lin Qing and Yi Yun were sitting at was called the Evening Breeze Pavilion. About a fifth of the Lin family's 13-16 year old Desolate Heaven technique apprentices sat at the Evening Breeze Pavilion.

Practicing the Desolate Heaven technique required a long period of time. For Desolate Heaven technique apprentices, one's skill was mostly determined by age under the situation where everyone's talent was similar.

The standard of the Desolate Heaven technique of 13-16 year old children was pretty limited. As Lin Yuan was the oldest amongst the youths in the Evening Breeze Pavilion, he was also the senior brother of the pavilion. As such, the other children who were lacking in the Desolate Heaven technique treated Lin Yuan as their leader. This did not mean that Lin Yuan was really a genius in the Desolate Heaven technique.

Lin Yuan knew how to play his role and quickly gathered the children together to discuss their battle strategy. Lin Yuan knew that the Shentu family clan was not easily handled.

At that moment, the Desolate Heaven technique tea session officially began.

Since it was called a tea session, there was of course tea. Pots of good spirit tea was served along with all sorts of pastries.

The materials used to make the tea and pastries were all treasures and their value was obvious.

In the seats of honor, the tea and pastries were even higher in quality. These things could normally only be exchanged for with the Lin family's family contribution points. This made many children of the Lin family feel unhappy. Such good things were being fed to the dogs.

When Yi Yun saw the teacup in front of him, he noticed that the tea was crystal clear, as if it was molten amber. The tea's fragrance was refreshing. With the Purple Crystal's energy vision, he could clearly see densely packed light dots in it. They were all made of pure Yuan Qi.

This was just tea normal juniors drank and was considered the lowest quality tea served in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

Even so, this tea cup shocked Yi Yun greatly. If this tea was in the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, it was probably a tribute for the royal palace.

The Tian Yuan world was indeed luxurious. In such an environment, with all the top resources, and lands much bigger than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom, coupled with even better family

clan heritages and traditions, all of this gave rise to young elites that were higher than the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom's by an entire realm or more.

This also made Yi Yun sigh. He went from the poor Cloud Wilderness, where he could not even eat his fill, to the Tai Ah Divine Kingdom. From there, he then went to the Tian Yuan world. He had really witnessed the world's great contrast in levels.

It was like in his previous life. The richest people in the poor mountainous regions, where vehicles could not even pass through, would probably not amount to a hundredth of the wealth of a commoner in Shanghai.

As Yi Yun was thinking, he noticed a white figure appear on a bridge above the lake. Yi Yun's mind stirred. Lin Xintong had arrived!

Chapter 389: Razzle Dazzle

Lin Xintong's appearance naturally became the focus of attention. Shentu Nantian stood up with a slight smile on his face, "Miss Lin, it has been a while since we met."

In such a situation, even though Lin Xintong did not have a good impression of Shentu Nantian, she still nodded her head politely.

Entering the seats of honor, Lin Xintong sat down at her seat and remained silent.

Shentu Nantian did not pester Lin Xintong. Other than the initial polite greeting, he did not cling on further.

Even some children of the Lin family, who did not like Shentu Nantian, could not resent Shentu Nantian's behavior and attitude.

Although the Shentu family clan was the one who had proposed the idea of marriage, Shentu Nantian did not give off the impression that he was begging the Lin family. His mannerisms were neither too humble nor too haughty, they were just perfect. Shentu Nantian did not overly pursue Lin Xintong, but neither did he snub her too much. Such a man was easily liked by girls. There were even some young girls of the Lin family who felt their heart flutter upon seeing Shentu Nantian.

A young hero with good looks, personality and strength was indeed the ideal partner to spend the remainder of their lives with. Although it was not possible to be the first wife, being a concubine

was not that bad either.

The tea session proceeded in an orderly fashion as the bigwigs chatted and drank tea in the seats of honor. They chatted about the understandings of the Desolate Heaven technique, exchanging points of view, the session seemed amiable.

Su Jie did not speak much, while Lin Xintong only remained silent. Only Shentu Nantian attended to both sides like a fish in water.

Now, Shentu Nantian had several supporters in the Lin family. For example, Lin Xintong's grandaunt and 6th granduncle had the most engaging chat with Shentu Nantian.

The grandaunt, who was wearing her palatial gown, kept addressing him as "dear nephew Nantian" in a very affectionate manner.

"Dear nephew Nantian sure is exceptional. Not only is your strength outstanding, I have even heard that dear nephew Nantian's accomplishment in the Desolate Heaven technique is also great. Why not go on stage to perform a bit to broaden my horizons?"

Lin Xintong's grandaunt's face smiled like a flower.

"Grandaunt, you overly praised me. I only dabbled in the Desolate Heaven technique slightly." After the woman in palatial

gown introduced herself, Shentu Nantian took it for granted to begin addressing her, using the same salutation as Lin Xintong, to appear closer. "The path of martial arts is fraught with thorns. Although my qualifications are slightly better than others, it is still a struggle. Practicing martial arts takes up too much of my time, so I do not have the energy to practice the Desolate Heaven technique. I only took some unorthodox shortcuts. Now, I can only do bone refining techniques like blood pills and relic formation."

Shentu Nantian spoke modestly. In fact, many favored children of heaven who focused on martial arts, such as Lin Xintong and company would dabble in elixir refinement techniques, Desolate Heaven technique and array techniques. This could broaden their horizons and would be of a great help to their future martial path. It was the same for Shentu Nantian.

At that moment, Yi Yun who was in the Evening Breeze Pavilion stared at Shentu Nantian from afar. His gaze turned gloomy.

Bone refining techniques such as blood pills and relic formation...?

Other than the desolate bones of desolate beasts being valuable, the blood of many desolate beasts were also of great value, and could be refined into blood pills.

However, for Shentu Nantian, the best material for refining blood pills was not the blood of desolate beasts, but the blood of the Desolate race!

How could Yi Yun forget that, a few months back in the Chu royal residence, Shentu Nantian had caught Jiang Xiaorou. The first thing he wanted upon her capture was for King Chu to provide him a elixir refining room so that he could refine Jiang Xiaorou's blood into blood pills!

Being questioned by so many people, Shentu Nantian used the techniques of blood pills and relic formations to flaunt his Desolate Heaven technique. After hearing this, killing intent surged up from Yi Yun's heart.

"Haha, the Desolate Heaven technique is so broad. Just being a master of one aspect is sufficient!"

An Elder from the Lin family echoed. Even the Elders, who were not supportive of the marriage between the Lin family and the Shentu family clan, were quite enthusiastic towards Shentu Nantian. After all, no one could guarantee what the future would be. Offending this future in-law was definitely not a wise option.

Compared to the remote corners of the tea session, the upper echelons of the Lin family, in the seats of honor, constantly chatted with Shentu Nantian. With that, Shentu Nantian naturally became the focus of everyone's attention. Without a doubt, he could be said to be the main lead of this tea session.

On the Shentu family clan's side, some of the older generation from the upper echelons intended to give the stage to Shentu Nantian for him to flaunt his skills.

If the Elders of the Lin family acknowledged Shentu Nantian, then this marriage would most naturally be a success.

After one hour passed in the tea session, Shentu Nantian stood up and said, "Everyone. This Desolate Heaven technique tea session is firstly, for everyone to exchange their Desolate Heaven technique knowledge and improve on it together. Secondly, it is to prove to the Lin family that my Shentu family clan has passable Desolate Heaven technique standards. Since everyone have mostly eaten their fill by now, why not let some children from my Shentu family clan go on stage to perform some skills to add some fun!"

As Shentu Nantian said this, he signaled with his eyes, and a Shentu Nantian child sitting into the outer regions jumped up to the middle of the square. He looked about 16 years of age and was wearing the uniform of the Shentu family clan. He seemed to be in high spirits.

"All seniors and heroes, I am Shentu Jun and I am seventeen years old this year. I am the direct disciple of the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven Master Shentu Yanfei. Today, with all the experts gathered here for the tea session, let me venture forth to show some tricks, hoping to induce others to come forward with valuable contributions. Please excuse my shortcomings!"

As Shentu Jun spoke, with a snap, a desolate bone appeared in his hand like magic.

Everyone present were experts in the Desolate Heaven technique. From a distance, people could see that the desolate bone was just a normal desolate beast's bone.

To many 17 year old Desolate Heaven Master apprentices, controlling a normal desolate bone was a drop in their status. However, just controlling it to show something spectacular was still a feast for the eyes.

"Up!"

Shentu Jun shouted clearly and a Desolate Heaven technique disk array appeared from his interspatial ring. Following that, Shentu Jun began forming seals with his hands. One runic seal after the other was sent out by him, dancing in the air.

Immediately, the desolate bone's energy was rapidly extracted by Shentu Jun.

Shentu Jun was showcasing his speed. He could extract energy from normal desolate bones very quickly. It only took about 30 seconds before the desolate bone in his hand was completely drained off its energy!

This desolate bone turned grayish-white and was casually tossed away by Shentu Jun.

"Pa!"

With a snap, the desolate bone, which had lost all its essence, shattered like a ceramic tile falling onto the ground.

And at that moment, Shentu Jun carried on making more seals. After a short while, the Power of Desolates, that was dancing in the air, started to form into runes.

These runes were completely controlled by Shentu Jun, like a flock of birds flying in the sky.

"Together!"

Shentu Jun waved his hand and all of the runes began flying together, like a hundred birds following the wind.

"Split!"

Shentu Jun waved his hand again as the runes immediately split apart. It was like directing his own fists.

A bunch of runes began to move in a uniform manner, like a school of fish. It was a very beautiful sight.

"Good!"

"Awesome!"

In the surrounding pavilion, the Desolate Heaven Master apprentices from the Shentu family clan, and the family clans that were in an alliance with the Shentu family clan, began applauding and cheer on Shentu Jun.

Shentu Jun's method was clearly not the technique used for refining desolate bone relics. It was purely a way of showcasing his ability to control energy and his seal-forming techniques. It was purely form. Of course, to really refine a desolate bone relic, no one would control the runes with such flashy but ineffective moves.

In the seats of honor, the Shentu family clan and Lin family's upper echelons nodded their heads slightly as they were watching the performance.

However, Desolate Heaven Master like Su Jie and the middle-aged man, Sun, did not have such thoughts. This was a battle between the heritage between the two family clans. Furthermore, the Desolate Heaven Masters from both sides were always competing against each other, so none of them wanted to be inferior.

A Desolate Heaven Master Elder from the Lin family looked towards a pavilion on the outer circle and nodded. Following that a youth dressed in purple jumped onto the square.

He cupped his fists and said, "I am Lin Yue, the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Master Lin Fenglang's direct disciple. I am also seventeen years old. Seeing Brother Shen Tu's performance alone, it looks somewhat insubstantial, so as my fingers are itching, I decided to join you and hopefully bring a smile to everyone!"

As Lin Yue spoke, he took out a desolate bone he had prepared

earlier. Using his fastest speed, he extracted the Power of Desolates from the desolate bone. Following that, he formed seals with both his hands and transformed the Power of Desolates into runic seals as a group of runes began to fly.

Chapter 390: I Don't Have Much Interest

Lin Yue's seals were similar to Shentu Jun as they began taking form and turning into various shapes.

These seals were sometimes like a flying eagle, while at other times, they were like galloping desolate beasts.

When Shentu Jun and Lin Yue's runic seals came close to one another, they would clash and burst into sparks.

"Peng Peng Peng!"

Many of the runic seals turned to smithereens after clashing with one another.

There was a number of ways for Desolate Heaven Masters to compete. It was not just simply seeing who could refine a higher quality desolate bone relic. For example, runic seal collisions determined whose runic seals were stronger, and that were determined by having better energy control and the use of higher-grade desolate bones.

Shentu Jun and Lin Yue's runic seals clashed with one another as neither of them let up, trying every trick they had.

More and more runic seals turned to dust as Shentu Jun and Lin Yue's faces were covered in cold sweat. Clearly, such a match greatly depleted their mental strength. Every annihilation of a

runic seal was a hit to their soul.

It was understandable what sustained collisions would do to their mental strength.

Crackle!

Their runic seals bloomed like fireworks in the air and after about 30 seconds, a loud boom was heard as all the runic seals in the air exploded. Lin Yue took a few steps back and with his legs going weak, he fell to the ground.

Currently, his face was pale and he was covered in sweat. He clearly could not carry on any further.

As for Shentu Jun, he was no better than Lin Yue. He too was at his limit, but he had struggled with his final breath to not fall to the ground. This made it seem like he was more composed than Lin Yue.

"Haha, Junior brother Lin's energy control is not bad, you nearly exploded all my runic seals."

Although Shentu Jun was covered in sweat, he was smiling very proudly. He spread his hands and people could see that he still held two runic seals in them. Although these two runic seals were lacking in luster, and they were about to collapse at any moment, this still meant that Shentu Jun was slightly better than Lin Yue.

"Interesting!"

Outside the square, several Desolate Heaven Master apprentices shouted. These people were from the Shentu family clan or from the Shentu family clan's alliance.

As for the people from the Lin family, the upper echelon did not think much about it as it was just a competition between the juniors to see who could outshine the other. However, the Desolate Heaven Master apprentices from the younger generation of the Lin family were all holding back their anger. Seeing the runic seals in Shentu Jun's hands and his smug look, they felt even more indignant.

"Junior brother Lin Yue, such a pity!"

"Right, just missed by a bit!"

The juniors all pitied him. The performance of a Desolate Heaven Master apprentice was not stable. The degree to which Lin Yue and Shentu Jun competed meant that they were similar in strength. Sometimes, just a bit of luck was enough to decide the winner.

"Let me win it back." A youth named Lin Jun said and jumped onto the square.

"I am Lin Jun, the Lin family's Heaven Master Fusheng's direct disciple. I am sixteen years old! Is there any hero from the Shentu family clan who wishes to join me in performing on stage

together?"

Every young hero who jumped on stage would announce their name, age, and their master.

The people who had come on stage were all direct disciples. Although direct disciples were slightly lower in status than personal disciples, they were not that bad.

Shentu Jun had left since he was too drained, so naturally, he could not stay in the square.

Facing Lin Jun was another disciple from the outer circles of the Shentu family clan.

Lin Jun indeed had the capital for he won the duel. Furthermore, Lin Jun won beautifully, he was not like Shentu Jun, who barely beat Lin Yue. After winning, Lin Jun still had some strength left. This allowed the younger generation of the Lin family gain back some dignity.

Actually, the young generation of the Lin family knew that the Shentu family clan's heritage in the Desolate Heaven technique was deeper than theirs; however, in a competition amongst the younger disciples, they actually might not lose.

"The Lin family's young generation sure is filled with crouching tigers and hidden dragons. This Lin Jun is not bad indeed." In the seats of honor, Shentu Nantian smiled saying that. His tone was

that of an elder giving pointers to a junior, "This way of competition is too slow. Why don't we have a group battle?"

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he snapped his fingers. The Shentu family clan had already prepared a total of 32 young disciples aged from 13 to 18 years old people clan. They stepped forward and walked towards the square.

The 32 Desolate Heaven Master apprentices were all wearing a Shentu family clan uniform. They stood in a row on the square and gave a considerable visual impact.

"This..."

Seeing the Shentu family clan suddenly pull out so many young heroes, the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Masters suddenly felt at a loss.

With 32 people competing against one another, they would do it one on one, so 32 people from the Lin family were needed.

Many Desolate Heaven Masters immediately gave their orders to get their disciples to choose suitable people to compete with the Shentu family clan.

These 32 people were clearly not the elite of the Shentu family clan, and they were just relatively normal in strength.

If they sent an elite up, winning this group battle would not be a

problem; however, the Shentu family clan still had many experts that had not gone up, so this would result in their utter defeat.

In the Evening Breeze Pavilion that Yi Yun was at, Lin Yuan received a voice transmission from the middle-aged man surnamed Sun to take part in this group battle.

"These fellows aren't anything special. We do not need to send disciples with outstanding strength. We just need to send a few normal disciples who match their ages." Lin Yuan stood up and said in the Evening Breeze Pavilion.

After a group battle, a lot of mental strength would be depleted, so it would naturally affect the future competitions, so the real experts could not be sent out.

"Senior brother, do I need to go?" Little Lin Qing asked in both an excited but nervous manner.

Lin Yuan glanced at Lin Qing. Although Lin Qing's Desolate Heaven technique was not up to standard, she was still not bad compared to her age bracket as she was still young. After all, she was his junior sister and also, a personal disciple of their master. So to send her to compete in the chaotic group battle would be wasting talent on a trivial task.

"There's no need. You and I do not need to go on stage as it would be a waste of talent. Wait till a 13-year-old genius girl from the Shentu family clan comes on stage, then you can go up. Now, we just need to send some people who are relatively alright."

Lin Yuan looked at the people in the Evening Breeze Pavilion and weighed their strength before comparing their ages.

"You, you and you." Lin Yuan pointed a few people out as his gaze landed upon Yi Yun.

From the beginning of the tea session, the other Desolate Heaven Master apprentices of the younger generation would comment as they watched and as they compared with their own techniques while learning the merits of others.

However, Yi Yun was just sitting quietly in his seat. He did not say a word and it was not known if he knew anything.

Even with the group battle about to begin, he did not produce a single reaction.

Lin Yuan knew Yi Yun was Su Jie's in-name disciple. Although in-name disciples were considered to be at the rank of a medicine boy, it was after all Su Jie, so Yi Yun could probably make the standard.

"I intend to choose four people. Since the numbers are lacking, why don't you go up and fill the numbers?" Lin Yuan said to Yi Yun, thinking that this was an opportunity for Yi Yun to go on stage. One had to know that at Desolate Heaven technique tea sessions, most young disciples never had a chance to go on stage to compete.

With Yi Yun's strength, he may not get a chance to go on stage. And for the chaotic group match, even if his abilities were lacking, he would not lose too badly on stage, neither would it be too obvious. This was the best chance for the weak to go on stage.

"Junior Brother Yun, you seem to know some Mystic Crystal Hand sealing techniques. Although your completion progress is just lacking a bit, it will do. For this group match, just use your Mystic Crystal Hand. You just need to defend without going on the offensive."

Lin Yuan gave some pointers to Yi Yun on the battle strategy. Two months ago, when Yi Yun first reached the Lin family, he had learned the Mystic Crystal Hand and Small Thousand Seal from Su Jie. He had obtained a perfect completion of slightly more than 50 runic seals during his first try at the Mystic Crystal Hand.

As a Desolate Heaven technique apprentice who had just come into contact with the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months, Yi Yun's result could be said to be a miracle amongst miracles.

However, no one believed that Yi Yun was a rookie who had just learned the Desolate Heaven technique for a few months. Everyone believed that Yi Yun was just bragging. This weirdo and the strange matter revolving him were only used in trivial conversations and usually, as a topic of ridicule. This was the repulsiveness most people had as mocking others tended to make one feel good.

However, no one cared about this matter after a few days. After all, a joke could only be used a few times. It would lose its flavor after being heard too many times.

Later on, Yi Yun went into reclusive training and it was as if he had disappeared all of a sudden, no one paid any attention to this in-name disciple Su Jie took in on a whim.

"This kid sure has good luck. Usually, a technique like the Mystic Crystal Hand is not something one would showcase. However, it would not be too eye-catching in a chaotic group match."

The other younger disciples silently agreed with Lin Yuan's assignment. To be able to showcase themselves on stage in front of so many masters in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session was a valuable experience. Many people wished they had such an opportunity.

However, no one expected that for this matter, Yi Yun actually casually shook his head and said nonchalantly, "You should find someone else, I don't have much interest..."

Chapter 391: Five Elemental Bone Array

What? No interest?

Lin Yuan nearly thought he had heard wrongly.

The purpose of the Desolate Heaven technique tea session was to showcase the skills of each family clan in the Desolate Heaven technique, and it was a stage for the young heroes to perform on.

If one excelled in one's performance, not only would it bring fame, one would also gain the attention of the upper echelons of the family clan. Then, one would be able to enjoy even more resources and have a prosperous future.

It was an opportunity many wished that they could experience, where they could display their skills. Yet, when Lin Yuan purposely prepared such an opportunity for Yi Yun, his reply was that he was not interested?

"Brother Yuan, ignore the kid. Since he does not dare to go, why not let me?"

A child of the Lin family laughed as he volunteered himself.

Lin Yuan nodded as he guessed that Yi Yun was lacking confidence and thought that he would shame himself if he went up. This really made Lin Yuan speechless. Back when Yi Yun was learning the Mystic Crystal Hand, he had acted with great

pretense, but now, when push came to shove, he shrunk back. Such a person was someone everyone looked down upon.

"Alright then, you are up!"

Lin Yuan nodded towards the Lin family child who had volunteered himself. As such, four people jumped into the square from the Evening Breeze Pavilion.

The other pavilions also put together 28 people. As such, the Lin family also sent up 32 people.

With 32 against 32, the big chaotic battle kicked off.

The duels in the Desolate Heaven technique caused the scene to look extremely beautiful. Just two people competing in the Desolate Heaven technique would create a sight as beautiful as fireworks due to the flying runic seals exploding in the air.

Now, with 64 people bedazzling the square, various colors illuminated the sky, making it more beautiful than the morning glow of the sun's rise in the East.

A lot of people in the surrounding seats, who were seeing a group Desolate Heaven technique battle for the first time, began sending out repeated praises.

At that moment, behind Shentu Nantian, a youth's lips began suffusing a teasing smile.

This youth was one of the three that followed Shentu Nantian to the seats of honor. His name was Song Ziyue, born from the Song family who had an alliance with the Shentu family clan. To be able to enter the seats of honor with Shentu Nantian clearly meant that his ability in the Desolate Heaven technique was good.

A while later, an outcome in the battle between the 64 people slowly emerged on the square.

In this large battle, runic seals exploded even more violently. The impact on one's mental strength was thus even greater. Those who were weaker would immediately be eliminated.

One disciple after another succumbed with pale faces, leaving fewer and fewer people left standing in the square.

Slowly the runic seals flying in the air became sparse, the light beams also slowly faded. The final result of this battle was a bit unexpected. In the end, there were two Lin family disciples still standing in the middle of the square. Although they did not have many runic seals left in their hands, they still won.

The young generation of the Lin family felt their spirits rise seeing such an outcome.

The Lin family won by a narrow margin!

"Well done!"

"Interesting!"

Even though the Shentu family clan's heritage in the Desolate Heaven technique was said to be stronger, the Lin family had now taken two battles out of three, this made winning this match even more valuable.

While seeing the youths from the Lin family cheer below the stage from the seats of honor, Song Ziyue calmly said, "Young Master Nantian, it is almost time. Now with us losing two rounds, we have shown our pleasantries. Let me end this pointless razzle dazzle."

The Shentu family clan had come prepared for this Desolate Heaven technique tea session. Not only were there people from the Shentu family clan, allies of the Shentu family clan had come as well. It could be said that there were also all sorts of heroes present. Besides, to refine the peerless Great Empress' ancient recipe, the Shentu family clan still had many hidden techniques. If they showcased these hidden techniques, then it would shock everyone. Under these circumstances, the Shentu family clan would no doubt shine in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. And there was a 80-90% chance that they would get the matter of marriage settled by using this tea session.

Since the outcome was destined, Shentu Nantian did not mind letting the Lin family enjoy winning a bit, letting them think that their family clan's Desolate Heaven technique was comparable to the Shentu family clan's.

The benefit of doing so was that on the surface, the Shentu family clan had hunkered down and had purposely left the Lin family with some face.

Shentu Nantian stroke his chin and finally nodded slowly. "Yes."

Song Ziyue smiled and leaped onto the square like a floating cloud.

He was dressed in purple and stood straight in the middle of the square, "I am Song Ziyue, 16 years old this year. I am a child of the Song family, I am also the closed door disciple of the Shentu family clan's Thousand Hand Granny!"

As Song Ziyue spoke, people subconsciously looked towards the seats of honor. At the seats of honor, there was a silver-haired old woman holding a dragon headed cane. She was the elder sister of the Shentu family clan's current family head. She was the leader in matters regarding the Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique and was known as the Thousand Hand Granny.

For this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, the Thousand Hand Granny had taken on a low profile. This was to allow Shentu Nantian to perform. However, even though this granny did not speak much, the Lin family's Desolate Heaven Masters, including Su Jie, were all wary of this old granny.

"This fellow is the Thousand Hand Granny's closed door disciple?"

When people heard this, they were taken aback. The Song family had always been friendly with the Shentu family clan. They were considered the younger brother of the Shentu family clan. When children of the Song family proved their talent in the Desolate Heaven technique, they would be taken in as disciples by Desolate Heaven Masters from the Shentu family clan.

And this Song Ziyue had gained the favor of the Thousand Hand Granny.

The so-called, "closed door disciple" meant that he was the last disciple of the Thousand Hand Granny. After taking in Song Ziyue, the Thousand Hand Granny would never again take in another disciple. Hence, Song Ziyue was the youngest disciple of the Thousand Hand Granny.

In the tradition of martial arts, there was a special significance to closed door disciples. In fact, it was no different than being the top personal disciple.

"Everyone!" Song Ziyue cupped his fists in the middle of the square as he made the gesture to the surrounding audience, "The Lin family's standard in the Desolate Heaven technique is indeed not bad, but compared to the Shentu family clan..."

Song Ziyue smiled and did not go on. However, his meaning was already very clear. Many people from the Lin family frowned upon hearing this as they did not find the words pleasant.

Who did he think he is? He's just a 16 year old kid, how could he

have the right to give a review of the Lin family's Desolate Heaven technique?

Song Ziyue carried on, "The Shentu family clan has always been famous for their Desolate Heaven technique. And for this generation, it has attained an even higher peak. It just may be that some outsiders do not know so... Actually everyone knows that this Desolate Heaven technique tea session was held to showcase the Shentu family clan's abilities. I, Song Ziyue am a very direct person. Since it is to showcase one's ability, then I only have one sentence to say, I will beat down others until they are convinced!"

"Actually, this marriage proposal from the Shentu family clan is a great opportunity for the Lin family. Once it becomes a reality, the Lin family will gain a peerless Great Empress and will gain unmatched benefits, however... it is unexpected that the matter has not proceeded smoothly. It has been dragged for two years, and till now, it seems like the Shentu family clan is pleading the Lin family. We have lowered our stance, yet the Lin family still looks at us with animosity. Even our Desolate Heaven technique is being questioned."

"Since you have your doubts, I shall still use that same sentence, beat down others until they are convinced! I shall stand here, so feel free to challenge me!"

After Song Ziyue finished saying these words, the words resounded throughout the square. People raged upon hearing it. This kid had not even grown out his hair, yet he is already this arrogant?

One had to know that one's mental strength was greatly expended in Desolate Heaven technique battles, so one could not battle against people one after another!

In a martial arts showdown, some people could win 4-5 matches due to their endurance, but in a Desolate Heaven technique showdown, just fighting two matches was already very difficult.

What gave Song Ziyue the right to say this?

"He is just someone from the Song family and his master is the Shentu family clan's Thousand Hand Granny. He is just a junior. How dare he speak those words with his status? Can he represent the Shentu family clan?"

Someone from the Lin family said with disdain, but someone beside him said, "Actually, he can. It is precisely because he is not from the Shentu family clan that he does not need to mince his words as he is both an outsider and a junior. What he is saying now is what the Shentu family clan is thinking. The upper echelons of the Shentu family clan are just using his mouth to say it..."

Many of them knew that the Shentu family clan was not satisfied with the current situation. The Shentu family clan wished that the Lin family would make their decision shortly.

"This kid is too arrogant!"

In the Evening Breeze Pavilion, Lin Yuan was the first person

who could not take this sitting down. Song Ziyue was sixteen years old, the same as as him, so he could go up to do battle!

As if feeling Lin Yuan's gaze, Song Ziyue turned around and looked towards him with a smile. Song Ziyue's expression was calm and amiable, but his lips moved slightly as a voice transmission rang in Lin Yuan's ears.

"Come on up, trash."

What?

Hearing this, Lin Yuan felt anger consume his heart. Song Ziyue seemed to be perfectly alright on the surface, but the words he transmitted were insulting.

Lin Yuan's face sank as he jumped up onto the square.

"The Lin family's Sun Wanhai's personal disciple, Lin Yuan. 16 years old, let me see what abilities you have!"

The Lin family's disciples found Song Ziyue too domineering. Was he really thinking of challenging all of them alone?

There was no way for a tag team battle in a Desolate Heaven technique showdown, so where did Song Ziyue's confidence come from?

Song Ziyue gently smiled as he wiped his interspatial ring and took out a square disk array and a bunch of desolate beast bones.

These bones were divided into five different colors, golden, green, blue, red and dark yellow.

The five bone types exuded thick Power of Desolates.

"Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth. The powers of the five elements!"

Everyone present were experts so they could clearly feel that the Power of Desolates within these five types of desolate bones were the powers of the five elements.

Song Ziyue reached out his hands as the desolate bones flew in all directions, landing around Song Ziyue, with the disk array in the center. The desolate bones were arranged in a specific order, as if they were now a whole.

"This is my Five Elemental Bone Array. All of them are made by me. If you can extract more than 30% of the Power of Desolates from this bone array, then I will lose!"

The first step of the three steps of the Desolate Heaven technique was the extraction of the Power of Desolates from desolate bones.

Song Ziyue had used these desolate bones to form an array, but these desolate bones were still Desolate Heaven technique

materials. Extracting energy from it was equivalent to cracking the array!

Chapter 392: Desolate Bone Trap

Song Ziyue had already said that the Five Elemental Bone Array was designed by him. Logically, the person setting up an array holds the advantage, while the person trying to crack it has the disadvantage.

In a typical showdown, one side would set up an array while the other would try to crack it. If one could completely crack it, it meant that the person cracking it exceeded the person who set it up.

Song Ziyue did not take advantage of Lin Yuan in this aspect. He was proud and thought lowly of Lin Yuan. He had proclaimed that if Lin Yuan could extract more than 30% of the Power of Desolates from the array, then Lin Yuan would win.

30% of the Power of Desolates was considered very low.

Being looked down upon by Song Ziyue, Lin Yuan suppressed the raging flame in his heart, "Such shameless boasting. See how I break down your bone array!"

If a layman were to look at Song Ziyue's bone array, that person would not be able to see anything special about it. It was just like a child taking a bunch of beast bones and casually stacking them together.

However, when Lin Yuan entered the bone array, his expression turned serious. He could see that the desolate bones had been

processed through some special techniques.

Desolate bones with the five elements, Metal, Wood, Water, Fire, Earth corresponded to five elemental desolate beasts, and not any ordinary desolate beasts.

For example, the desolate bone in front of Lin Yuan was a general-ranked desolate beast's bone.

Lin Yuan could not tell what sort of desolate beast it came from. The bone looked very special as it was entirely smooth and round, like a glass bead.

"Song Ziyue may be arrogant, but he indeed has the ability. The array he set up is made from the combination of the bones from elite-ranked desolate beasts and general-ranked desolate beasts. The inner circle, where the array's core is, there are even bones from king-ranked desolate beasts. To crack this array, the first thing needed is to find the array's cores."

In the surrounding pavilions, people began to discuss. They never expected that this was how the Desolate Heaven technique showdown would be for the matches from Song Ziyue onwards.

However, this method required more technical skills than the clashing of runic seals. Also, it allowed one to keep on battling.

There might be consecutive failures of people trying to crack Song Ziyue's array. This was what he relied on to challenge all of

the young heroes of the Lin family in a tag-team battle.

"This bone should be the central point of the ten plus desolate bones nearby. It is also one of the cores of this array."

Lin Yuan had previously counted that this desolate bone array counted a total of 108 bones. There were 9 bones for the array core, and every 12 bones formed a group. Each group had a central bone and this central bone was where one of the array's core was.

If he could break apart this core bone, then this small array group would be broken.

Previously, Song Ziyue said that as long he broke 30% of the array, then Lin Yuan would win.

Although Lin Yuan was indignant with Song Ziyue's contemptuous words, he slowly held back his pride as he began examining the Five Elemental Bone Array. This array was not simple!

Regardless, winning was most important. If he could not even break 30% of the bone array, it would be too embarrassing.

"I only need to extract the Power of Desolates of 4 desolate bones and break apart 4 small group arrays to win."

With this thought in mind, Lin Yuan injected all of his mental energy into the smooth glass bead-like bone. This bone emitted a

searing feeling and was probably a fire-elemental desolate beast's bone.

When Lin Yuan sank his perception into it, for some unknown reason, he suddenly felt faint. It was as if his perception had been absorbed into the desolate bone, entering a world that was filled with fire.

"Oh? This is!?"

Lin Yuan was alarmed. He immediately pulled back his perception and exited his consciousness, but at that moment, the round fiery glass-like desolate bone cracked!

"Boom!"

With a fiery explosion, a fire python, which was entirely red in color, appeared from the desolate bone. This fire python opened its jaws and bit at Lin Yuan.

"Ah!"

Lin Yuan let out a scream. Although it happened suddenly, and his soul had suffered a backlash, making his head hurt, Lin Yuan was still able to use all of his strength to send out a punch when the fire python threatened his life.

"Peng!"

With an energy explosion, the fire python was destroyed by Lin Yuan, but at the same time, the arm Lin Yuan had used to send out the punch dislocated due to the forceful clash with the fire python. His entire fist was now covered in blood!

Lin Yuan's body was also sent flying by the energy surge as he landed heavily on the square.

His face was pale while his body suffered from some spasms. Clearly, he was injured.

Actually, the injury on his arm was nothing. The most important thing was the damage to his soul. When he had used his mental energy to probe the desolate bone, he had suffered a backlash from the desolate bone, causing his soul to be injured.

Such an injury needed to be treated by an extremely good Soul Nurturing pill. He could not use his mental energy for at least half a month.

"What happened? What happened back there?"

Some of the Lin family's juniors were puzzled. A glass-like desolate bone suddenly shattered, popping out a fire python that injured Lin Yuan.

"It is an Essence Qi shadow left behind when a desolate beast dies!"

An old man from the Lin family said. He was extremely surprised that the junior named Song Ziyue had managed to master such a technique.

"That glass-like desolate bone is actually from a general-ranked desolate beast, it's the Flaming Fire Python's 'brain stone' in its head. Song Ziyue managed to seal the Flaming Fire Python's Essence Qi into the brain stone when it was killed. Following that, he used the brain stone as one of the group array cores of the Five Elemental Bone Array!"

"The remaining Flaming Fire Python's Essence Qi inside the brain stone contained the resentment of being killed, so once it was initiated, it would break the brain stone and change into a Fire Python shadow that could kill. If the reaction of the person who probed it was any slower, he would have died on the spot."

Although many Desolate Heaven Masters were not good at fighting, they were proficient at certain killing techniques, such as setting traps in desolate bone relics.

This was how one could use the Desolate Heaven technique to kill.

With a trap set inside a desolate bone, even if the person trying to break the array knew that there was a trap, it would not be easily cracked. This was because to crack the array, one had to sink one's mental energy into the desolate bone, and once that happened, it would trigger the trap, causing the desolate beast's essence Qi to

form a backlash to one's mental energy. The result after that was quite obvious.

This could only be avoided if one's Desolate Heaven technique was superb, to the point where one could undo the trap Song Ziyue had laid at the moment one's mental energy sank into the desolate bone. And Lin Yuan clearly did not have this ability.

Lin Yuan retreated back to the Evening Breeze Pavilion with his face pale. After consuming a Soul Nurturing pill, and readjusting his dislocated arm, he barely managed to regain some Yuan Qi.

"I was careless. Too careless. I accidentally fell into this fellow's trap. If I knew that there was a trap in the desolate bone, I would definitely not have turned out this way."

Lin Yuan, who returned to the Evening Breeze Pavilion, felt embarrassed facing his juniors. He had directed the battle previously and arranged the order in which people went up, making him seem like the leader of the Evening Breeze Pavilion.

However, the moment he went up he fell into a trap just as he attempted to extract the first desolate bone's energy. Thus he lost, even though Song Ziyue had said that just extracting 30% would give him victory.

He had not even managed to extract a single bit of energy. Having completely failed, it was too embarrassing!

"This kid first mentioned the 30% of energy to divert my attention, making me miss the possibility of there being a trap in the desolate bone. He is too cunning!"

As Lin Yuan gave some thought to it, he began to spout some unconvincing excuses. Not far away, Yi Yun shook his head gently when he heard him. In a showdown between Desolate Heaven Masters, it was all about using one's ability to create all sorts of obstacles for one's opponents. Setting a trap within a desolate bone was a very common practice.

Back when he first came into contact with the Desolate Heaven technique and was extracting the Lin Bone Gall, Luo Huo'er, who was unhappy with him, had set a trap in the Lin Bone Gall. She had hoped that he would cause it to explode when he injected his mental energy into it, drenching him in bile.

However, Yi Yun had seen through it, causing Luo Huo'er to succumb to the trap herself.

Of course, compared to Luo Huo'er's trap, that was just a mischievous prank, Song Ziyue's method of using a desolate beast's essence Qi was more lethal. It could kill.

"Anyone else?" Song Ziyue said on stage. He took out another piece of bone from his interspatial ring, placing it down in the spot where the Flaming Fire Python's desolate bone had been. This bone was not a fire-elemental desolate bone, but a water-elemental one.

This surprised people. Every time Song Ziyue set up the Five Elemental Bone Array, the arrangement of the desolate bones was different.

Such an ever-changing array was most troublesome as it would be much more difficult to figure out the rules.

"As long as you a Desolate Heaven technique apprentice below the age of 18, feel free to challenge my Five Elemental Bone Array! If you can break 30% of it, you win!"

Song Ziyue was extremely confident. His provocation made many disciples of the Lin family angry. Song Ziyue was only 16 years old, yet he proclaimed that any Desolate Heaven technique apprentice below the age of 18 could challenge him.

However, though people were indignant about it, they knew that it was certain that the array set up by Song Ziyue was extremely hard to deal with. Lin Yuan, who was the personal disciple of the middle-aged man surnamed Sun, was quite outstanding in terms of his Desolate Heaven technique in the Lin family. Unfortunately, he did not manage to extract even a single bit of energy from the Five Elemental Bone Array. He lost instantly.

Lin Yuan said that he had been careless and fell for the trap, but everyone knew that Song Ziyue had set up an extremely profound, hidden trap. This caused Lin Yuan to be unable to discover it, if not, he wouldn't have lost so miserably.

Under these circumstances, even if someone had told Lin Yuan

that there was a trap in the bone, he would probably still have been unable to do anything about it.

Yi Yun looked at Song Ziyue and furrowed his eyebrows. His goal in participating in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session was very clear. He was here to mess things up!

Previously, when Lin Yuan attempted to send Yi Yun up to participate in the 64 people group match, Yi Yun lacked interest. Those who participated in the group match were a bunch of nobodies. Yi Yun would only waste his mental energy by going up, it would be meaningless.

He would only go on stage at such a moment when a top Desolate Heaven Master apprentice from the opposite side appeared. Only then was it time for Yi Yun to make a move.

Yi Yun stood up and, without a word, walked along the Evening Breeze Pavilion's edge.

The youths in the Evening Breeze Pavilion were curious about Yi Yun's action, but at that moment, Yi Yun silently leaped up and, like a feather, moved towards the center of the square...

And at the same moment Yi Yun leaped, a young girl flew up into the air from another small pavilion in the central regions of the lake, towards the square at the lake's center.

Chapter 393: Yi Yun Makes His Move

Yi Yun's appearance was too sudden. Before the youths in the Evening Breeze Pavilion were able to react, Yi Yun had already disappeared. Lin Yuan only felt a gentle breeze blow past him.

The next second, Yi Yun, who was dressed in green, had already landed in the lake center's square. This scene alarmed many. What was he doing?

There was a conventional order of appearance for people in the Desolate Heaven technique tea session.

The tea session would begin with the juniors who were comparatively lacking. People like Shentu Jun and Lin Yue were such people, it could be seen from their status. When they went on stage, they would declare themselves as "direct disciples".

Direct disciples were one grade lower than personal disciples. Later on, people like Song Ziyue would appear, it would then be personal disciples or closed-door disciples.

After the juniors finished competing, then the showdown between the older generation, like Su Jie, would begin.

Yi Yun's status was barely enough to qualify him for the first few matches right at the beginning. However, he did not participate in the group match. Yet, now he had suddenly jumped into the lake center's square, which was an entirely unexpected turn of events.

"That rash fellow, what is he trying to do?"

Seeing Yi Yun suddenly appear, Lin Yuan and company were dumbfounded. Did Yi Yun want to challenge Song Ziyue's Five Elemental Bone Array?

At that moment, even the best personal disciples from the Lin family had to carefully weigh their options before going on stage. For example, no one from the Evening Breeze Pavilion dared to step forward. Hence, Yi Yun appearance onstage was extremely unexpected.

In the seats of honor, Su Jie was also in a daze. He had originally said that he would not let Yi Yun do anything. So now that Yi Yun suddenly jumped forward, he was completely caught off guard.

"Teacher. Yi Yun, he..." Lin Xintong knew very clearly that Yi Yun knew nothing back in the Desolate Human Valley two years ago. At that time, he had expressed an interest in learning the Desolate Heaven technique, but Lin Xintong had advised him against it. She did not want him to have any fantasies regarding the Desolate Heaven technique. Yi Yun however insisted, and because of that, she had reluctantly left Su Jie's notebook with him.

"I do not know. He probably knows himself well." Su Jie bitterly smiled, but on the inside, Su Jie did not have much confidence in Yi Yun.

Yi Yun was however not the only one from the Lin family who had flown onto the lake center's square. There was another young girl there as well, dressed in purple. Her hair was tied into a ponytail which hung down to her waist.

When Yi Yun stood up, this girl had also stood up at the same moment. As a result, both of them had jumped onto the central stage simultaneously.

"It is Lin Ziyang, Senior sister Lin!" Someone below the stage said. Unlike Yi Yun, Lin Ziyang was one of the best amongst the Lin family's younger generation. Her ability was on a completely different level from Lin Yuan's.

Lin Ziyang had been accompanying her master in training expeditions for the past few years. She had only returned to the Lin family in recent months. There was no doubt of her strength, or her Desolate Heaven technique ability.

"You are..."

The purple-dressed girl did not know Yi Yun. Her life goals were centered on martial arts and to make her Desolate Heaven technique proficient. She was not concerned with small matters that happened within the Lin family's younger generation circles. Thus, she had never heard of Yi Yun. Two months ago, the matter of Yi Yun learning the Mystic Crystal Hand and completing more than 50 runic seals was a trivial matter. It had only spread amongst the Lin family disciples who had gathered around Yi Yun, and they all treated it as a joke of a newbie pretending to show off. It had never reached Lin Ziyang's ears.

"I am Yun Yantian." Yi Yun answered simply.

"Yun Yantian?" The purple-dressed girl's smoky eyebrows furrowed while she thought. Clearly, she had never heard this name before. Typically, the disciples whom she had never heard of were clearly those of low abilities. Now with the Lin family competing against the Shentu family clan on the Desolate Heaven technique, it was a matter regarding the Lin family's reputation. If a Lin family's disciple with extremely poor ability went on stage, they would no doubt be made into a laughing stock by the other family clans.

"How old are you? Who is your master?"

To confirm Yi Yun's ability, the purple-dressed girl asked.

"I am fifteen, Su Jie's in-name disciple."

Hearing Yi Yun's words, the purple-dressed girl was dumbfounded. This person was only 15 years old and was just Su Jie's in-name disciple? What the heck?

"Hahaha! This is really interesting. An in-name disciple is actually challenging me?" Song Ziyue roared with laughter, "Your courage is deserving of praise. I am okay with it. Since both of you came up together, then break the array together! I don't mind!"

Song Ziyue had heard that Lin Ziyun had some ability, so he

would not be too careless with her. However, where did this Yun Yantian come from? It was as if he had come just to play the clown.

To let Lin Ziyan and this rash fellow break the array together, he actually had the additional intention of humiliating Lin Ziyan. A proud daughter of heaven and a rash fellow joining forces. Wasn't this mockery? After all, Song Ziyue had decided that it would be pretty impressive if this Yun Yantian did not end up making things worse by being up on stage.

Whatever Song Ziyue thought of, Lin Ziyan had also thought of. She did not want to do it together with Yun Yantian. It would end up with the bad label of going two against one, yet it would not really have the effect of two against one.

"Junior Brother Yun, why not go down first? After I break this array, you can come on up later regardless if I succeed or fail."

Lin Ziyan felt that she had said this very politely and had not questioned Yi Yun's abilities directly. She had given Yi Yun sufficient face.

However, Lin Ziyan never expected that, even though her intentions were so obvious, Yi Yun still paid no heed to her words. He minded himself and walked to the side of Song Ziyue's array and began analyzing the array technique.

The Five Elemental Bone Array was formed of a total of 12 smaller group arrays. Each small group array had a bone in it that held the array together at its core. This bone was not difficult to

find. Yi Yun had chosen one of those.

It was the desolate bone of a general-ranked desolate beast and looked like a spinal bone.

This bone emitted hot air and was clearly a fire-elemental desolate bone.

The fire element was similar to pure Yang. The fire element in the five elements was just normal fire, while the pure Yang was the solar fire of the stars.

Yi Yun, who practiced the pure Yang laws, had considerable knowledge in the fire elemental laws.

With his spiritual energy interfacing with the Purple Crystal, and using the Purple Crystal's powers, he sealed the Power of Desolates in the desolate bone.

The Purple Crystal was pretty much the supreme law when it came to controlling energy. With the Purple Crystal, regardless of what type of energy it was, it would be impossible for it to explode outwards.

At that moment, the desolate beast's essence Qi within the desolate bone was completely suppressed by the Purple Crystal. It was powerless at resisting it.

Actually, with Yi Yun's ability, he could have just used the Purple

Crystal's powers to violently extract the Power of Desolates and the essence Qi within the desolate bones at the same time. He could then use brute strength to forcefully refine them, regardless of array techniques or traps.

However, with so many people watching, if he had done all that with just his will power, it would be too shocking and there was no way for him to explain it.

Hence, Yi Yun decided to use the methods in the Desolate Heaven technique to make it seem like he was using the Desolate Heaven technique to break the trap and extract the Power of Desolates from the desolate bones.

Yi Yun opened up his energy vision and through it, the entire desolate bone turned transparent. Whatever Song Ziyue had done was clearly seen in Yi Yun's vision.

He could clearly see that there was a lizard-shaped desolate beast essence Qi locked within the core of the desolate bone.

And surrounding the essence Qi were runic seals. These runic seals were clearly set up by Song Ziyue. As long as Yi Yun injected his mental energy into it, the runic seals would detonate the desolate bone, causing the desolate beast essence Qi to explode outwards. It was like a clever igniting mechanism. What Yi Yun had to do now was to dismantle or seal off Song Ziyue's set up.

As long as he sent out a runic seal and broke Song Ziyue's igniting array, then Yi Yun would be able to dismantle the trap.

And with the Purple Crystal in hand, Yi Yun could perfectly control every runic seal he made. He could even destroy Song Ziyue's runic seal setup directly. It was extremely easy for him to do so.

Understanding this, Yi Yun began to form seals. Array patterns began appearing in Yi Yun's hands, but compared to the runic seal showdown from before, which were dazzling like fireworks, the runic seals Yi Yun sent out looked much more plain.

Seeing Yi Yun form runic seals, the surrounding people were dumbfounded. Seeing Yi Yun's motions and the runic seals he formed, wasn't he using the Mystic Crystal Hand?

Mystic Crystal Hand... Back when Yi Yun first reached the Lin family, in his first display and only display of his Desolate Heaven technique publicly, he had used the Mystic Crystal Hand.

Back then, people believed that Yi Yun had been in contact with the Desolate Heaven technique for a long period of time. Since he had learned the Desolate Heaven technique for so long, then it was impossible for him to have the Mystic Crystal Hand as his only sealing technique.

Back then, Yi Yun had said that he was a beginner, so using the Mystic Crystal Hand, which was a very common and simple technique, was considered normal. After all, this would make him 'appear' as a beginner.

However, now, at this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, in front of so many people, with the Lin family's reputation on the line, even if he could not break apart Song Ziyue's array he should not have used a one-size fits all technique like the Mystic Crystal Hand which lacked any technical skill.

The Desolate Heaven technique tea session stressed the need to captivate. The best was not needed, the hardest was. Using the Mystic Crystal Hand? Isn't this just going to make everyone laugh their heads off?

Seeing the scene happening before them, the Lin family's disciples felt their faces burn. They felt that Yi Yun was too thick-skinned. If it was them in Yi Yun's stead, standing in the square, they have long since wished to burrow into the ground to hide away.

As for the Shentu family clan's disciples, there were some who could not help but laugh. Song Ziyue gave an unashamed laugh, "Hahaha! When the Lin family organized this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, were they too worried about the atmosphere being too tense? Did they specially prepare an entertainment program? To let everyone laugh and ease the tense atmosphere?"

Song Ziyue mocked ruthlessly. This voice became even more piercing to the ear when it landed in the ears of the Lin family's disciples.

Many of the Lin family's Elders looked towards Su Jie.

Su Jie was now sweating furiously in his heart. He had specifically exhorted Yi Yun not to do anything rash at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. Su Jie knew that Yi Yun had a feud with Shentu Nantian, but he should not have been this rash, even with a feud!

Su Jie also knew that Yi Yun was very talented in learning the Desolate Heaven technique, and his talent could even rival Lin Xintong's. However, he had only learned it for such a short period of time. Besides, Song Ziyue was no ordinary person. Even when Lin Xintong had been learning the Desolate Heaven technique for one to two years, it was still impossible for her to break the Five Elemental Bone Array.

Under these circumstances, Su Jie was even considering to go with the flow and admit to what Song Ziyue said, to say that Yi Yun was there to enliven the atmosphere...

"Ziyan, quickly make a move. Break as much of the Five Elemental Bone Array as you can. You need to regain some of the Lin family's face. If that kid carries on messing about, there will be no way to redeem the situation!"

Chapter 394: Guanyin Flower Picking Hand

At the moment Yi Yun began cracking the array, a Yuan Qi voice transmission sounded out in Lin Ziyun's ear. It came from her master, a female elder of the Lin family.

"Yes, Master."

Lin Ziyun was not feeling pleased with the situation either. Originally, it had almost turned into a situation where no one from the Lin family showed up to crack the array. It would have been something that was greatly fulfilling, but with Yi Yun haphazard actions, the situation was now in a mess.

She glanced over at Yi Yun with resentment. One needed to have a mind as still as water when cracking an array. Now, Lin Ziyun felt that the state of her mind was in some turmoil. She took a few deep breaths to calm her mind.

Song Ziyue's array was not easy to crack. She needed to give it her all and be serious about it.

Lin Ziyun made her move. Both of her hands formed a lotus shape in front of her chest. Her palms were facing each other and with that, a rainbow light stream started twirling around her fingers. These streams of rainbow light condensed together into a rainbow in the air which then circled around Lin Ziyun. It made her suddenly appear like a goddess who had entered the human realm from heaven.

Lin Ziyang's fingers moved in unison and began moving faster and faster as it formed a series of shadows. Suddenly, beautiful lights flashed and golden lotuses filled the air as if the Heavens had landed in an auspicious manner. It was as if immortal plants were taking root in mid-air, blooming into a colorful lotus.

Lin Ziyang's sealing technique was so gorgeous that it made people gasp!

Beautiful sealing techniques did not necessarily mean that the technique was brilliant, but it meant a more complex energy control, and even greater energy intensity.

If one sealing technique set contained both complex and powerful aspects, then it could definitely not be a bad one.

Besides, for those at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, a dazzling technique that was both complex and spectacular was expected.

"It is the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand!"

In the surrounding square, people let out amazed gasps.

The Guanyin Flower Picking Hand came from a Buddhist sect, the Daming Temple. The Daming Temple existed long ago. It was the world's biggest Buddhist sect and had four Great Monks, 18 Emperor Arhats, a million Buddhist sect disciples and a trillion believers.

However, affairs of the world are ephemeral. The Daming Temple eventually fractured and after it was besieged by a few large family clans, a lot of its heritage was either destroyed or lost across the world. The Guanyin Flower Picking Hand was one of those.

The legendary bodhisattva, Guanyin, had a thousand hands. What sort of feeling was it when a thousand hands picked flowers?

Hence, this name of Guanyin Flower Picking Hand described people who used such a technique. Their hands moved so rapidly that they appeared as a blur to people, just like a Thousand-hand Guanyin.

At the same time, the lighting effect generated from this technique was like a thousand flowers blooming at the same time. It was extremely beautiful.

The Guanyin Flower Picking Hand was extremely difficult to learn. Furthermore, the seals were complex. Just a tiny mistake would cause all the of seals to collapse and disintegrate.

Typically, at Desolate Heaven technique tea sessions, where bedazzling techniques were the norm, it was still very rare to see the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand used by juniors. Now, with the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand's appearance, it, of course, made the disciples of the Lin family very excited.

"Senior sister Ziyan is so awesome. She has been out training for

many years and has actually managed to master such a technique!"

"It is marvelous. Senior Sister Ziyan should be able to break Song Ziyue's array. Once the array is cracked, we shall see how Song Ziyue can carry on flaunting himself."

The disciples of the Lin family found it a relief. Previously when Song Ziyue was being extremely arrogant, they had suppressed their fiery anger in their hearts.

Against Lin Ziyan's Guanyin Flower Picking Hand, Song Ziyue's expression turned solemn. Although he was confident in the traps he had set, Lin Ziyan was no normal person. Before Song Ziyue participated in this tea session, he had gained some understanding of the Lin family's younger generation. Lin Ziyan was one of the opponents whom he had paid close attention to.

Three years ago, before Lin Ziyan went out on a training expedition, she was already famous. Now, returning after three years, it was very difficult to tell how powerful she was!

"Dear nephew Nantian, what do you think of our Lin family's disciple's technique?" Lin Xintong's grandaunt said proudly beside Shentu Nantian. Lin Ziyan was one of her direct descendants, so she had always been proud of Lin Ziyan.

However, when Lin Ziyan was young, she had not been able to reveal much of her talent. Back then, she did not enjoy a lot of resources and was even worse off than Lin Xintong. This made the woman in palatial attire very unfriendly towards a young Lin

Xintong.

"Very good! The Lin family has geniuses in every generation. It will only prosper with each day!"

Shentu Nantian went with the flow and praised Lin Ziyang.

The woman in the palatial gown was pleased as she glanced at Su Jie, "Elder Su, you sure did well by taking in this in-name disciple of yours. He is a rare stock that is almost impossible to get. At the Jade Bamboo peak, he spoke rashly without considering the age hierarchy. Now, at this tea session, in such a solemn scene, his brain went to mush and went on stage rashly. It really causes people to be dumbfounded! Thankfully Ziyang is here today, if not your disciple would have thrown the Lin family's face."

The woman in palatial attire mocked with a mean tone. She had never been on good terms with Su Jie. Back at the Jade Bamboo peak, she had already gone at odds against Yi Yun and was unhappy about it. Now, with this matter, Yi Yun had embarrassed the Lin family, while Ziyang had made the Lin family proud, so how could she not take the opportunity to flaunt?

As for offending Su Jie, she had already done so at the Jade Bamboo peak, so she did not care much.

Su Jie's expression sank. His character was originally of the proud sort, but now with the woman enumerating his faults in public, he became extremely pissed. However, since logic was against him, he had no right to retort.

"Hehe, the Lin family's disciples are so active. Elder Su's disciple should be praised for his courage!" Shentu Nantian said with a smile. He did not wish to offend Su Jie. After all, Su Jie was extremely important to Lin Xintong.

As for Yi Yun, Shentu Nantian completely ignored him. With his status, and in a situation where he was unable to recognize Yi Yun, he would not pay much attention to such a small fry.

"However... My Shentu family clan has even more heroes. Some of them might even exceed Grandaunt's expectations!"

Shentu Nantian turned towards the woman in palatial attire again. His words were full of confidence. He believed that the preparations the Shentu family clan had made would greatly surprise the Lin family. He was looking forward to that scene.

"Oh? Exceed my expectations?" The woman's interest was caught. "That would be interesting. Then let us see if Ziyang will also be able to surprise dear nephew Nantian!"

Against the woman's self-confidence, Shentu Nantian smiled without saying a word. He appeared inscrutable.

...

At that moment, on the square, as Lin Ziyang's forming of seals became even faster, layers of finger shadows began forming from

her ten fingers. Runes after runes flew out like young swallows and into Song Ziyue's array.

And in the center of the group where Lin Ziyuan was forming a seal was one of the wood-elemental desolate bones in Song Ziyue's array.

Actually, the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand leaned more towards the wood-elemental Yuan Qi energies. This piece of desolate bone was surrounded by Lin Ziyuan's runic seals. People could clearly see lotuses, immortal grass bloom above the desolate bone.

This scene made people more and more excited.

Chapter 395: Yi Yun Cracks The Array

"Guess how long it will take for Senior sister Ziyun to crack that small group array?"

Someone amongst the Lin family's disciples asked with excitement.

This was what it meant to be captivating. Previously, when those direct disciples had gone up and did battle using the crude method of colliding runic seals, that was completely without technique. Compared to Lin Ziyun and Song Ziyue's competition in the Desolate Heaven technique, it was like the difference between savage wrestling and beautiful dancing.

"About seven to eight minutes!"

To win against Song Ziyue, at least 4 small group arrays had to be cracked. Song Ziyue's array was extremely abstruse and complicated, so breaking a small group array in about 7-8 minutes was already considered very fast.

For this duel, it was a competition between top geniuses. Although the Lin family disciples adored Lin Ziyun, they had to admit that Song Ziyue had the ability to be arrogant. It would also not be easy for Lin Ziyun to win against Song Ziyue.

"About seven to eight minutes... Then Senior sister Ziyun will need about thirty minutes to win against Song Ziyue. Besides... Senior sister Ziyun might not stop after only breaking four small

group arrays. She might even break six, seven, or even all twelve small group arrays!"

Some of the younger Lin family disciples had infinite hopes in Lin Ziyang.

"Difficult!" An older Lin family disciple shook his head. "Guarding an array is easy while breaking an array is difficult. Junior sister Ziyang needs to be stronger than Song Ziyue by at least 30-50% to have any hope of doing so."

Before the older disciple finished speaking, he suddenly heard a light "Peng" sound.

He was stunned as he looked towards the sound. The source of the sound was Yun Yantian.

For cracking this array, Yi Yun stood opposite to Lin Ziyang with Song Ziyue in the middle. However when Lin Ziyang displayed her Guanyin Flower Picking Hand, other than people like the woman in palatial attire who had animosity against Yi Yun and Su Jie, no one else had paid attention to him.

In fact, Yi Yun's Mystic Crystal Hand had long since been obscured by the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand's light beams. It was impossible to tell what was happening.

And only with the exploding sound did people look towards Yi Yun. And the scene in front of them dumbfounded everyone.

In front of Yi Yun, the fire elemental desolate bone had already fractured. It had turned from its original dark red color and into a grayish white. Clearly, it looked as if its Power of Desolates had been drained.

Only when a desolate bone has had all of its Power of Desolates extracted will it become like this.

Following the desolate bone, that powered the array's core, losing its energy, the entire small group array lost its energy, as if it was about to collapse at anytime.

What... What is happening...?

Many people's brains did not react in time. They could not understand what the scene in front of them meant. Maybe they had actually thought of it, they just could not believe it.

And at that moment, Yi Yun nonchalantly grabbed a fiery red light from within the fractured desolate bone. It was the phantom image of a small lizard. It was the desolate beast essence Qi that was originally sealed within the desolate bone!

"Lava Fire Lizard! He grabbed a Lava Fire Lizard!"

Many people stared with their eyes wide. Even with a desolate bone placed there, many of the Desolate Heaven Masters would not be able to identify what desolate beast the bone came from.

However, now, with Yi Yun grabbing the essence Qi, they could easily recognize it.

This Lava Fire Lizard was a formidable desolate beast. It was tyrannous and its body contained a terrifying fire-elemental energy. If it released the energy, it would be a nightmare.

And at that moment, this Lava Fire Lizard's essence Qi, which was filled with resentment and tyranny, had been nonchalantly grabbed by Yi Yun, as if he was capturing any ordinary house lizard.

At that moment, Yi Yun nonchalantly formed a few runic seals on the Lava Fire Lizard's essence Qi. He then took out a box from his interspatial ring and stuffed the Lava Fire Lizard in as if he was storing food. He then closed the lid.

"Peng!"

When Yi Yun closed the lid, the small group array in front of Yi Yun completely exploded. The remaining desolate beast bones scattered as it completely fell apart.

Yi Yun had already cracked a small group array!

Wh... What?

Seeing this scene, people were stunned and had their mouths agape. Even if they could not believe it, they finally realized what

the scene in front of them meant. Yun Yantian had cracked one of the small array groups of the Five Elemental Bone Array!

Everyone present, be it the Lin family's disciples or the Shentu family clan's disciples, had their expressions frozen. Their bodies were stiff as if they were zombies with talismans pasted on them.

The entire tea session's venue was silent. It was as if they had seen a ghost.

Originally, people estimated that Lin Ziyan would use about 7-8 minutes to crack a small group array, but in about 30 seconds time, when Lin Ziyan's Guanyin Flower Picking Hand had made about a third of its progress, Yun Yantian had already cracked the first small group array on his side!

What was going on? People were still slow to react. This feeling was like a martial arts grandmaster and a second-grade figure in the trade challenging a top expert at the same time.

When the battle began, that martial arts grandmaster fought with the top expert beautifully by using all of their secret techniques. It made the scene appear fabulous, making jaws drop. However, victory was undetermined.

However, when it was the second grade figure going up on stage, he used a very ordinary kungfu technique against the top expert. Without a word, a nonchalant kick then caused the top expert to fall to the ground.

This must be a joke, right?

People truly found it unacceptable. Especially those in the seats of honor, Lin Xintong's grandaunt was completely dumbstruck. Her mouth was agape and her eyes staring straight ahead. She looked like a hen would do when it had its neck grabbed.

At that moment, she felt all of her blood surge to her face. Her old face had turned red like a cooked crab.

Yun Yantian, that country bumpkin who did not understand any rules, had actually broken one of Song Ziyue's group arrays before Ziyan?

She turned her head with difficulty to look at Su Jie. It was as if her joints had turned to rust and could not be moved.

She saw Su Jie with a completely dumbfounded expression too.

Su Jie was the person who knew Yi Yun the best amongst all of them. Others might think that Yi Yun had been learning the Desolate Heaven technique for a very long period of time, but Su Jie was very sure that Yi Yun had only been learning the Desolate Heaven technique for a very short period of time.

Two years ago, Yi Yun was still a mortal in every way. In these two years, he had gone from Mortal Blood to the Yuan Foundation in his martial arts. He had also cultivated all sorts of heritages. Under such a situation, how could he have time to learn the

Desolate Heaven technique?

How did he accomplish this in such a short period of time? It was too great an exaggeration.

Although he found it unbelievable deep down, but noticing the woman in palatial attire project her gaze on him, Su Jie's old face began to give a lewd and teasing smile. Who cares why Yi Yun's Desolate Heaven technique was so awesome, as long as he could let this disgusting old hag eat dirt, it alone would be a joyous feat.

"How is it? Is your face swollen? Keke, if I were you, I would quickly jump into the lake. If not, your old face will become as red as a monkey's bottom. If that happens, how are you to face others?"

Su Jie mimicked the tone the woman in palatial attire had used before and spoke in a queer manner. Now there was only one word in his mind, marvelous!

Chapter 396: Breaking One After Another

The woman in palatial attire felt as if her lungs were about to explode after she was put down by Su Jie, however, she had no way of retorting. She did not understand how Yi Yun was able to crack Song Ziyue's array.

"Dear nephew Nantian, what is going on? Were you not very confident in Song Ziyue just now? However, just now a random punk managed to crack the array!"

Originally, the woman wished to see a junior from the Lin family beat a junior from the Shentu family clan, but how could she not feel indignant about letting a fellow like Yi Yun, who came from some nook and cranny, put Lin Ziyuan to shame?

Shentu Nantian frowned as he too was baffled, "Grandaunt, do not worry. I believe that there should be some other reason. Let me ask Ziyue and confirm my suspicions."

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he transmitted his voice to Song Ziyue.

At that moment, Song Ziyue was standing in the center of the square, frozen like a wooden stave. The moment Yi Yun cracked his array, he felt as if his heart had been severely scratched.

"Ziyue, what is going on?"

Shentu Nantian's voice rang in Song Ziyue's ear.

Song Ziyue seemed to wake up from a dream and took a deep breath. He gave a deep stare in Yi Yun's direction and a vein bulged on his forehead, "This kid broke my array..."

"Is that not obvious!? I am asking you how he cracked it!" Shentu Nantian said in a discontented manner, "With such an obvious matter, do I need you to repeat that to me?"

Song Ziyue's expression sank as he thought for a moment before he spoke, "Logically, it is impossible for him to have used the Mystic Crystal Hand to dismantle the trap I designed in the desolate bone. However, although my array is complex, it is not without flaws. If you have heaven-defying luck, it is possible for you to crack it randomly."

Even the best lock could be opened by a bumbling locksmith. With a piece of wire, sometimes luck might allow someone to open the lock. Although it was highly improbable, it was not impossible.

Song Ziyue was convinced that the Mystic Crystal Hand's runic seals that Yi Yun used had resonated with his own runic seals, resulting in such an effect.

Shentu Nantian took a deep breath, "I was originally suspecting that this was the case. Are you sure?"

"I am sure!" Song Ziyue nodded as gazed at Yi Yun, his gaze now containing a trace of hatred, "There will not be a second time. The Five Elemental Bone Array definitely cannot be cracked by the

Mystic Crystal Hand."

Song Ziyue gnashed his teeth as he said that. He was very confident in his own array.

And at that moment, Yi Yun had already walked over to a second small group array.

In the middle of the small group array was an Earth-elemental bone. Earth-elemental energy was an energy type that Yi Yun had been in little contact with, but it did not prevent Yi Yun from cracking the array.

With the Purple Crystal's energy vision, all the traps were fully exposed in front of Yi Yun, with nowhere to hide. Furthermore, Yi Yun's control of energy was precise to the point that it far exceeded Su Jie's.

"Earth-elemental bone array..."

Yi Yun focused on the piece of bone. In his energy vision, he could see that the trap within the desolate bone was very different from the trap before.

The twelve small group arrays were all different in Song Ziyue's Five Elemental Bone Array. This increased the difficulty of cracking the array. A Desolate Heaven Master apprentice, whose ability was lacking, might crack one group array with great difficulty and expend a lot of mental energy. However, when he

then tried to crack a second group array, he would have to start all over again. As such, trying to break more than four small group arrays was naturally not an easy feat.

"You still want to crack it?" Song Ziyue stared coldly at Yi Yun, "I want to see how long your good luck can last."

Detecting Song Ziyue's gaze, which was filled with killing intent, Yi Yun raised his head and gave Song Ziyue a light glance. He was wearing a mask so it was expressionless. Only the two thin sanguine marks at where his eyes were looked indifferent.

Yi Yun ignored Song Ziyue and lowered his head as he carried on cracking the array without worries.

...

"Grandaunt, it was an accident just now." Shentu Nantian turned towards the woman in palatial attire and smiled. "I wonder if Grandaunt has heard of Heaven's stem and Earth's branches lock. The Heaven's stem is made up of ten stems and the Earth branches are made up of ten branches. Together with the Bagua, the five elements, there are tens of thousands of combinations. Only one of them is correct, only by pressing all of them correctly can one open the lock to Heaven's stem and Earth branches.

"A person, who does not know anything, might use a random combination of Heaven's stem and Earth branches and actually get it right. As such, the lock to Heaven's stem and Earth branches can be opened."

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he opened his fan and gently fanned himself with a look of confidence.

His confidence was not unjustified and was not because he was blindly convinced because of Song Ziyue's words. Shentu Nantian had made his own judgment and strongly believed that a one-size fits all technique, like the Mystic Crystal Hand, could not crack the Five Elemental Bone Array in the hands of a fifteen-year-old youth.

This point was sufficient to support Shentu Nantian's opinion.

In the seats of honor, there was no lack of Desolate Heaven Masters in the upper echelons of the Lin family. They also acknowledged Shentu Nantian's point. What he described really did exist.

"There might not be such a coincidence under the Heavens." Su Jie said coldly. He did not have that much confidence in Yi Yun, but seeing Yi Yun's accomplishments being put down by Shentu Nantian so quickly naturally did not make him feel good as Yi Yun's in-name master.

"Haha, Elder Su, I'm just expressing his opinion. It is a fact that Song Ziyue's Five Elemental Bone Array is not something the Mystic Crystal Hand can crack. Maybe in the hands of a Desolate Heaven Master, that is possible. In the hands of a junior, however, it is as hard as ascending the Heavens."

"Under this situation, this junior is just suggesting the most likely

reason and it is the most reasonable explanation... What say you, Junior sister Xintong?"

Shentu Nantian turned towards Lin Xintong. Lin Xintong had almost not spoken at all since she arrived. Shentu Nantian wanted to get to know Lin Xintong, so at random times, he would pull Lin Xintong into the topic of discussion.

"What you think may be reasonable might not be reasonable." Lin Xintong said coldly. As it was a gathering of the upper echelons of both the Lin family and the Shentu family clan, Lin Xintong could not be impolite. She had to answer Shentu Nantian whenever he talked to her, if not she would be criticized.

However, Lin Xintong's mind was not on Shentu Nantian when she spoke. She was still looking towards the center of the square and her gaze was locked onto Yi Yun's hands. She saw Yi Yun's every move very clearly.

As if in a trance, she seemed to return back to that night from two years ago. The words Yi Yun had said when he first saw Lin Xintong's hand seals in the Desolate Human Valley...

Thinking of the scenes of that night, Lin Xintong felt mixed emotions. She found it hard to believe in what Yi Yun had said, which was both stubborn and seemingly absurd in nature, yet it had been realized by him with his own hands today.

The technique he used, and all the runic seals the Mystic Crystal Hand formed, were extremely normal. It seemed to resemble the

ordinary linen clothes which Yi Yun wore two years ago, and at the same time seemed to be as simple as Yi Yun himself.

He had really become a Desolate Heaven Master at an unbelievable speed!

Who could believe that a small tribe youth, whom she had met in the Cloud Wilderness, who had set goals that would be laughable to normal people, such as pursuing martial arts and ambitioning to become a Desolate Heaven Master, would... actually, succeed!

It was as if Lin Xintong had witnessed a miracle that happened to Yi Yun with her own eyes.

This miracle had a special significance for Lin Xintong herself.

This was because Lin Xintong had naturally terminated meridians. If she could succeed in joining up her terminated meridians, then it in itself would be a miracle!

Completing something that was nearly impossible would be just like Yi Yun, achieving aspirations that ordinary people thought impossible.

Lin Xintong, of course, remembered the scene where she had revealed her determination to join up her terminated meridians when she was young, she had been ridiculed by her aunts and cousins.

The ridicule and sarcasm had once made a young Lin Xintong feel distressed and embarrassed. Now, however, it no longer did... She walked her own path and pursued her own dreams. Why should she care about what others felt?

Humans always needed to have dreams, if they did not, what difference would there be between humans and livestock?

Lin Xintong seemed to see herself in Yi Yun. The same effort, persistence and the equally distant and elusive dreams.

If Yi Yun could do it, how could she not?

Lin Xintong silently clenched her fists. Her slender jade-like fingers turned white from her clenching.

"I will walk out a path that belongs to me. I wish that you too can walk on a path that belongs to you..."

Lin Xintong said to herself silently. At that moment, Shentu Nantian was frowning slightly. He was sensitive and naturally noticed that when he spoke to her, Lin Xintong's attention was always on Yun Yantian and that she only gave him a perfunctory response.

When had Shentu Nantian, who was a very proud person, not be the center of attention ever since he was young? There were countless numbers of girls willing to be the ones throwing themselves at him, only in front of Lin Xintong did he have to

lower his status and be frustrated by her again and again.

For example, now, Lin Xintong would rather focus on a small fry instead of taking notice of what he was saying. This made Shentu Nantian feel hatred for Yun Yantian.

He took a deep breath and swallowed his anger. He still hung a breeze-like smile on his face, "Junior sister Xintong, actually there is nothing interesting for this match. It was one in a ten thousand chance coincidence that will not happen a second time."

"At this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, my Shentu family clan has made some special preparations that will definitely astound Junior sister Xintong. When that happens, it will not be too late for Junior sister Xintong to focus on it. As for this match, actually there is not much to see, it is all..."

Before Shentu Nantian could finish his words, he suddenly heard a "Peng" explosion behind him. This explosive sound seemed familiar to Shentu Nantian.

At that moment, he was still speaking to Lin Xintong, so he was unaware of what was happening in the square, but he realized that the upper echelon elders of the Lin family and the Shentu family clan's elders in his field of vision were all having astonished expressions, as if they had seen a ghost.

Especially the Shentu family clan's elders, not only were they shocked, they also had very ugly expressions!

Lin Xintong as well, she too had a similarly shocked expression. However, in her shocked, beautiful eyes, a hint of being pleasantly surprised could be seen very clearly.

Shentu Nantian felt a hum ring in his head as if he had been hit heavily by a hammer. He was completely stunned.

He turned his neck with difficulty. Inch by inch, he turned towards the center of the square...

Chapter 397: Nearly Devastated

Shentu Nantian nearly forced himself to let his gaze fall on Yun Yantian's body. He held his breath as his mind went blank. His eyes even protruded slightly.

At that moment, he had seen with his own eyes that a portion of Song Ziyue's Five Elemental Bone Array had been torn apart in front of Yun Yantian. Yet another core bone had exploded into grayish-white desolate bones powder!

This meant that the Power of Desolates within the desolate bone had been extracted cleanly by Yun Yantian!

Shentu Nantian looked on as Yun Yantian nonchalantly grabbed a small, yellow turtle from the pile of bone residue.

This small turtle had short limbs and struggled desperately. However, its body was covered with runic seals, so it could not move despite its struggle.

Although the small turtle looked quite cute, it was a vicious desolate beast, named Earth Spirit Turtle. Usually, half of its body would be buried underground and its upper body would be covered in earth. It would even have grass growing on it. It would stay motionless for months, up to half a year, in a state of semi-hibernation. If it felt that a prey that it considered palatable approach it, it would suddenly rise up and swallow the prey!

This Earth Spirit Turtle was one of the essence Qi's that Song

Ziyue had sealed within the Five Elemental Bone Array. With Yi Yun's nonchalant grab, and with the runic seals suppressing it, he easily threw it into a jade box. The entire process seemed very easy and casual as if he had just caught a tortoise in a pond.

Yet another small group array had been broken apart by Yi Yun!

How... how was this possible!?

Shentu Nantian felt all of his blood rush to his face, turning his entire face red. He no longer looked like the suave and jade-like gentleman anymore.

He had just said, in front of every Lin family elder, that he was sure that Yun Yantian was just lucky, but before he could even finish speaking, he had been given a loud smack on the face!

"Cracked... it has been cracked again. There is no other way. This junior surnamed Yun really can crack the array. It was no coincidence."

A Lin family elder said in both a surprised and excited manner.

If the first time was said to be a coincidence, they could believe it as it was the most reasonable explanation. However, if the second time was also explained away with a coincidence, then that was clearly impossible!

It was really incredible. They were also sure that it would be

impossible for a junior's Mystic Crystal Hand to crack the Five Elemental Bone Array, but the truth was placed right in front of their eyes.

The field of the Desolate Heaven technique was extremely deep and profound. Even these elders did not dare to say that they understood the Desolate Heaven technique greatly. There were always phenomena that they could not understand, and other domains that they had never encountered before.

The more they learned, the more they realized that they knew less!

"This kid, hahaha. Well done!"

At that moment, Su Jie was also elated as he felt extremely happy!

"Elder Su, you took in a good apprentice." The elders of the Lin family, other than Lin Xintong's grandaunt and her sixth grand uncle, as well as a small minority, did not have a good impression of the Shentu family clan even though they had agreed to the marriage proposal from the Shentu family clan. After all, the Shentu family clan and the Lin family had been at odds over the past few years.

Under these circumstances, they also felt good upon seeing a junior from the Lin family smack the Shentu family clan in the face.

Truthfully, seeing Shentu Nantian sit amongst the Lin family's upper echelons as if he was half the owner of the Lin family, they felt extremely uncomfortable. They were only worried that Shentu Nantian would one day become an in-law of the Lin family, that is why they could not offend him, so instead, they had patiently appeared polite on the surface.

"This, cough..." Su Jie stroke his beard as he blushed. He opened his mouth and although he wanted to take credit for this, and had always been thick-skinned, there was no way for him to really take credit for Yi Yun's current achievements.

"Actually... I only took in this disciple midway for a couple of months. As for really teaching him, I only taught him the Mystic Crystal Hand two months ago. And I only taught him for a day. To have such results... truthfully, this does not have much to do with me."

Everyone knew that Su Jie had taken in Yun Yantian as an in-name disciple. An in-name disciple meant that he would not receive the core teachings of his master.

Clearly, Su Jie had not imparted Yun Yantian with any true ability. It could even be said that Su Jie had never intended to really take in Yun Yantian in as a disciple from the beginning.

Under these circumstances, Su Jie naturally could not lie with his eyes wide open.

He had regretted taking in Yi Yun only as an in-name disciple.

Was this not going to make people say behind his back, that he failed to see even though he had eyes!?

"Haha, Elder Su sure is modest. Regardless, our young friend Yun is a talent that Elder Su discovered. Even if he is not from the Lin family, if he can mature in our Lin family, it would be joyous news!"

At that moment, an old but amiable voice sounded. The person who spoke was the Lin family's Matriarch!

In the Lin family, the Matriarch had the final say in internal affairs. Other than those grand elders who dedicated themselves to cultivating and cared nothing for the worldly affairs, whatever the Matriarch said was not questioned in the Lin family.

Su Jie knew that with the Matriarch saying those words, it had the hidden meaning of wishing to recruit Yi Yun.

In the Lin family, there were plenty of disciples that did not share the same surname. They were recruited into the Lin family due to their talent, and they enjoyed the same treatment as direct descendants.

A few years later, they might even marry the children of the Lin family, eventually becoming a real member of the Lin family.

In the world of warriors, marriage was a relationship that made people feel reassured. Especially in a marriage where both parties

could work together and cultivated through intercourse, then their relationship would grow even stronger.

"This... I will ask my disciple for his intentions. However, I do believe that he has no reason to oppose it."

Su Jie was overjoyed. The Matriarch appreciating Yi Yun would be an excellent turn of events.

Then again, if the Matriarch did not try to recruit Yi Yun, with his extraordinary Desolate Heaven technique talent, that would have been abnormal.

With Yi Yun first reaching the Tian Yuan world and having Shentu Nantian as an enemy, he would indeed require the protection of the Lin family. By providing him with the necessary environment and resources needed for him to mature, this would be a matter that benefited both sides.

"Xintong, do you know this little friend Yun?"

The Matriarch suddenly turned and spoke to Lin Xintong. She naturally remembered that when Yi Yun "contradicted" Lin Xintong's grandaunt in the Jade Bamboo peak, Lin Xintong has said "a mere acquaintance should not sow discord between two close people", preventing her grandaunt from salvaging the situation.

Clearly, not only did Lin Xintong know this little friend Yun,

their relationship was also not shallow!

This was naturally a good thing. After all, the Matriarch had the intention of nurturing Lin Xintong into becoming a pillar of support for the Lin family. The more elites who she had good relationships with, the better it would be for her future. It was even more so knowing a top genius in the Desolate Heaven technique.

After all, Lin Xintong's naturally terminated meridians still had not been healed, and even if they were healed, who could guarantee that there would be no remaining symptoms?

Knowing a Desolate Heaven Master who had a future ahead of him was necessary!

"Yes, Yun Yantian is Xintong's old friend."

Lin Xintong said frankly. And sitting beside Lin Xintong, Shentu Nantian's expression turned even uglier upon hearing this.

Traces of blood-red color covered his face as they engulfed it.

Old friend?

This was actually a phrase that did not mean much, but in Shentu Nantian's ears, it sounded extremely harsh.

He did not know why he found the two words, "old friend" to be such a problem!

Especially just now, he had clearly seen the joy in Lin Xintong's eyes when Yun Yantian cracked the array for the second time.

If it was any ordinary girl who felt happy about an old friend's success, then Shentu Nantian could barely accept it.

However, Lin Xintong was a girl who resembled a breeze and had little emotion.

Why would she be happy for that kid's success? This was not normal!

A person would only be happy for another person's success when they had a close or special relationship. If not, as humans were naturally selfish, they may congratulate on the surface upon knowing of a friend's success, but deep down they may say, what does this have to do with me?

There was even the situation when one would feel jealous upon seeing someone else's success when one was down and out, thinking of things like why can a friend have this but not me?

This was the way of thinking of ordinary people.

Would Lin Xintong rejoice upon seeing the other Lin family disciples, who even had blood relationships with Lin Xintong, do

remarkably well on stage?

Taking a step back, if it was Shentu Nantian himself, would Lin Xintong have any reaction if he was able to show off his remarkable skill?

At that moment of being queried, maybe even an insincere praise would be something very rare!

Thinking of this, how could Shentu Nantian feel pleasant?

He was originally not a magnanimous person. Besides, under these circumstances, which man could be magnanimous!?

At that moment, Shentu Nantian was on the verge of anger. If not for the occasion, he would nearly have made a move to kill Yun Yantian!

"Junior sister Xintong..." Shentu Nantian's voice turned increasingly deeper. Just as he got Lin Xintong's attention and was about to say something...

"Peng!"

The third explosion!

Shentu Nantian's heart sank as he jerked his head towards the center of the square.

His eyes looked ferocious like a wild beast's red eyes.

He could clearly see that the third group array in front of Yun Yantian had crumbled. The desolate bone that held the group array in place had turned into grayish-white bone residue.

Like clockwork, Yi Yun stretched out his hand and grabbed the third desolate beast essence Qi from the bone residue.

At that moment, Song Ziyue, who was standing before Yi Yun, was completely dumbstruck. After Yi Yun broke his array for the second time, he had already felt a heavy blow.

Now, with the array being broken for the third time, his confidence was devastated. Seeing Yun Yantian put the third desolate beast essence Qi into the jade box, Song Ziyue seemed to lose his soul. He looked like a fool, where could one still find the temperament of a young proud son of heaven?

He was really afraid. Now, whatever that happened on stage made him feel like he had entered a nightmare.

"The third one!"

Shentu Nantian clenched his fists as his temples throbbed. The veins on his hands bulged. It only took about thirty seconds in between cracking the second and third group array!

Yi Yun, who was onstage, took an average of about thirty seconds to crack a small group array. This was not cracking an array, it was clearly just pushing down sand castles built by children!

Chapter 398: Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect

"Broken yet again, hahahaha!" While Shentu Nantian was trying his best to contain his anger, Su Jie began laughing in a very exaggerated and loud manner at the perfect time, "This disciple I took in sure is amazing! He has given me such a huge surprise in this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, hahahaha!"

Su Jie's laughter was like a chanting curse that made Shentu Nantian irritated.

Yi Yun was about to begin breaking the fourth small group array while Song Ziyue, who was in the middle of the array, looking dejected, had lost all of his will to fight.

Without a doubt, if this carried on, Yi Yun would definitely completely crack the Five Elemental Bone Array.

Shentu Nantian naturally did not want to see this result.

Shentu Nantian was already treating Yi Yun as the enemy, and suspected the feelings Lin Xintong had for him. Under this situation, how could he allow Yi Yun to carry on stealing the show?

"Everyone, it looks like there is no point left in this showdown." Shentu Nantian suddenly stood up, "Junior Brother Yun's Desolate Heaven technique is outstanding. Ziyue, keep your array and admit defeat!"

Oh?

Yi Yun stopped his hands and turned around to look at Shentu Nantian.

At that moment, Song Ziyue seemed to recover from his dumbstruck state. Every second he spent in the square was a grilling moment for him.

"I admit defeat!"

Song Ziyue gritted his teeth as he said so. Since he was inferior, he had no qualms in admitting defeat.

As he began to dismantle the array, Lin Ziyun, who was opposite Yi Yun, also stopped her Guanyin Flower Picking Hand.

From the moment Yi Yun began cracking the array till now, only about 150 seconds had passed. Lin Ziyun had only completed 80-90% of her Guanyin Flower Picking Hand, but at that moment, there was no need to carry on using it.

If it was to be decided who ended up the worst after the showdown between Song Ziyue and Yi Yun, it was naturally Song Ziyue, while Lin Ziyun was caught in the crossfire.

She originally hoped to use the Guanyin Flower Picking Hand to

compete with Song Ziyue. It would have been a spectacular showdown of high-level techniques that would have been the center of attention, and she would have gained fame and glory from it.

However, because of Yi Yun's appearance, she ended up in such an awkward situation.

"Junior Brother Yun has good ability. I underestimated you."

Lin Ziyuan said as she gave Yi Yun a deep glance before she left the square.

With Song Ziyue admitting defeat and Lin Ziyuan leaving the square, there was no reason for Yi Yun to stay behind. As he was preparing to leave the square, Shentu Nantian suddenly said, "Junior Brother Yun, hold on a moment."

Yi Yun halted and looked towards Shentu Nantian.

"Now, with Junior Brother Yun just coming on stage, why the hurry to leave?" As Shentu Nantian spoke, he left the seats of honor and began walking towards the center of the square slowly.

Seeing Shentu Nantian's actions, everyone was stunned. What was Shentu Nantian going to do?

"He is not letting Junior Brother Yun leave. It cannot be that he wants to compete with Junior Brother Yun in the Desolate Heaven

technique, right?"

A junior from the younger generation said in a speechless manner.

"It cannot be. If that was the case, then Shentu Nantian would really be too shameless."

Shentu Nantian did not focus on the Desolate Heaven technique, but as many things intersected with one another, his situation was pretty similar to Lin Xintong's.

Shentu Nantian's age was slightly more than two times that of Yi Yun's age. Was it not bullying if an adult were to compete with a child's Desolate Heaven technique?

"It cannot be. Shentu Nantian has to consider his own background. It is impossible for him to do something as unbecoming as that."

For a proud person like Shentu Nantian, how could he want to compete with Yi Yun? This was because, even if he won, he would still be mocked by the Lin family's upper echelons.

"Junior Brother Yun, I saw you breaking the array easily just now. You should not have expended too much of your energy, right?" Shentu Nantian had already walked into the center of the square and was just ten steps away from Yi Yun.

Yi Yun held his breath and a pair of black eyes could be seen through the mask as it quietly looked at Shentu Nantian.

He did not express the hate in his heart, but the coldness and indifference in his eyes made Shentu Nantian frown slightly.

This kid's pair of eyes are really annoying...

No matter how Shentu Nantian looked at Yi Yun, he did not like him. It was to the point where he really wanted to dig out Yi Yun's eyes.

"No!" Yi Yun answered calmly. He had only taken about a hundred seconds to crack the Five Elemental Bone Array, and since it was through a trick, he had not consumed that much of his mental energy.

"That is good." Shentu Nantian smiled. How could he let Yi Yun walk off stage while still being in the limelight?

Of course, Shentu Nantian could not compete with Yi Yun directly; hence, he had thought up a method.

"Junior Brother Yun's accomplishment in the Desolate Heaven technique is outstanding, and you have only showed us the tip of the iceberg. I believe that everyone has not yet seen enough. If Junior Brother Yun were to leave now, it would be quite a shame."

Yi Yun remained silent. He knew that Shentu Nantian had most

likely thought of something.

He could feel Shentu Nantian's hostility towards him. It was ironic that, even with a change of identity, he had once again formed a grudge with Shentu Nantian.

"I am not sure if Junior Brother Yun has ever heard of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect?"

Yi Yun did not understand why Shentu Nantian asked the question. However, the surrounding people paused slightly. The Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect was an extinct sect. It existed even earlier than the Daming Temple.

The greatest aspect of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect was its Desolate Heaven technique.

Back when the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect was in its golden era, it had produced many famous Desolate Heaven Masters.

The Desolate Heaven technique heritage of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect was a system of its own. It was extremely difficult to learn and extremely profound. Only those with extraordinary talent could learn the Desolate Heaven technique of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect.

Seeing Yi Yun shake his head, Shentu Nantian smiled, "It is alright if you do not know. Speaking of this, back when my family clan's elders explored an ancient mystic realm, they happened to

find a Desolate Heaven technique recipe left behind by the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect."

"The Desolate Heaven techniques recorded inside the recipe were not anything spectacular, but they can still showcase my Shentu family clan's Desolate Heaven technique abilities. And coincidentally, with my abilities, I can barely refine it... Hence, I was thinking of showing it to everyone. You can think of it as me adding some fun for this Desolate Heaven technique tea session."

Upon him saying those words, people began to look at each other. How could an ancient Desolate Heaven technique recipe left behind by the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect be as unremarkable as Shentu Nantian described?

The Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's Desolate Heaven technique was much more abstruse than mainstream Desolate Heaven techniques. And Shentu Nantian previously said that this recipe was found in an ancient mystic realm. The Great Empress's recipe that could cure Lin Xintong of her natural Yin Meridians might have come from that mystic realm!

Furthermore, Shentu Nantian also said that he could barely refine it. This made many become secretly alarmed. Shentu Nantian's Desolate Heaven technique might have been even better than they expected.

"This Shentu Nantian is really a genius! There is no need to talk about his ability in martial arts, but who would have thought that his accomplishments in the Desolate Heaven technique would also be extraordinary. He might even have even dabbled in arrays and

elixir refinement."

The younger generation of the Lin family were all secretly alarmed. Although many of them did not like Shentu Nantian, they had to admit that it was indeed well-deserved for him to be called a peerless son of Heaven in the Tian Yuan world.

If Lin Xintong was able to join up her naturally terminated meridians and become a peerless Great Empress, then the only person qualified to be her partner in cultivation intercourse would probably be Shentu Nantian.

"Junior Brother Yun, I previously said that I could barely refine that ancient recipe. Hence, I need others to help me... Junior Brother Yun's accomplishments in the Desolate Heaven technique are extraordinary, and is in line with my requirements, so... how about cooperating with me?"

When Shentu Nantian asked him, Yi Yun finally understood what Shentu Nantian was thinking.

Shentu Nantian had said so much, but the main reason was to put him down.

Despite talking about cooperating to refine a desolate bone relic, there was probably a trap within!

How could Yi Yun know an ancient recipe left behind by the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect? Shentu Nantian could do

something during the process to make Yi Yun embarrass himself very easily!

And at that moment, Shentu Hai and Shentu Feng, who were originally sitting with Shentu Nantian, walked to the center of the square while laughing.

They had previously received a Yuan Qi voice transmission from Shentu Nantian. It was time for them to make a move.

"Junior Brother Yun, let us do it together. If it is just you alone, it might be too difficult. With the three of us joining hands, it will be done smoothly."

As the two spoke, they stood to the left and right of Yi Yun.

"How about it, Junior Brother Yun? This would be a rare experience for you." Shentu Nantian gently touched the interspatial ring on his finger as he still hung a genial smile on his face.

"This fellow sure is a hypocrite..." With this thought in mind, a smile, suffused with a trace of mockery, appeared on Yi Yun's face. However, under the mask, his smile could not be seen by others.

Since he understood what Shentu Nantian was planning to do, Yi Yun wanted to see what trick Shentu Nantian was up to.

Originally with Yi Yun's personality, he would not try to steal the

show. However, today, his purpose was to mess things up, so how could he miss out on the fun?

Chapter 399: Refining Bone

Following Shentu Nantian's suggestion, everyone's gazes landed on Yi Yun.

Quite a considerable number of people did not understand what Shentu Nantian's was thinking, nor did they know that Shentu Nantian already disliked Yi Yun because of Lin Xintong's special feelings for Yi Yun.

"Yi Yun, you must not agree to it. Shentu Nantian is going to try and give you a hard time on purpose."

At that moment, Lin Xintong's Yuan Qi transmission rang in Yi Yun's ears. Lin Xintong had previously heard from Su Jie that Yi Yun had a great feud with Shentu Nantian, which was why he had to change his identity.

"Yi Yun, you have not even heard of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect before. You definitely will not understand the Desolate Heaven technique heritage of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect. You do not know that the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's heritage is different in many ways compared to the Tian Yuan world's Desolate Heaven technique. If you were to agree, you would fall into Shentu Nantian's schemes!"

"Oh? Differences in the heritage systems?" Yi Yun thought and looked towards Lin Xintong. He felt a strand of warmth surging to his heart when Lin Xintong used her Yuan Qi to inform him.

However, about the heritage systems being different, Yi Yun did not care at all. Ignoring the Desolate Heaven technique heritage of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect, Yi Yun did not even know much about the mainstream Desolate Heaven technique heritage of the Tian Yuan world. Especially the aspects of energy sealing, Yi Yun only knew the Mystic Crystal Hand and the Small Thousand Seal.

Just with these two techniques, how much could Yi Yun understand the mainstream Desolate Heaven technique heritages?

Hence, it did not affect Yi Yun much even if the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's heritage contained some mysteries.

"Thank you Miss Lin, but... I still want to try..."

Yi Yun's words made Lin Xintong's eyebrows frown. "Yi Yun, I know you have a feud with Shentu Nantian and want to take some revenge, but now is not the time. You are too weak, if you act on emotion, you will only suffer."

Yi Yun laughed and said, "It is just a competition in the Desolate Heaven technique and not a life and death battle. Even if I were to suffer, it will be nothing much. I will just be embarrassed. After all, I am a newcomer to the Lin family and I am not an important figure, so what if I am embarrassed?"

"If I were to be afraid of losing now, and not accept Shentu Nantian's challenge, then that means I am already afraid. Today's competition does not risk my life, and if I were to reject it, then in the future, when I face a life-death blood battle with him to settle

our feud, there might only be me and Shentu Nantian. There will be no one to protect me. At that time, can I still reject it?"

Yi Yun's rhetorical question stumped Lin Xintong.

Indeed, when someone wants to kill you, would they ask you if you wanted it or not?

Compared to the situation of a life and death battle, the Desolate Heaven technique showdown right now was nothing.

Upon understanding this, Lin Xintong stared deeply at Yi Yun. She did not know what Yi Yun's expression was like under the mask. She found it hard to believe that the youth she had met in the Cloud Wilderness would reach this point, step by step maturing along the way.

Besides, he was only fifteen years old, but he already had a blood feud with Shentu Nantian. However, despite that, he was still unperturbed and could still make such a calm analysis with such courage.

"Yi Yun... you are right. I was the one being narrow-minded, but I need to remind you that Shentu Nantian is a merciless and narrow-minded person. Even if he does not know your real identity, he might still have murderous intent for you."

"Yes, I understand." Yi Yun nodded. "Miss Lin, do not worry, I have a sense of proportion."

As Yi Yun said that, he turned his gaze towards Shentu Nantian.

"Hey, kid, are you agreeing or not?" Shentu Hai had a mocking smile on his face as he provoked Yi Yun.

Yi Yun completely ignored Shentu Hai and cupped his hands and said, "Thanks to Young Master Nantian's appreciation, you have given me this opportunity to train my Desolate Heaven technique standard. Of course, I have no reason to reject it."

Yi Yun said this very "sincerely" while Shentu Hai and Shentu Feng nearly burst out laughing.

This retard! This was probably the type of person who would help you count the money received from selling him?

"Hahaha, Junior Brother Yun is so candid. Good! Then let us begin."

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he took out a disk array from his interspatial ring. This disk array was about five feet wide and squarish. There were runes densely engraved in the middle, forming a perfect circle.

An array disk that gave off the meaning of perfect harmony.

With Shentu Nantian in the middle, Yi Yun, Shentu Hai and

Shentu Feng stood around him in a triangular fashion.

The surrounding disciples of the Lin family were looking at the four people in the middle of the square.

Although they did not know about Shentu Nantian's feelings for Yi Yun, they knew that Shentu Nantian's goal in taking out the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's recipe was to flaunt the Shentu family clan.

Maybe it was because Yi Yun had smacked Song Ziyue's face so terribly that Shentu Nantian had to stand forward to save the Shentu family clan's reputation.

Under this situation, how could Shentu Nantian let Yi Yun shine in this cooperative bone refining process?

Letting Shentu Feng and Shentu Hai go onstage at the same time to cooperate with Yi Yun was probably to put Yi Yun down.

"Junior Brother Yun sure has guts. However, he has never even heard of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect, yet he still wants to cooperate with Shentu Nantian. In a while, he will probably embarrass himself."

In the surrounding pavilions, some of the disciples of the Lin family were worried for Yi Yun.

"Having too much courage can be a fault, to the point of being

stupid... For this matter, if it were me, I would definitely not agree to it."

People began discussing and at that moment, Shentu Nantian took out 12 desolate bones from his interspatial ring. Once these 12 desolate bones appeared, they shone in the air.

The 12 bones were either crystal clear, like jade, or simple and plain. They faintly seemed to create small Yuan Qi swirls around them.

These bones were not ordinary, that could be seen at a glance!

"Oh? Amongst these desolate bones, it seems like some of them are primordial strain's bones!"

Some of the Desolate Heaven Masters that were present had extraordinary vision. Although they could not recognize what desolate beast the bones came from, they could still tell their grade. Normal desolate bones definitely did not contain such strong Power of the Desolates.

"Could it be that Shentu Nantian already has the ability to refine primordial strain bones?"

Thinking of this, many of them were alarmed. Shentu Nantian was only 30 years old. To warriors with long lifespans, he was currently a junior. If he could refine primordial strain desolate bones at this age, would that not be remarkable?

"That is not the case..." At that moment, an old man shook his head and disagreed. "Those are not primordial strain desolate bones but desolate bones processed using an ancient mystic technique. It almost increases a desolate bone's grade by one grade. It should be a mystic technique belonging to the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect!"

In the Lin family, there were Elders from the older generation who had previously read books regarding the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's mystic techniques, even though they did not understand the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's heritage system.

"Increase a desolate bone's grade?" People were shocked. There was such a method?

"Indeed, but the effects are not as great as you think. This is because one has to pay a price to increase a desolate bone's grade."

"Actually, with the Shentu family clan's heritage, they are not lacking in desolate bones of primordial strains. However, Shentu Nantian had used such a roundabout method because, with his ability, it would probably be quite difficult for him to handle several primordial strain desolate bones at the same time."

As the old man spoke, Shentu Nantian waved his hand and the 12 desolate bones split into three groups. They then shot towards Shentu Hai, Shentu Feng, and Yi Yun!

These desolate bones landed in the hands of the three, with each

having four pieces.

"This..." People were alarmed. "Is Shentu Nantian thinking of getting these teenage juniors to extract the Power of Desolates from these desolate bones?"

It would probably be considered too difficult to extract the Power of Desolates from this grade of desolate bones for Yi Yun and company.

At that moment, Shentu Nantian smiled and said, "Can the three of you please help me. Do not worry. Soon, I will set up an array, so that your mental energies will increase, enough for you to extract the Power of Desolates from these desolate bones!"

Chapter 400: Dark Desolate Heaven Master

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he placed the disk array on the ground. Runic circles began to shine on it as it began to grow in size. It grew to the point where it extended beneath Yi Yun, Shentu Feng and Shentu Hai's feet.

"Stand on it." Shentu Nantian said. To refine the ancient recipe's elixir, the disk array was its foundation.

Yi Yun faltered slightly before he stepped onto the disk array.

He knew that with his new identity, he had not yet reached the point where he had to be killed at all costs, even after offending Shentu Nantian once again. Under the current situation, Shentu Nantian would not do anything to him in front of the upper echelons of the Lin family.

"The three of you shall extract the energy from the desolate bones and provide it for me! The twelve desolate bones will follow the order of the twelve Heavenly branches. Whatever bone I need, you will need to extract the corresponding bone's Power of Desolates!"

As Shentu Nantian spoke, he took a jade jar out of his interspatial ring. Opening the jar, a pungent smell of blood was emitted.

It was the blood of a primordial strain.

People could clearly see that this beast's blood was heavy and thick. It also contained dense amounts of Power of Desolates within it, so there was no doubt that it was the blood of a primordial strain.

Shentu Nantian planned to use the desolate bones and blood simultaneously to refine the elixir from the ancient recipe.

"Zi!"

Shentu Nantian shouted out a word. "Zi" was the top of the twelve Heavenly branches.

And the "Zi" label desolate bone was in Shentu Hai's hands!

Shentu Hai's eyes flashed as he also took out a disk array from his interspatial ring. He then began extracting the Power of Desolates from the "Zi" labeled desolate bone.

This was the desolate bone of a king-ranked desolate beast, and since this desolate bone had been processed through an ancient recipe, it was not that easy to extract the Power of Desolates from it.

However, Shentu Hai was well prepared as he had been previously exposed the Desolate Heaven techniques of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect. Although he did not master it, he still had some understanding of it.

His ten fingers moved as he sent out runic seals. Behind Shentu Hai, Heaven Earth Yuan Qi energy began to condense, forming a black phantom image.

The phantom image had two wings on its back and had teeth sticking out its mouth. It looked like a huge bat and looked extremely ferocious.

"Aspect Totem?"

When people saw the black phantom appear, they were stunned. Typically, people would only conjure their Aspect Totem during battle. As for Shentu Hai conjuring his Aspect Totem while using the Desolate Heaven technique, it was rarely seen.

"Shentu Hai's technique is known as the Black Handed Demon. It is an extremely rare method of the Desolate Heaven technique. In the past, there were Dark Desolate Heaven Masters who liked to use it. Black Handed Demon indeed requires the manifestation of an Aspect Totem."

In the Desolate Heaven technique, there were a few existences that were taboo. They were labeled as Dark Desolate Heaven Masters.

This group of people was labeled as heretics by the orthodox Desolate Heaven Masters.

Different from the orthodox Desolate Heaven technique, Dark

Desolate Heaven Masters would do anything just to refine an effective desolate bone relic. That also included using human bones as materials for the Desolate Heaven technique.

The reason why the bones of desolate beasts could be refined into desolate bone relics was that of the great amounts of Power of Desolates contained within them. In contrast, strong humans, their bodies contained great amounts of Heaven Earth Yuan Qi.

Hence at times, the effects from the bones of strong desolate beasts and the bones of humans were the same.

Hence, Dark Desolate Heaven Masters had developed a method to use the bones of human experts to refine relics. Tens of millions of years ago, the heritage of the Dark Desolate Heaven Masters had reached an extreme.

They had established several Dark Desolate Heaven technique sects and there were Dark family clans that passed on their bloodlines. These dark family clans were Dark Desolate Heaven Masters for generations.

These family clans were extremely powerful, as they used unscrupulous means to obtain human bones to help refine desolate bone relics. As their bloodlines passed down the tyrannical cruelty, they caused chaos to the world.

They stole the corpses from orthodox sects, sacrificed virgin boys and girls, wantonly used girls as sex slaves, massacred mortals, and gave offerings to demon ghosts.

Due to their evil acts, the orthodox Desolate Heaven Masters finally combined forces with the orthodox sects to declare war on the dark world. Finally, the dark family clans and sects were all destroyed at their peak.

The heritage of the Dark Desolate Heaven technique was as such greatly destroyed. However, the Dark Desolate Heaven Masters did not completely disappear as a result of this, they just went underground.

The "Black Handed Demon" used by Shentu Hai was not an exclusive technique used only by Dark Desolate Heaven Masters. Some orthodox Desolate Heaven Masters would also use it, though seldom.

This method was ancient and complex, so many Desolate Heaven Masters did not even understand it.

It was indeed remarkable that Shentu Hai could use this method at his age.

The people from the Lin family, regardless of the younger or older generation, had to admit that Shentu Hai was a genius in the Desolate Heaven technique.

Clearly, it was an extremely difficult matter for Shentu Hai and company to cooperate with Shentu Nantian to refine the ancient recipe.

Realizing this, many of them began to worry for Yi Yun. Although they did not know Yi Yun, Yi Yun was, after all, representing their Lin family and was the only person who could compete with the Shentu family clan amongst the younger generation. If Yi Yun was to lose terribly, then they would also be embarrassed.

"Junior Brother Yun should still have some hidden methods, right?"

"That should be the case. If he could crack Song Ziyue's array so easily, I doubt he only has the Mystic Crystal Hand. Let us wait and see..."

As they spoke, their hearts suddenly sank. They saw a black gas start to emit from the desolate bone in Shentu Hai's hands. This black gas was like a venomous snake that shot towards Shentu Hai's eyebrows!

"Oh? That is!?"

People widened their eyes. The black gas revealed a very dangerous aura and was clearly detrimental for Shentu Hai!

And at that moment, the bat-like Aspect Totem behind Shentu Hai roared and swallowed the black gas!

Shentu Hai was currently stressed. After his Aspect Totem

swallowed the black gas, he began sending out runic seals onto the desolate bone. Only then did he manage to quell the black gas completely.

Only when the black gas was completely sealed did Shentu Hai exhale, revealing a complacent smile.

"Spiritual backlash!" An old Desolate Heaven Master identified the origin of the black gas.

In the domain of the Desolate Heaven technique, some desolate bones were extremely dangerous. If one did not have the ability to refine them, it would result in serious consequences.

People could die due to the Desolate Heaven technique!

"No wonder Shentu Hai had to use the Black Handed Demon. This Black Handed Demon has the advantage in dealing with spiritual backlashes."

An old Desolate Heaven Master from the Lin family said. The reason why the Black Handed Demon was widely used by Dark Desolate Heaven Masters was that the human bones they refined contained resentment, resulting in more frequent spiritual backlashes!

Now, Shentu Hai's king-ranked desolate beast's bone made a spiritual backlash, likely due to the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect's heritage. Some of the processing methods had caused the bone to

become like this.

If one suffered a spiritual backlash while refining such a desolate bone, the consequences ranged from damaging one's soul to becoming a retard!

"This Shentu Nantian actually chose such an ancient recipe. Since the "Zi" labeled desolate bone has spiritual backlash within it, then the other labeled desolate bones might also have it too, and they might even be more dangerous. These twelve desolate bones are definitely not simple."

People looked at the 12 bones in Shentu Hai, Shentu Feng and Yi Yun's hands as they eyelids twitched. Especially the younger generation felt fear. They felt lucky that they were not in Yi Yun's position, facing such a situation.

If it were them, they would really be in a situation of being irrevocably committed. If they shied away from it, it would be too embarrassing. If they gritted their teeth and went through with it, who knows if they would end up a retard as a result.

Many of them began to sympathize with Yi Yun. Although his Desolate Heaven technique was extraordinary, he was too young. He was not like Shentu Hai or Shentu Feng. The both of them must have been exposed to the Desolate Heaven technique heritage of the Heaven Desolate Ancient Sect prior to this.

At that moment, Shentu Hai completed the extraction of the Power of Desolates from the "Zi" labeled desolate bone.

This blob of Power of Desolates finally landed into the disk array at Shentu Hai's feet. As a result, the runes on the disk array lit up.

There was a total of 12 runes on the disk array, corresponding to the 12 desolate bones.

Seeing the corresponding rune light up, Shentu Hai clenched his fists and was delighted!

He had succeeded!

With Shentu Hai's ability, it was quite taxing on him to extract a king-ranked desolate beast's desolate bone. Furthermore, he had to be wary of the spiritual backlash within the desolate bone, so it was very draining on his mental energy.

He wiped the sweat from his forehead and took out a Soul Nurturing pill from his interspatial ring before swallowing it down.

With that, his face flushed abnormally.

Usually, he did not have a 100% success rate at extracting a "Zi" labeled desolate bone. If an accident happened midway, Shentu Nantian had to expend some mental energy to help him.

At this Desolate Heaven technique tea session, Shentu Hai

inevitably felt nervous in front of so many people. He worried that an accident would happen while he was handling it, but thankfully, he succeeded.

He had undoubtedly shined at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session. And he had gained face for the Shentu family clan.

"Junior Brother Yun, how about it. Can you handle it? If you think you cannot, it is not too late to quit now. Shentu Feng and I will become more tired, but we can finish your portion." Shentu Hai said with a mocking smile. He was waiting to see Yi Yun's expression of being in a dilemma.

Actually, with Shentu Nantian's intentions, if he did not tell Yi Yun that there was a spiritual backlash within the desolate bones and instead tricked Yi Yun, causing him to become a retard, that would naturally be the best outcome.

However, at the Desolate Heaven technique tea session, Shentu Nantian naturally could not do so in front of all the upper echelons of the Lin family.

How could the Lin family permit such an insidious trick? After all, the Shentu family clan was still at a slight disadvantage in this negotiation with the Lin family. Shentu Nantian may hate Yi Yun, but it did not reach the point of him needing to kill Yi Yun at all costs. So he definitely needed to weigh the consequences.

Now, by letting Yi Yun first agree to the cooperative bone refinement, then pointing out the problem of the spiritual

backlash after, everything was different.

If Yi Yun was smart, he would bow out in a crestfallen manner, then Shentu Nantian's objective would have been accomplished. It could showcase the Shentu family clan's abilities and at the same time, trample on Yi Yun.